

THE
Spanish Decameron :
OR, TEN
NOVELS.

VIZ.

The Rival Ladies.	The Perfidious Mistress.
The Mistakes.	The Metamorphos'd Lover.
The Generous Lover.	The Impostour Out-Witted.
The Libertine.	The Amorous Miser.
The Virgin Captive.	The Pretended Alchymist.

Made *English* by R. L.

Licensed, Febr. 17th. 1686. R. P.

L O N D O N,

Printed for *Simon Neale*, in *Angel-Court*, in
St. Martin's-Lane, near the Church. 1687.

REFLECT

The Author of the
 last Book of the
 series appears without a Preface,
 an Epistle to the Reader, for fear of being con-
 sidered as obliging us not to be singular.
 In this second Novel, they
 are Spanish Re-
 ligious Authors of
 whom. One of
 the most famous of France, thought
 worth to send it into the
 hands of the Country, with all the
 Advantages it might have
 done it out of
 the hands of the
 Author.



Printed by J. D. N. in the
 Year 1784.

THE PREFACE.

THE Age is grown so Critical, now a-days, that a Book dares not appear without a Preface, or an Epistle to it; for fear of being Censur'd, which obliges me not to be singular. As to this Decameron of Novels; they are Spanish Relations, Written by a Famous Author of that Kingdom. One of the most Refin'd Wits of France, thought it worth his Pains, to render it into the Language of his Country, with all the Graces and Advantages it might derive from either; I have done it out of the Latter, with a Freedom of Alteration, and Addition, as my Fancy led me, to make it the most divertive I could in ours, which is the only Recommendation of things of this Nature. The Word Decameron is derived from the Greek; tho the Learned Boccace thought fit to make use of it, in his Book of Tales; which
he

The PREFACE.

he divides into ten Days, of whom Count Balthazar in his Preface to his Courtier, makes mention, and affirms, that his Work of Recreation (meaning his Decameron) brought him more Honour, than all those more Serious Pieces which he Compos'd. As to these Novels in the main, they are Concise, and carried on with much ease and freedom; whereby the Reader might be diverted, and not tir'd, and receive profitable Advice how to avoid those Dangers, and Inconveniences others have run themselves into. As to the Plots, and Contrivances of these Stories, in the Original they have been so well approv'd of, by many of our Modern, and most Ingenious Poets, insomuch, that many of their Plays have been built upon these Foundations. I have no more to satisfie the Reader in at the present only, that the Englishting of them has been a Diversion to me, and I hope to others they will not be unpleasant.

R. L.

THE
Rival Ladies

A
NOVEL.

IN *Spain*, not far from *Sevil*, at a Town upon the Road, Commodious for the Reception of Travellers; a Stranger well mounted, without any Attendants, towards the Evening came to an Inn; who nimbly alighting from his Horse, betook himself to a Bench; where hastily opening his Breast, he soon gave Evident Demonstrations of a Fainting Fit; with which Surprize of Nature, his whole Body grew motionless: Whereupon, the Mistress of the House immediately ran for Water, and throwing some of it on his Face, in a short time brought him again to himself.

The Stranger blushing to be seen in such disorder, desired presently to be shewed his Lodging; and if it were possible, that he might have a Chamber to himself; the Mistress of the House told him she had but one Chamber empty, which had two Beds in it, and was the only Accommodation she had for the Entertainment of another

He Stranger reply'd, he would give for any satisfaction, provided he might enjoy the Room to himself; thereupon the Landlady assured him, that none should disturb him; upon which the Stranger retiring to his Chamber, lock'd the Door fast after him; and to make the surer work, (by that which afterwards appear'd) he had set two Chairs against it; scarce had he thus fortified his Chamber Door, but the Master, Mistress, the Hostler, and two of their Neighbours, being there by chance, laid their Heads together, (as if they had been so many Grave Counsellours) and began to spend their Verdicts upon the Deportment of this new Guest; concluding, they never in their Lives saw a Fairer, or more Beautiful Young Gentleman; then examining his Age, they judg'd it to be Sixteen, or Seventeen: Much Prate they had about it; and more particularly, what might be

be the cause of his Fainting upon the Bench; but that being beyond their reach they rested contented, being rapt up with Admiration, and Wonder, at the rare Proportion and Comeliness of the Person.

It was not long after, but another Stranger entred somewhat like the former, in Person, and no ways inferiour for Beauty in Shape, and Features; insomuch, that the Mistress cry'd out, Heavens bless me! Are Angels come to Lodge here? How so, said the Stranger? Sir, (said she) I speak for no harm, only I am sorry I have never a Bed to Entertain you, therefore you need not give your self that Trouble to alight; for I had but one Chamber vacant, wherein is two Beds, and a Gentleman has newly taken it up, and paid me for both already; he is minded to be private, seems to be Melancholy, and shuns Company; it is not for me, Sir, (who you know must please all Gentlemen) to be so rude, as to enquire into the Reason of it; he is a very comely Person, and such a Beauty ought not to be concealed, but that all the World should both see and admire it.

Is he such a one as you proclaim him to be (replyed the Gentleman?) Yes, Sir, (answered the Woman) and when you see him, you'll be of the same Opinion as I am: If

it be so as you say (said he) though I sit up this Night, I am resolved to view this curious piece of Nature you so highly applaud; and presently alighting, gave order for his Supper, which was immediately got ready.

Now, whilst he was at Supper, in comes a Catchpole of the Town, (as commonly they do in little Villages) and sits down by the Gentleman to keep him company; he did not forget to throw down three or four full Glasses of Wine, neither was he backward in tasting of his fare, with a very little entreaty; a Kindness which the Catchpole thought he had deserved to the full, by telling him a thousand idle Stories.

Nor was the *Master* of the House less impertinent than the *Catchpole*; who having made an end of his other Affairs, comes and sets himself down, to make a third Man; he knew his Trade, and therefore, without a By your Leave, fell to tasting of the Gentleman's Wine very liberally: he did not spare to commend it; for after every Glass he took, he would wry his head, and then lay it on his left Shoulder, saying, This Wine (quoth he) would carry a Man into the Clouds, though he must not stay long there, least he should have too much
Water

Water in it. Ever, and anon he praised his Guest, that had lock'd up himself, Relating, first, his fainting, then his paying for two Beds, and how he would have nothing for Supper, discoursing of several other things, as the Richness of his Apparel, and all Accoutrements fit for a Gentleman, only he wondred he had not any Attendance.

These Aggravations stirring up an eager desire in the new Guest to have a sight of him, he intreated the Inn-Keeper by one means or other, so to bring the business about, that he might get into the Chamber, and lie in the other Bed, promising him a good reward for his pains; but though the greediness of gain, had already wrought the effect upon the Inn-Keeper's Will, yet he found it was neither seasonable, by reason he had shut himself in, neither durst he wake him out of his Sleep: Besides, he considered with himself that he was paid well for both the Beds already.

But all these rubs, the Catchpole easily removed; For (said he) I will knock at the Door, pretending to come from a Justice of the Peace, and that by the command of my Master, I had an Order to bring this Gentleman hither to Lodge, and

finding one Bed empty, I should place him in it, and not suffer him to sit up all Night: Upon this, the Inn-keeper was to complain of the great Injury done the Gentleman that had hired the Chamber, and that there was no reason in the World, why he should not freely enjoy what he had paid so well for before hand; whereupon the Catchpole was to use his Authority, and save the Inn-Keeper.

This Plot of the Catchpole's was very well liked, and the Gentleman who had a longing Desire to see this rare Jewel that was lockt up, gave the Catchpole a reward for his Contrivance, and presently puts his Plot in Execution: So that in Conclusion, the first Guest shewing great Repentment, remov'd the Chairs, unlock'd the Door to the suppos'd Justice; the second Guest, crav'd Pardon for the Disturbance he had given him, laid himself down in the spare Bed, the other returned him not so much as one Word in answer to his Complement, much less would he suffer him to see his Face; for he had no sooner opened the Door, but he flew back to his Bed, and covered himself over Head and Ears, with his Face to the Wall; the other also betook him to his rest, hoping in the Morning he might satisfy his Curiosity.

The

The Nights were of the tedious *December* Measure, and one would have thought the Coldness of the Weather, with the Weariness of their Journey might have enforced Travellers to pass them over without breaking their repose; but in regard, the first Guest knew neither what ease, or rest was, no Satisfaction could Sleep procure him.

Presently after Midnight he began to sigh so grievously, that with every sigh, he seem'd to send his Soul of an Errand out of his Body; and so deeply were they fetched from the Heart, that though the second Guest were fast asleep, the Lamentations of his Chamber-fellow waked him. So that wondring at the throbs, wherewith he accompanied those sighs, he attentively set himself to listen to the passionate Murmurs of one that seem'd to be in the greatest distress in the World.

Nor could the other prevent his bursting forth into the following Lamentations. "Of
"all others, I the most unfortunate! Whi-
"ther does the irresistable force of thy De-
"stiny hurry thee? Or what hope have
"I to get out of this intricate Labyrinth
"wherein I am. I wander up and down,
"young in Years, void of Council, and
"know not where will be the end of all
"my

“my Toyl? How light a value, O my
“Honour, have I set upon thee? How
“has my Love been ill requited! How
“have I trodden under Foot the Duty that
“I owed my Noble Parents! Faithless *Don*
“*Mannuel*, ungrateful Man, where art
“thou? Whither, forgetful of me, art
“thou fled? Answer me, I conjure thee,
“for I direct my Discourse to thee alone;
“perform thy Vows to me, and relieve
“in this distress, her that has so many ways
“obliged thee.

Having said this, the seeming Gentleman was silent, manifesting by his sighs, that his Eyes were not sparing of their Tears, at the same time; all which the second Guest lay harkning, with a still and quiet Attention; Collecting by those Discourses, which he had heard, that without doubt it was a Woman, that uttered those sad Complaints, and bewailed her wretched Condition; which did but the more increase his Desire, to know who she was: So that he was thinking sometimes to call to her, and comfort her, being fully persuaded it was a Female; and doubtless he had done it, if at that very instant, he had not heard him rise, and opening the Chamber Door, call to the Master of the House to get ready his Nag; but the old Tost not having

having so much sorrow at his Heart, after he had suffer'd himself a good while to be call'd upon, made answer, It was but a little past Midnight, and he had more need sleep, and take his Rest ; and moreover, that it was so exceeding dark, that it would be a great piece of indiscretion to put himself upon his Journey.

01 This the sorrowful Stranger took to be good Advice, and having shut the Door, threw himself upon the Bed, sending forth withal, a most Terrible Sigh : All which the second Guest observing, resolv'd to speak, and offer him all the kindness that lay in his power, if he might be so happy as to know the Cause of his Sufferings.

To this purpose (said he) " Certainly, " Sir, should not your Sighs and Words " move me to Compassionate the Torments " of your Mind, I might well think my " self void of common Pity. The Com- " passion I resent of your Condition, and the " Purpose I have to hazard my Life for " your Redress, if it may merit any Re- " quital, I beseech you (Sir) reject not " my Friendship ; for I will rather perish, " than abandon your Relief, when once I " understand the ground of your Trou- " ble.

ad had edv ybi ylnu

WCH

" If

“ If Sorrow had not bereft me of my
“ Sense, (answered he that complained) I
“ might very well have bethought my self,
“ that I was not alone in this Lodging, and
“ and so ought to have put a Bridle to my
“ Tongue, and made a longer Truce with
“ my Sighs; and therefore to punish a Me-
“ mory that has so much fail’d me, and in
“ a place where it so much imported me to
“ be more careful, I will grant your Re-
“ quest; perhaps by renewing the sad Sto-
“ ry of my Misfortunes, it may happen,
“ that a fresh feeling of their Torments may
“ put a Period to my Miserable Life.

“ Sir, (then said she) you are to under-
“ stand, that I who entred into this Lodg-
“ ing (as no doubt you have been infor-
“ med) in Man’s Apparel, am an Unfortu-
“ nate Maid; at least, one that was so, not
“ full eight days ago; but now have lost
“ that Noble Name, by my own Unadvi-
“ sedness, and by giving Credit to the well
“ Compos’d, but Counterfeit Words, of
“ Faithless Man! My Name is *Carola*, my
“ Country one of the Chiefest, and most De-
“ lightful parts of all *Andaluzia*; the Name
“ I silence, because it doth not so much
“ import you to know it, as it does me to
“ Conceal it; my Parents are Noble, and
“ more than meanly Rich, who had be-
“ tween

“tween them one Son, and one Daughter.
 “My Brother who was to be the Comfort
 “of their Old Age, and an Honour to their
 “House, they sent to *Salamanca* to Study,
 “and me they kept at home; where they
 “bred me up with so much Circumspecti-
 “on, as best became their Vertue, and No-
 “bleness; and I, without the least repining,
 “was always Obedient, and Conformable
 “to their Wills, till either my Happiness,
 “being in the Wain, or, my Misfortune
 “growing towards the full, betrayed my
 “Duty.

“A Gentleman of great Extraction, and
 “more Endowed with Riches than I was,
 “presented himself to my Eyes: The first
 “time I saw him I was not sensible of any
 “thing else, save only a Complacency, and
 “kind of satisfaction in having seen him;
 “nor was it in me a thing so inexcusable,
 “that I should be somewhat taken with a
 “Sight so Charming; his Gentile Carriage,
 “his Countenance, and Meen, rendered
 “him the most accomplisht of any; all
 “which Perfections were much more height-
 “ned by his rare Discretion and Affabi-
 “lity.

“But what does it avail me to praise my
 “Enemy? Or, to go about, by way of
 “Discourse, to descant upon this my un-
 “fortu-

“fortunate Success; or, (to say better)
“the beginning of my Folly: He saw me
“not once, but often from a Window that
“was overagainst mine. From thence, (as
“it seem’d then to me) he darted his Soul
“into my Breast, by his Eyes and mine;
“with another kind of Content than at
“first: I took Pleasure in beholding him,
“and did even inforce me to believe that
“they were pure Truths, which I read in
“his Face, and Behaviour: His Eyes were
“the Intercessors, and Dictators of Speech;
“his Speech the Interpreter of his Desire;
“and his Desire the Inflamer of mine. To
“these he added Promises, Oaths, Tears,
“Sighs, and all that a firm, and constant
“Lover could possibly do, to express the
“Integrity of his Affection, and the Sincerity
“of his Heart.

As for me, Unhappy! Who had never purchas’d Experience at so dear a Rate before; every Word was of that force, that part of my Honours Fort could not withstand his Charms. At length, upon a Serious, and Solemn Vow of Marriage, I set all my Retiredness by, and usher’d in that Freedom which Love approves of, (my Parents unconsulted) never discovered any of my Folly, while *Don Manuel’s* Page (for that’s the Name of him that now disturbs

sturbs my rest) brought me the unwelcome News of having lost his Master, when scarce had he taken possession of what he so much coveted, his Parents, nor any other person could imagine which way he took, or what was become of him.

Now in what a Disconsolate Condition was I then left in? Let him speak that is able to pronounce it, for it is past my skill ever to know more, save only to bewail and lament it. I tore my Hair as if that had been guilty of my Errors. I martyrized my Face, believing it had been the Occasion of all my Misery. I curs'd my Fate, accus'd my too quick Determination, and the Tears which I shed were numberless. I silently complain'd on Heav'n, then reason'd with my own thoughts, to see if I could discover any Path that might lead to my Relief. At last, the only Expedient I could find, was to Disguise my self in Mans Apparel, and go in search of this Defrauder of my Lawful and well grounded hopes; and so without any deeper Meditation, occasion offered me Accoutrements fit for my sorrowful Journey, and waiting my opportunity in an exceeding dark Night, made my Escape. Now, Sir, I design my Journey to *Salamanca*, in pursuit of this most **Perfidious Man**; for since my setting forth
from

from my Father's House, I heard he is gone thither; all the care, and fear I have now upon my Spirits, is to keep my self undiscovered from any other Person, and that none of my Relations may pursue me and find me out.

But should this Cloud of Fear vanish, another may soon appear greater than the former, and prove a Storm; for should I meet with my Brother who is in *Salamanca*, oh! how his Wrath would boyl into a Tempest, and nothing can appease him, or expiate my Crime; but this wretched Life, which at this time seems very burthensome; if he should with patience hear me plead Excuses, yet the least point of his Honour, will over-poise the Balance, and over-sway the powerfulest Expressions I shall be able to utter.

Nevertheless, I am resolved, (though I lose my Life in the pursuit) to follow this false Man, my Husband, for so I dare call him; he in point of Honour can't deny it, unless the perjured Wretch will renounce those holy Vows which Heaven was witness to, and deny that Ring of Diamonds which I joyfully receiv'd of him as a Matrimonial Pledge; the Possie of it is, *Manuel is Carola's Husband*, if I find him out I'll ask him mildly what moved him so quick-

quickly to leave me? But am fully purposed that if he disanuls his vow'd Engagements to me, and denies me for his lawful Wife; Then shall this Dagger reach his perfidious Heart, and this Hand shall be the Executioner. I'll shew my self as ready to take revenge, as I was facile in suffering him to wrong me; for that Noble Blood which my Parents gave me, rowses up my Spirits, and warms me with such a Courage, that they already promise me Satisfaction for my received abuse, or full revenge of my offer'd Disgrace.

This (Noble Sir) is the true and unfortunate Story you so much desir'd to know, and which may sufficiently plead the excuse of those Sighs and Words that disturbed you of your rest: and now I beg of you (as you are a Gentleman) to assist a disconsolate Lady, or at least, to afford me your best advice, how I may avoid those dangers that seem to threaten me, and that my being found out may be prevented; and lastly, that which I so much desire may be obtained.

He who had attentively hearkened to the Story of the enamour'd *Carola*, continued silent, and so long that she thought he had been asleep; and had heard nothing of what she had related; for her better satisfaction

tisfaction, she called to know if he were awake. Indeed Sir (said she) you may well Sleep in the midst of a Repetition of Miseries, tedious to your Ears, and truly sensible to none but them that feel them.

I sleep not (dear Madam) reply'd the Gentleman, but rather am so far from it, and so sensible of your Misfortune, that I know not whether I may not be thought to have as deep a share in them as your self, and what advice I am Master of, you may command; for assure your self, I will assist you to the utmost of my Ability: Considering the Management of your Story, you have declared so rare an understanding, that methinks your own Judgement should not have been so easily misguided; for I perceive (Madam) your own Inclination more deceived you, then *Don Manuel's* persuasions; yet your few and tender years may be a sufficient Apology for your not having Experience in discerning the frauds of Men.

My advice (Madam) at this time is only to be patient; and if you can to take your repose during this small remnant of Night, and to Morrow we will both contrive what course is best to be steer'd. *Carola* having expressed her thankfulness, addressed

addressed her self to the rest, more out of complaisance to the Gentleman, than any satisfaction to her self; but he that gave that advice to the Lady, could take no rest himself, for he began to toils and tumble in the bed, and fell to Sighing so loud, that *Carola* was obliged to make the same enquiry after the cause of his Sighs, as he did after her Lamentations; and in retaliation of his kindness, she utter'd many Protestations to serve him to her utmost power.

To which the Gentleman reply'd, Suppose (*Madam*) you are the occasion of my Disquiet, yet you are not the Person that can relieve me; for were it so, I should not be sensible of any pain. *Carola* could not well understand whither these confus'd expressions tended, yet she suspected some amorous Passion had surpriz'd him, and thought within her self that she might be the instrument; concluding, that the Solitude and Darkness of the Room, and the Discovery she had made of her self might be no small Incentives to kindle heat in youthful Blood.

Fearing the worst, she made her self ready with all silence, and hast imaginable, and sat down upon her Bed expecting the approach of day, which within a while appeared. The Gentleman no sooner

C

perceived

perceived day light at the Window, but leapt from his Bed, and call'd to Madam *Carola*, to get her self ready; assuring her that the Proteſtations he had made to her laſt Night, he would begin to put in Execution this Morning; and that he would never leave her, till ſhe had obtain'd *Don Manuel* for her lawful Husband: Which if he refus'd, he would vindicate her Honour with the point of his Sword, and the longeſt Liver gain the Victory, and by this (Madam ſaid he) you may know how deeply your Miſfortunes have engag'd me.

Then opening the Windows, and the Chamber Door, which pleas'd *Carola*, who with a longing Expectation had a deſire to ſee the Perſon whom ſhe had held Diſcourſe with all Night: But when ſhe had view'd him, and knew him, then ſhe wiſh'd it had never been Day, but that her Eyes had been cloſed up in perpetual Night; for he had ſcarce caſt his Eyes upon her, but ſhe preſently perceiv'd he was her Brother, whom ſhe ſo much dreaded. At the firſt ſight of him, ſhe had almoſt loſt her Eyes, and remain'd Speechleſs; the Colour in her Cheeks waſhed away, and in the place of Roſes appear'd Paleneſs.

But

But reclaiming Courage from Fear, and Danger from Discretion, drawing out her Dagger, she took it by the Point, and address'd her self to her Brother upon her Knees, in these Words.

Take this, Dear Brother, (said she) and give me the Punishment of that Folly which I have committed. Satisfie your Displeasure upon so great a Crime as mine is, for I can expect no Mercy to be extended towards me. I confess my Offence; and acknowledge my Guilt; but would not that my Repentance should serve to excuse my Faults only, I beseech you, that the Torment may be such, as may take away this Wretched Life, but not my Honour: For although I have forc'd it into apparent danger, by absenting from my Fathers House; yet can it not escape a real Censure, should not the Punishment be secret.

Her Brother looking wishfully upon her, seeing her in Tears, rais'd her from the ground; telling her, that since he could not find out a convenient Punishment answerable to her Folly, he would suspend it for the present: And moreover told her, he did believe Fortune had not as yet shut the Doors against all Remedy; and that he had rather choose to procure it by the best means, than to take Revenge of that Wrong

and Affront, which by her overmuch Credulity reflected upon his own, as well as her Honour.

With these kind Expressions *Carola* began to recover her lost Spirits, her Colour return'd to her Face, and her almost dead hopes were reviv'd. *Don Sebastian*, (for so was her Brother call'd) forbore after that to Nominate any thing of her Disaster, knowing how harsh that Note would sound in her Ears; but did advise her to change her Name of *Carola*, to *Carlos*, concluding both to go to *Salamanca*, to find out *Don Manuel*: *Carola* referred her self wholly to her Brother, and the Business to his Management.

Then calling for the Master of the House, they desired somewhat might be got ready for Breakfast, intending presently to be gone: But in the Interim of time enters a Gentleman Traveller into the Inn, who was instantly known by *Don Sebastian*. *Carlos* likewise knew him, but durst not come out of the Room, for fear of being discover'd. *Don Sebastian* having embraced him, enquir'd what News was in those Parts from whence he came; he reply'd, that he came from the Port of *Santa Maria*, where he left four Gallies that were bound for *Naples*, and in one of them he saw a ve-

my good Friend of his Imbarqu'd ; which was *Don Manuel*, the Son of *Don Lopez*. This News pleas'd *Don Sebastian* wondrous well, returning thanks to *Fortune*, that she had made so fine a Progress ; after some Complements the Gentleman took his leave.

No sooner was the Stranger gone, but *Don Sebastian* and his Sister set forward for their Journey. Leaving those that were behind to descant upon 'em. As they Travelled together *Don Sebastian* acquainted his Sister with the News he had heard concerning *Don Manuel*, and that he thought it requisite with all speed, to hasten to *Barcelona*, where usually the Gallies which are bound for *Italy*, or return for *Spain*, abide there a day or two, in one of which he did not question but to find *Don Manuel*. *Carola* was very well pleased at the News and thanked him for his good Advice.

Don Sebastian, by the way pickt up a Mule Driver, for a Guide to 'em, and told him he must have Patience, for his occasions press'd him to go to *Barcelona*, and for his time he would give him a good Reward ; the Muliteer being a good Jolly Fellow, believ'd, that *Don Sebastian* was a Noble, Free Gentleman ; made answer,

that he would do him what Service he could, and go with him to the end of the World,

Then *Don Sebastian*, like a Prudent Traveller, examin'd the Strength of his own, and his Sisters Stock; and finding it considerable, proceeded forward on their Journey; and at length reach'd within Nine Miles of *Barcelona*; There they had notice that a Gentleman of Quality who was going to *Rome*, staid in *Barcelona*, expecting the Gallies. The News lik'd 'em so well, that they doubled their Speed, till entering into a little Wood, they espyed a Man come running out of it, and looking behind him as one that had been scar'd out of his Wits. *Don Sebastian* riding up to him ask'd him, What fears put such Wings to his Feet? 'Tis time to run, (quoth the Fellow) for a Man that has no mind to be Robb'd, or have his Throat Cut. For in short (said he) there is a Legion of Thieves in that Wood, and therefore I advise you to consider before you go forward; for as the Man said by his Wooden Gods, I don't like 'em, Robbers at this time of day. Quoth the Muliteer, I don't love to hear of? Rox on 'em, they'll never consider my Mules will be hungry at Night.

But as the Fellow had put them in a Fright, so he gave them some Consolation again,

again, by telling the Muliteer they had done their business, and were newly gone; leaving Bound to the Trees no less than Thirty Passengers, Stripp'd even to their very Shirts; only they left one Man at liberty to unbind the rest, so soon as they had recover'd a little Mountain, from whence they would give him a Signal to set the rest free. If this be so (reply'd the Muliteer) we may safely go on, there being no danger after a Robbery Committed.

Then they resolv'd to advance, but they had not gone far, before they saw the People Robb'd, and Bound, and the Fellow unbinding them as fast as he could, it was a strange Spectacle to behold, some stark naked, others cover'd with the Robbers tattered Rags, some weeping to see themselves Robb'd, and Strip'd of all; others laughing to see the strange Habits of their Fellow Sufferers; one was reckoning up what he had lost; another was bewailing his Great Grandfathers Seal-Ring, that had serv'd his Family for many Descents; a third hop'd they would drink his Health, or else, quod' he, they are a Company of ungrateful Rascals.

In Conclusion, every one had their several Humours, though not without some Passion of Discontent. The whole Scene drew

drew a Natural Pity from the two Brothers; but nothing was more worthy of their Compassion, than to see Bound to the Trunk of an Oak, a Youth about the Age of Sixteen Years, with a Shirt only on his Back, and a pair of Linen Breeches; but of so Fair, and Lovely a Countenance, that he moved all that beheld him, to pity. *Carlos* alighted to Unbind him, for which the Youth returned very Courteous, and Thankful Expressions, for the received kindness: Then *Carlos* desired the Mulitier to lend the Youth his Cloak, which he accordingly did; then *Carlos* ask'd him whence he came, and whither he was Travelling.

The Youth answer'd he was of *Andaluzia*, which *Don Sebastian*, and *Carlos* knew to be but two Leagues distant from their own Habitation, he moreover told them, that he came from *Sevil*, and that his design was to go for *Italy*, to try his Fortune in the Exercise of Arms. He confess'd he did not like his ill beginning, nor the rough usage of the Thieves, for they had taken from him in Money, and Cloths, a Sum not in every one's Pocket; yet however he would prosecute his Design, and not be discourag'd at the first ill Success that befel him: The Discreet Language of the Youth. begat such a strange Affection in the two
Brothers,

Brothers, that they hired the Muliteers own Beast for him, and in a short space arriv'd at *Tqualada*, where they learn'd, that the Gallies had put into *Barcelona* the day before; and that within two days they were to be gone, if foul Weather did not hinder 'em.

This News made 'em rise early next Morning before Sun Rising, for little Sleep sufficed them. Now, as the two Brothers, and the Youth were sitting together, *Carlos* fix'd his Eyes very wishly on his Face, and viewing him very narrowly, his Mind prompted him that the Youth must needs be of the Female Sex; then *Don Sebastian* ask'd him whose Son he was, the Youth made answer, he was the Son of *Don Frederique de Monasco*; *Don Sebastian* reply'd, he very well knew the Gentleman, but never heard that he had a Son: (by which he perceiv'd, that he was loath to discover his Parents.) It is true, (answered the Youth) *Don Frederique* has no Sons, but *Lorenzo* his Brother has: Indeed (said *Don Sebastian*) you are under a Mistake, for he has never a Son, but one Daughter, who is reported to be the Fairest Virgin in all *Andaluzia*, though I never was so happy as to see her. What you say, Sir, is certainly true, (reply'd the Youth) *Don Lorenzo*
has

has but one only Daughter, but not so Fair as Busie Fame reports her; and if I told you I was the Son of *Don Frederique*, it was only to bethe higher in your Esteem.

But ingenuously to confels, I am not the Son of *Don Frederique*, but of *Don Lorenzo's* Steward, my Name is *Leonardo*, at length grown up to these Years, and having given my Father some disgust, I resolv'd not to abide at home, but rather choset to try my Fortune in the Wars abroad, where I have heard of many of mean Birth, that have attain'd to high, and great Preferments: To all this Relation *Carlos* attentively listned, yet it still more and more confirm'd the Suspicion he had entertained. Thereupon *Carlos* having given *Don Sebastian* notice of his intent, took the Youth aside into another Room, and there began to take him into a kind Examination.

I could wish *Senior Leonardo*, it had been my happiness to have been owner of such Opportunities, wherein I might have serv'd you so far, as at this time I might raise from you an Obligation not to deny me some Request, which will be a great satisfaction to me; however, though you should deny me, yet will I never cease the Friendship I now profess to you. I must confels I have a Jealousie, you are not what your Habit proclaims

proclaims you to be, but of the other Sex,
and your Beauty publishes you to be born
of Noble Blood; if then that which I sus-
pect be true; deal plainly with me, for by
the Faith of a Gentleman, I'll die to serve
you.

With great attention; did this Youth
hearken to what *Carlos* said, and continu-
ed silent for a while; at last took hold of
both his Hands, and bringing them with a
kind force to his Lips, not only Kist, but
likewise Bath'd 'em with his Tears. *Carlos*
being surpriz'd at this sudden Passion, could
not forbear Weeping for Company. At
length, after a short Prologue of Sighs, and
Tears; Sir, said the Disconsolate Youth, I
neither will, nor can deny, but that your
Suspicion has been true; I am a Woman,
and of all Women the most Unfortunate,
that ever saw the Suns bright Lustre: And
since the Favours received, and the fair Of-
fers you have made me, oblige me to Obe-
dience, I shall declare to you my Name,
and Family, if it may not be offensive to
your Ears, to hear anothers Misfortunes.
The pain that I shall suffer, will be that they
are yours (reply'd *Carlos*) but the Pleasure
will be greater when you have eased your
Mind, perhaps some Refreshments may
flow from one Breast to another.

What

What

What I told as to my Country was true, (said the Youth) but as to my Parents I made a Concealment. I am that unfortunate Daughter of *Lorenzo, Don Frederique's* Brother, who for her Beauty (as your Brother said) is so much prais'd and commended, though the mistake is easily discern'd, in that little, or none at all, that poor *Angelica* is owner of.

Now, Sir, two Leagues from the place of my Birth, lives a Noble Gentleman, that has a Son, named *Don Manuel*; who if Fame be not overlavish in his Praises as she has been in mine, is in the Rank of those Gentlemen, which deserve no mean Commendation. This Gentleman, and my Father took great delight in Hunting, and he frequently came and staid at our House five or six days together. From this occasion, Fortune, or Love took their opportunity to throw me headlong from the Precipice of my Honour, to the bottom of this low Condition, wherein I now am; his Gentleness, and Discretion, Lineage, Beauty, and Wealth was such, that all the Happiness I did desire, was to obtain him for my Husband; many Hours, and Days were spent in Courtship, and after many Sollicitations, having given me his Faith under the most binding, and Solemnest Oaths imaginable

nable to Marry me, I resign'd my self wholly to his Will and Pleasure: besides all this, I obtain'd from him a Writing, sign'd with his own hand, and strengthened with so many powerful Circumstances, that I thought nothing could be more sure: thus relying upon a false security I contriv'd a way to convey him such a Night to my Lodging, where without any disturbance he might reap that Fruit, which for him alone I had reserv'd, and at last came that Night which by me was so much desired.

Till she came to this point *Carlos* had the patience to continue silent, having her Soul depending on *Angelica's* Words, whose Expressions pierc'd her to the very heart; especially when she heard the Name of *Don Manuel*; she beheld the rare Beauty of *Angelica*, and considered the greatness of her Worth intermixt with such a singular Discretion, as she had so well manifested in the repetition of her Story: But when she came to say, *at last came that Night which by me was so much desired*, she had like to have lost all her Patience; so that not being able to contain her self any longer, breaks out, Very well, (said he) and when this happy Night was come, What did he then? Did he enjoy you? Did he anew confirm the Writing? Did he rest well
pleased

pleased in taking that from you, which you say was only his? Did your Father know of it? Or, in what end, ended these wise Beginnings?

They ended (replied *Angelica*) in putting me into this Condition; for I did neither enjoy him, nor he me, nor came to any final agreement: With these Words *Carlos* began to recover a little Breath, and recall'd those Spirits, which by little and little were leaving her disorder'd Heart; such was that raging Pestilence of Jealousie, which began to spread, and diffuse it self into the most secret Retirements of the Vital Parts. *Carola* at last re-settled, though not without some Qualms, and inward Resentments, began again to hearken to the Fair *Angelica*, who thus proceeded.

About some eight days after, I was credibly inform'd that he was gone from his House, and carried with him a Young Lady, whose Name was *Carola*, a Virgin of extraordinary Beauty, and rare Endowments. This was soon spread abroad, and presently arriv'd to my Ears, and with it that fearful Lance of Jealousie, which pierc'd my Heart, and set my Soul on such a flaming fire, that turn'd my Honour into Ashes, consum'd my Credit, and wasted all my Patience to nothing.

halsely

Then.

Then most Unfortunate! Cry'd I, for I then began to figure in my Imagination, *Carola* to be Fairer than the Sun, and more Happy than I am Miserable: Then I read over and over the Writing which I had, look'd how it was Sign'd, and presently my Hopes fled thither for shelter, as to a Sanctuary; but when I consider'd the Person that *Don Manuel* had carried along with him, then again all my Hopes fell immediately to the Ground: I tore my Hair, and curs'd the Face that had betray'd me. At last, to finish all my Sorrows, I resolv'd to leave my Fathers House, and in Disguise, chosing a Night that had put on its blackest Mantle, I walk'd unto a little Town, where I found the Conveniency of a Waggon, and in two days after I arriv'd at *Sevil*: There I bought me some Apparel, and a Mule, and travelled along till Yesterday with some Gentlemen, that were with speed going to *Barcelona*, to take the opportunities of the Gallies bound for *Italy*.

But falling unfortunately into the Hands of Thieves, and Robbers, I lost that Jewel which kept me alive, and lightned the burthen of my Afflictions; it was the Writing I had from *Don Manuel*. But how easily would he deny Words written in Paper, who denies those Obligations which ought
to

to be engraven in his Soul ? besides, if he is accompanied with the unparrallel'd *Carola*, he will never vouchsafe to look upon wretched *Angelica*. However, I am resolv'd to die, or to find 'em both out, to the end the sight of me may disturb their quiet. Let not that Enemy of my rest think she shall enjoy at so cheap a rate, that which is mine ; I'll seek her out, and if I can, will deprive her of that life, which she enjoys in those Embraces due to none but my self.

But what fault can you find with *Carola*, (said *Carlos*) if happily she were deceiv'd by *Don Manuel*, as well as you have been ? That cannot be (reply'd *Angelica*) for if they live together, as Man and Wife, the Case is evident. But be they in the remoter Desarts of *Lybia*, or the furthest parts of Frozen *Scythia*, She questionless enjoys him.

It may be (said *Carlos*) you are mistaken, and Jealousie hath misguided your thoughts, or blinded the Eyes of your Understanding, for I know her very well, whom you call your Enemy ; and I am so privy to her Condition, and Retiredness, that she will never adventure to forego her Fathers House, nor yield to the Will of *Don Manuel* : But admit she should, if she never knew you, nor knew any Contract between

tween you, she has done you no wrong at all, and where there is no Wrong offer'd, no Revenge ought to be taken: Of her Retiredness, (said *Angelica*) you may say your Pleasure; but, I think, I was as Retir'd as she: And whereas, you urge she did me no Wrong, should I look upon the Fact without Passion, I must confess, she did me Justice; but the Torment of my Jealousie makes her a Criminal to my Misfortune: This is that Sword which is Sheathed in my Bowels, and none can blame me, if I pluck out that which wounds me.

I perceive (said *Carlos*) the Passion which at present possesses your Mind, will not permit you to judge of things aright; nor are you at this time in any fit posture to receive good Instructions; however, I will be ready to aid and assist you, according to my Ability, in what is requisite; and I am sure the Natural Inclination, and Generosity of my Brother, will not suffer him to do otherwise. Our Course is design'd for Italy, and if you resolve to go with us, your good Company will be very acceptable: You may guess at your Entertainment, by that little you have found already. *Angelica* return'd him hearty thanks, and ear-

D
nestly

nestly besought him to take her into his Protection; which *Carlos* faithfully promised to do; so taking their Leaves of each other, they departed to their respective Lodgings, for their Repose.

Carola repeated all to her Brother, what *Angelia* had related; at which he was much surprized; but told her, were there a Confirmation of what she had then spoke, she was for Beauty, and Riches, one of the Noblest Ladies in all *Andalusia*; and now (said he) we must use our utmost skill, in preventing her speaking first to *Don Manuel*, for though the Writing may be lost, yet the remembrance of it will be found.

Carola having heard her Brothers Discourse retir'd to her Bed, thinking to take her rest, but that raging Torment of Jealousie would not permit her the least Repose. Sometimes *Angelia's* Beauty, and the Perfidiousness of *Don Manuel* appeared to her Imagination in the highest Magnitude; and then the Writing, that appeared so dreadful, that nothing but Blood was seen instead of Ink. Such Agonies as these perplext her dubious Thoughts, and hindered Sleep, which proves a Friend to Care.

Her

His Brother was kept waking, by Torments of another Nature; for no sooner did he hear who *Angelica* was, but his Heart was all on Flame, such force has Beauty that it conquers Hearts, and never ceases but in a happy fruition: He did not imagine *Angelica* could be us'd so barbarously as to be tied to a Tree, or clad in a Tattered Habit, but in her Rich Apparel in her Father's House; and now wishing for the welcome day, that he might pursue his Journey, and find out *Don Manuel*, not so much to make him his Brother, as to prevent his Marrying *Angelica*; desiring rather to see his Sister Comfortless, and *Don Manuel* fairly Buried, than to see himself Hopeless.

Thus all with differing Thoughts, at the Approach of Day they all forsook their Beds; but *Don Sebastian* being first up, sent for a Habit to fit his dearest *Angelica*; she putting them on, Girded her Sword about her with that Lively Grace, and Vigour, as surpriz'd *Don Sebastian's* Admiration, and multiply'd a thousand Jealousies in *Carola*. About Eight in the Morning they departed their Inn, setting forward on their Journey for *Barcelona*; and here I want Words to express the Thoughts which the two Brothers entertain'd touching *Angelica*. *Carola* wishing her Death, and *Don Sebastian* desiring

ring her Life; *Carola* seeking to find out Faults in her, that she might not despair of her Hopes, and *Don Sebastian* finding out those Perfections which more oblig'd him to love her: All these thoughts hindred not their Journey, for they reach'd *Barcelona* before Sun-set.

But as they entred into it, there was a Tumultuous Noise, and great Numbers of People were gathering together; but upon enquiry into the Cause of it, answer was made, it was a Quarrel between the Seamen, and some of the Inhabitants of that City. Then riding up to the Sea-Shore, they saw several Weapons drawn, and Multitudes of People Hewing, and Hacking one another, and could distinctly discern the Faces of some that fought; all this while *Don Sebastian* beholding this Cruel Scuffle, observ'd amongst those that took part with the Seamen, a Young Gallant that laid about him like a Tyger; the Briskness, and Valour of this young Gentleman, together with the richness of his Cloths, caused all those that beheld the Fight to fix their Eyes upon him, and in such stedfast manner did *Carola* and *Angelica* behold him, that at one Instant both cry'd out, *Heavens bless me! Either I have no Eyes, or that's Don Manuel.* Then with great Nimbleness

Nimble as they alighted, and drawing their Swords, they cleared their way through the Croud, and placed themselves on each side of *Don Manuel*.

Fear nothing *Don Manuel* (cry'd *Angelica*) for you have one by your side, who with the loss of his own Life will rescue yours: Who doubts it (reply'd *Carola*) while I am here? *Don Sebastian* saw, and heard what had pass'd, but followed close, resolving to take his share. *Don Manuel* being busie in defending himself, took little notice of his two Seconds, but continued still eager in Fighting, till at last he was forc'd to retreat, with his two Valiant *Amazons* on each side: The Fray it seems was not ended, but Stones, the Instruments of Popularity, were thrown plentifully, whereof one very unluckily, with a well directed force hit *Don Manuel* full on the Breast, and struck him backwards, *Angelica* no sooner saw him fall, but presently catch'd him in her Arms, and *Carola* did the like.

Don Sebastian was likewise defending himself from the Showres of Stones which rained about his Ears, yet saw the Accident which happened to *Don Manuel*; and desirous withal to approach to his Souls delight, a certain *Catalonian* Knight of great Authority in the City, call'd to him, to

keep along by his side, with a Promise to save him from the Insolency of the Unruly Boat : *Don Sebastian* returned the Knight hearty thanks for his friendly proffer, but besought him that he might pass forwards; telling him he saw that in great danger, which he valued more than his Life.

This stop was a great hinderance to *Don Sebastian*; for before he could reach to 'em, the Long-Boat belonging to the Admirals Galley, had taken in *Don Manuel*, and *Angelica*; who would never let him go out of her Arms : But as for *Carola*, he arriv'd seasonably enough, she being either weary, or overcome with Grief to see *Don Manuel* Wounded; or else, intrag'd with Jealousie, to see her Rival gone along with him, had neither Power, nor Strength to get into the Boat; and doubtless had fallen into a Fit, and dropt into the Water, had not her Brother at that juncture of time appear'd to her Relief; who (indeed) himself felt no less Torment, than his Sister did Pain, to see that *Angelica* was gone away with her Lover *Don Manuel*.

The *Catalonian* Knight being very much taken with the goodly Presence of *Don Sebastian*, and his Brothers, call'd them from the Sea Shore, (where Multitudes were still thronging) and desired them to go
 keep with

with him, for he would Conduct them safe from the Rabble; thus forced by necessity, and being afraid of the People, not yet pacify'd, they willingly accepted of his friendly kindness: Thereupon, the Knight alighting from his Horse, with his Sword in his Hand, made way for 'em through the midst of that Tempestuous Croud.

The Knight having thus preserv'd the two Brothers, brought them to his own House, which was one of the chiefest in all the City. Then he enquir'd of *Don Sebastian* in which of the Gallies he came; who replying, that he was newly come in to the City as the Hurly-Burly began, and espying in the Engagement, a Gentleman, who was wounded on the Breast with a Stone, but could not by any means come to his assistance: Moreover, (added he) this Gentleman is a Person on whom depends all my Felicity in this World; and therefore, if I might obtain that favour from a Person so obliging, I could wish he might be brought on Shore: Thereupon, the Knight freely told him, that he would go himself, and see him safe brought hither, which according to his Promise he performed: He found *Don Manuel* in a Languishing Condition, and the Chyrurgeons dressing of his Wounds, gave their Opinion it

was very dangerous, being near the Heart; which caused the Knight to be so urgent with the Admiral, that he gave him leave to take *Don Manuel* along with him, which was done with all the Care imaginable.

Being Landed, the Knight brought *Don Manuel*, and *Angelica* to his House, making them both welcome. At the same time Chyrurgeons were sent for, all confirming the dangerous Condition wherein *Don Manuel* was. *Angelica*, and *Carola* heard it with that Grief of Heart, as if they had heard the Sentence of their own Deaths, but not willing to discover their Sorrow, they endeavoured at that time to suppress it. *Angelica* resolving with her self to lose no time, but to take the first opportunity of speaking to *Don Manuel*, no sooner were the Chyrurgeons gone, but she entred the Chamber where *Don Manuel* lay, where were present the Knight, *Don Sebastian*, *Carola*, and others; She sat by the Bed-side, and taking him fast by the Hand, Sir, (said she) it is now no seasonable time, considering your Condition, to utter many Words, and therefore I shall only intreat you to lend your Ear to some few which are requisite; for it would prove ill in me, who never disobligh'd you, to be at this time the Cause of your Disturbance.

At

lie. These Words, Don Manuel lifting up his Eyes, look'd stedfastly on *Angelica*, having recollected himself, and in a manner taken her into his Memory, more by the Tone of her Voice, than by her Physiognomy, with a feeble Voice, as one that was full of Pain, Say on, Sir, (said he) what you please, for I am not yet so near my end, but I can listen to your Story, nor is that Voice of yours so harsh, and displeasing, that it should give me the least Disquiet.

Carola hearkned most attentively, and every Word that *Angelica* spoke, pierc'd her to the Heart, and at the same time Wounded the Soul of Don Sebastian, who also heard her, then proceeding, Sir, (said she) if some strange Misfortune had not hurt your Memory; or rather, if some foul Blemish had not stain'd my Vertue, you cannot but remember her, who not long since, you were pleas'd to Honour with the Name of your Celestial Treasure; you would then remember who *Angelica* was, and your Promise you gave her in Writing, Sign'd with your own Hand; neither can you forget the Worth of her Parents, her Fidelity, and the Obligations wherein you stand bound to her; for resigning up to ease a Victory to your Vows, and Protestations.

If

If your Memory does not at this time fail you, (though thus Disguis'd) you may easily perceive I am your most Unfortunate *Angelica*. No sooner had you taken your speedy Flight, but I began my sorrowful Journey; despising the worst of Miseries that could happen to me, I was resolv'd to wander up and down, leaving no place unsearch'd, till I had found you out; for if ever you felt the Power of true Love, or heard of the Rage of a Deceived Woman; you will not be Astonish'd, but rather Convert your Wonder into Pity. And now let me beg of you, for the Love you bear to Heaven, your own Honour, and for the sake of her, to whom you owe more than to all the World; only to be true to Justice, let that be perfectly Consummated now in Publick, which you were so willing to Contract in Private; for no further Delays can be allowed of, without the ruin of your Honour, and my eternal Shame. Here *Angelica* stoppt. Now they that were in the Room, expected when *Dan, Manuel*; would give an Answer; who in a little while lifting up his Eyes, said to her, Fair *Angelica*, I am not ignorant of any Obligations, wherein I stand engag'd, for those many Favours receiv'd from you; nei-

ther

Nov. I.

The Rival Ladies.

43

ther do I forget the Worth of your Noble Parents, nor your own Unblemish'd Vertues; neither do I disesteem you for seeking me out in a Disguise so subject to Censure: But I must proclaim a truth, and if it prove unpleasant to your Ears, I am an unwelcome Herald. I confess, *Fair Angelia*, I lov'd you well, for which you conferr'd on me a Retribution: but yet the Writing which you are pleas'd to command, was given you more in Complaisance to your Request, than any Act of my own Inclination, for many days before I surrender'd up my Heart with as pure a Flame as was proportionable to the Beauty I so much admir'd. The *Fair Carola*, is the Object whom I must Adore, and to whom I will perform those Vows, in the Face of Heaven: Therefore, pray Madam, take it not for so high a Crime; for I left not only you, but her, in the same Suspence. I do acknowledge I am guilty of the Imprudent Proceedings of a rash Young-Man, being void of Judgment, Meditation, or Consideration: And as for the Writing, I look upon it to be indifferent; this I thought fit to impart before my Death, that the Memory of this Truth may not be Buried in Oblivion.

While

While *Don Manuel*, thus Discours'd with *Angelia*, his Arm was the Support on which his Head rested ; but having made an end of speaking, he was ready to faint, and had not *Don Sebastian* ran immediately and catch'd him in his Arms, he had fallen into a Swoon. Recovering his Spirits, he cast his Eyes on *Don Sebastian* ; then taking him by the Hand, he forced it to his Lips ; mutually they Embraced, and Kissed each other, using many Complements, whereby they renewed their former Friendship: Then said *Don Manuel*, Sir, the great Joy I receive in seeing you, renews my Sorrows, for you set before my Eyes my Ingratitude which I am guilty of, but since it cannot be remedied, whatever Misery now befalls me, i'll receive it with pleasure, in exchange of this short Enjoyment of your Friendship. Sir, reply'd *Don Sebastian*, I have been an Ear Witness of your kind Expressions you were pleas'd to use, in acknowledging that Passion you have for my Sister *Carola* ; (then taking her by the Hand, who was all this while weeping) and (Sir) to compleat that Happiness the more, I here present her to your Hand, who (I believe) at this time may effect upon your Wound an Excellent Cure: They were both so transport-ed with Joy, that their Cheeks were Bath'd in Amorous Tears.

All

All that were in the Room were silent, being surprized with admiration to behold so strange an Accident: at the same time *Angelica* perceiving how things went, and what would be the Product in the end; that her Hopes were quite frustrated of ever obtaining *Don Manuel*, she stole out of the Company, and being got out of the Room, instantly made into the Street, intending to have wander'd where-ever Despair would lead her; scarce had she got out of Doors, when *Don Sebastian* began to miss her, and as if he had lost his Soul, made strict enquiry after her; but no Body could give him intelligence which way she was gone: Like one almost distracted, he posted first to the Muliteers Inn; but finding her not there, he ran like a Mad Man through the Streets, searching all places as he went through; believing at length, she might design for the Sea side, whither he hastned with all Speed: As he drew near, he heard a Voice calling aloud for the Boat belonging to the Admirals Galley, who presently knew it to be *Angelica*; he flew to her as swift as an Eagle to his Prey: *Angelica* stood at first upon her Guard with her Sword in her Hand, but perceiving it to be *Don Sebastian*, she was grieved at the Heart he should find her, especially in a
place

place so remote from Company : She discern'd that *Don Sebastian* had a real Passion for her, and could have wish'd that *Don Manuel* had lov'd her but half so well : *Don Sebastian* was glad he had so fortunately Retriev'd her, and more pleas'd at the Opportunity of the Place, where he apply'd himself to her, in these Words.

Since Fortune has prov'd thus kind to me, fair *Angelica*, shou'd I now want power to discover the Secrets of my Soul, there would lie conceal'd in this Bosom, the most Cordial Affection, that was ever harbour'd in a Lover's Breast : *Don Manuel*, hath the Advantage of me only in this, that he is the first that had the Possession of your Heart ; but since his Heart was not in his Power to give, nor your Happiness to receive, may the Gods inspire you with that Love, that in Exchange for his you may take mine. My Extraction is not Ignoble, nor my Fortune much Inferiour, to *Don Manuel* ; but what Heaven's Bounty (*Madam*) hath opened her Hand to give, I will humbly prostrate at your Feet, to take : *Angelica*, continued silent, all the while ; letting fall some Tears, and fetching some few Sighs ; then taking her by the Hand, he kiss'd it very often ; still kissing of it between whiles. *Madam*, (said he) re-
move

move this pain which I endure; and speak that happy Word, that *Angelica* is *Sebastian's*? Let me beg of you to entertain so importunate a Passion, that nothing but a suitable return, can be Satisfactory: pronounce, (Madam) that happy Sentence, and then may Torments equal to your Hate (if such could be found out) fall on me, if ever Passion was so pure as mine, or shall prove so constant.

Angelica, so soon as she had dry'd those Tears which had bedew'd her Cheeks, she said, Sir, I look upon you as a Gentleman, far above what I can pretend or lay claim to, but more than ever I can merit; yet if you think me worthy of your Marriage Bed, and what you utter with your Tongue, proceeds from a real Affection, I shall (said she with a little redness) surrender up my self, and consent if Heav'n has so decreed it; but if what you said should prove untrue; it will the more increase my Torment. Ah, Madam! (said *Don Sebastian*) may the brightest Luminary ever cease to display his Beams upon me, if ever *Sebastian* proves false unto *Angelica*. Then give me Sir, (said she) that Hand of yours, and in Exchange take mine, and let those Clouds, these Sands, and Seas, with the still silence of this place (only interrupted by my Sighs, and

and your Intreaties) be Witnesses of this Engagement. Having said this, she permitted *Don Sebastian*, to embrace her, and by Exchange of Hands, they solemnized their private Nuptials with the shedding of a few Tears, rejoycing at the flight of their past sorrow.

This Ceremony being ended, they presently return'd to the Knight's House, where at the Entrance, they heard a noise of Musick, with great Expressions of Joy, not dreaming so suddain a performing of the Nuptials of *Don Manuel*, and *Carola*; which afterwards they were fully informed of, with the Reasons of so quick a dispatch. At their return they were received with great Joy, by the *Catalonian Knight*, *Don Manuel*, *Carola*, and the rest: *Don Sebastian* having informed them what passages had happened between him and *Angelia*, they were infinitely well pleased, embracing each other, the Priest being in the House gave order to have *Angelia's* Habit chang'd, which being done, he joined their Hands, as he had done *Don Manuel's* and *Carola's*, pronouncing them Husband and Wife, which gave Satisfaction to all that were present. After that the Knight desired their Companies in a Room, which he kept for publick Entertainment of Friends, where

was

was a Table furnished with all Varieties, they all seating themselves, feasting very plentifully, and closing with the Bride and Bridegrooms Health they departed the Room.

Now all their Care and Diligence was about *Don Manuel's* recovery of his Wound; but the Chyrurgeons so applyed their utmost Skill that in Fourteen days he was perfectly cured, and able to perform his Journey; the day of departure being come they all took leave of that Liberal Knight, who had heaped on them so many Favours, and given them such noble Entertainment; his Name was *Don Martin de Coligni*, most Noble in his Blood, and as Famous in his Person; thus making a thankful Acknowledgment, *Don Sebastian* presented him with a Rich Diamond Ring, which he importuned him to take, as a small remembrance: Then they proceeded upon their Journey, where in a few days from the top of a high Hill, they could discern their respective Houses.

They discovered likewise from the same part of the Hill, a large and spacious Valley, and under the shade of an Olive-Tree, a tall lusty Gentleman, upon a strong limb'd Horse, with a white Shield on his left Arm, and a very strong well pointed Launce in

E

his

his right Hand; while they were observing him with a fixt Eye, they perceived two more among the Trees, well mounted, with the same Armes the other had: soon after, they all three met together, and having consulted a while, two of 'em went apart some few Paces, then putting Spurs to their Horses they encountred very furiously, and with such dexterity, as clearly prov'd they were Masters in that Exercise; the third Man stood as a Spectator, without moving from his place: *Don Sebastian* being very impatient to see so well a maintained Combat, and himself at so far a distance, he running withal that speed he could make, down the Hill (leaving *Carola*, *Angelia*, and *Don Manuel* to follow after) drew near the Combatants; just as they were both slightly wounded, one of their Hel-mets being fall'n off, in the turning of his Face, *Don Sebastian* knew it was his Father, and immediately flung himself among the Combatants, desiring to be inform'd of the Cause of this Engagement; by this time, *Don Manuel*, *Carola*, and *Angelia*, were come to 'em; *Don Manuel*, presently knew the other to be his Father: *Angelia* also having earnestly ey'd the Person who did not engage, knew him to be her Parent, with which sight all four were strangely sur-

surpriz'd. But this their sudden Passion not admitting the formalities of Discourse, they all fell down, and cried, stay your Hands, for we who beg this of you are your own Flesh and Blood; then said *Don Manuel*, my Honour'd Father, I am he, for whom I imagine these your Venerable Gray Hairs are in dispute; let me beseech you to lay aside your Anger, and those Weapons, or Exercise them upon me, who indeed deserves to be the Object of your fury; then perceiving that *Don Frederick*, *Angelica's* Father, was alighted, and embracing of her, she gave him a Relation of what had pass'd in all their Travels, and desired him to give his two Friends an account; which he presently did; and the other two immediately alighted, most lovingly embracing them, but not without the mixture of some Tears which sprang from the Fountain of Love and Joy.

Not long after, there appeared in the same Valley, several Gentlemen, completely armed, which were to be Seconds to these Noble Persons; but as they drew near, perceived they were embracing one another, but could not tell what to think of it, while *Don Frederick* went and inform'd them who they were, and what his Daughter *Angelica* had told him: then they

immediately alighted, and payed them that respect which was due to their Quality. In the Conclusion, *Don Manuel's* Father proposed to have both the Weddings re-solemnized at his own House, which being agreed upon, they departed home; as they went along, *Don Sebastian*, and *Don Manuel*, enquired into the Cause of this Combat, and found, that *Carola*, and *Angelia's* Fathers, had Challeng'd *Don Manuel's* suspecting him to Conceal his Sons Designs.

The next day after their return home, their Nuptials were Solemniz'd, with great Splendour, who lived many Years happy together, and left behind them a Noble Stock to Posterity: The Place in *Andaluzia* I shall forbear to name, because I desire to keep up the Reputation of those two Ladies, whom peradventure, some Tongues, either Malicious, or Foolish, might be Censorious, and tax of lightness in their Desires: But I shall intreat them not to blame the like Liberties, and Exercises, till they look back into themselves, and seriously call to account, whether they were never smitten with *Cupidinian* Fires, or felt the force of Love, which in Effect is unresistable.

As for the Mule-Driver, he never met with such Entertainment in his Life, he liv'd bravely all the time of the Weddings, and

at

at last *Don Sebastian*, and *Don Manuel*, sent him away so well Contented, what with his Liberal Pay, and many Gifts bestow'd upon him, you may be sure he took care to avoid the Wood where *Angelia* was Robbed; and when he got Home, his Wife never made him so Welcome in all his Life; besides the many Flaggons of Wine his Neighbours bestowed on him for relating the Story of his Travels.

E 3

THE

Nov. II. [145] AT

Mistakes:

A

NOVEL.

TWO Young Gentlemen, Fellow Students in *Spain*, were resolv'd to leave their Studies, and go for *Flanders*; led thither by the heat of their Youthful Blood, the desire they had to see the World, and to learn the Exercise of Arms: To this purpose they arriv'd there (but in a time of Peace and Quietness, contrary to their Expectation, or else Articles of a Treaty suddenly to be Ratified) Coming to *Antwerp* they received Letters from their Fathers, which testified to 'em their Displeasure, for leaving their Studies without their Assent; and the not acquainting them with their
in-

intended Journey, whereby they might have appear'd in an Equipage suitable to their Birth, and Quality.

Don Bernardo, and *Francisco*, these two young Gentlemen, perceiving that what they had acted displeas'd their Parents, design'd to return back to *Spain*, since they saw there was nothing of Action in *Flanders*; yet before they returned, they would satisfy their Curiosity in seeing all the most Famous Cities of *Italy*: Having view'd them all, with Delight, and Admiration, they settled themselves in *Bologna*; where highly applauding the Methods of Study in that Famous University, and earnestly desiring, that there they might accomplish their Education, they immediately Posted away Letters to their Friends, informing them of the great Advantage they could reap by their Studies, in that so much Famed University: Upon the Receipt of their Letters, their Friends were extraordinary glad, that they were so careful of their Learning, and sent them several Bills of Exchange, to receive Sums of Money, whereby they might furnish themselves with those Necessaries Equivalent to their Birth and Quality.

Don Francisco was about Twenty Six Years of Age, and *Don Bernardo* two Years younger; they visited the Schools often, and had attained to that great Skill in Musick, and Poetry, with other extraordinary Endowments, that they were Admired, and Applauded by the whole University. They shewed themselves to all very Courteous, and Liberal, and were far from that Pride, and Arrogancy *Spaniards* are generally tax'd withal.

But young Blood running in their Veins, and being full of Jollity, they were desirous of taking a Prospect of the Chief Beauties belonging to that City; and though there were many Gallant Ladies, Married, and Single, that were Extoll'd for Beauty, and Virtue; yet above all, the Lady *Evadne* was Fame's Jewel, and of a Noble Extraction.

Evadne, extreamly Fair, and Beautiful, Adorned with all the Excellencies Nature could design; that to do her Justice, she was indeed Nature's Master-piece; her Parents both dying, she was left under the Guardianship of *Marcellus* her Brother, an Honourable, and Valiant Gentleman: They left behind them great Riches, which makes Orphanship the more pleasant, and easie. Her Retiredness was so strict, that she

she would not admit of any Visitants; and her Brother's Care was so great, and tender of her, that he permitted her to do what she pleased, without contradicting of her.

But the Fame, and Report of her Transcendent Charms rais'd an Ambition in *Don Francisco*, and *Don Bernardo* to view her; but all the Stratagems they could think of was in vain, for they could not once obtain the Sight of her. Seeing their Hopes frustrated, their Desires by degrees were wholly extinguished; and now wholly applying themselves to Study, and the Diversion of some Innocent Recreations, they led a Facetious Life together, seldom rambling abroad in the Night, or when they did, they always went well Armed.

It happen'd, not long after, they had made an Agreement to walk abroad one Evening; but a Vagary came into *Don Bernardo's* Head, that he fram'd some Excuse to stay a while behind, but desired *Don Francisco* to go on before, and he would presently follow after. I am not in such Post haste (reply'd *Don Francisco*) but I can stay for you; or, if neither of us goes out this Night, the Matter's not great. After a few Intreaties, *Don Bernardo* perswaded him to go first, and he assured him he would follow him: *Don Francisco* told him, he

he thought it was some Maggot, and bid him use his own Pleasure; but if he did follow him, he should find him in the same Walk, they generally us'd.

The Night was somewhat Dark, and the Hour Eleven; *Don Francisco* having walk'd through two or three Streets, and finding none to Converse withal, resolv'd at last to return home; but passing through a Street, which had a Portico built on Pillars of Marble, he heard some Body Whist with a soft and low Voice; the Night being dark, he could not imagine from whence it came; but Halting a little, and attentively list'ning, he perceived a Door open half way, drawing near to it, he heard a low, small Voice speak, Who's there, *Giacomo*? Yes, said *Don Francisco*: Then take this (reply'd they within), and be careful to have it safely kept, and return again hither immediately: *Don Francisco* putting forth his Hand felt something ponderous, but could not guess what it was; and thinking to take it with one Hand, he found there was occasion to use both: No sooner had he received it, but the Door was shut; then marching off, he found himself in the Street with his unknown Treasure; but by that time he had gone some few Paces, he heard a Child cry, which it seems was newly born;
What

What to do in this Strange Case he was ignorant, being full of Amazement: To return back to the House, he consider'd with himself, might prove dangerous to the Infant and himself; he having assumed the Person of him to whom it was intended; and to leave it in the Street, he look'd upon it as inhumanity; but remembering the Charge he had receiv'd, to be Careful, and have it safely kept, and to return immediately, He resolv'd to carry it to his own House, and leave it in the Custody of an Elderly Woman, which was his House-keeper, whose Name was *Dorila*, and then return back, to see what further occasion there was of his Service, or what more *Mistakes* there might be committed.

At length he brought it Home to his House, (*Don Bernardo* being gone to find him) and entring into a Room next at hand, called *Dorila* to him, and bid her Unswath the Infant. When she had open'd it, they both view'd it, and found it to be a Male Child, very Fair, and Beautiful; the Ornaments about it declared it was of no mean Parentage, or ordinary Extraction. Then *Don Francisco* desir'd her to procure a Nurse for it, but first to take of those rich Mantles, and to put on meaner: And for the better Concealing my bringing it hither,
you

you shall Convey it to a Midwife, who is seldom unprovided of necessary Expedients upon such Occasions; and for her Gratification, take Money with you to defray the Charge; you may nominate what Parents you shall think fit, and give it what Name the Midwife and you shall agree upon: All this *Dorila* promis'd should be faithfully perform'd according to his Order.

The Business being thus contriv'd, *Don Francisco* with all speed hastned back to the place, to hear whether they would Whist any more to him. But instead of that, a little before he came to the House where the Whisting came from, he heard a great Clashing of Swords, as if several had been Fighting: He listned a while but could hear no Words spoke, but by the Sparks which flew from their Weapons, he perceived by the Glimpse, that one was set upon by a great many; and had a Confirmation of it, by hearing one say, *False Traytors, though you are many against one, yet shall not your Advantageous Number gain you the Victory.*

Don Francisco at these Words, transported by his eager Courage, at two Leaps made to the side of the Gentleman assaulted, and drew out his Sword with so much Gallantry, saying, Sir, fear nothing, for such
Aid

Aid is come to your Relief, as will not fail you, till his Sword or Life fail : And therefore, fortifie your Strength and Resolution; for Traytors, though numerous, are not always successful. Immediately one of the Adverse Party reply'd, Villain thou Lye'st, here's no Traytors: But where there is Justice in a Cause, there's always hopes of Victory.

They had not time to use more Expressions, for the hast they were in to Conquer each other, would not admit of a Parley; the unequal Party press'd very hard upon *Don Francisco*, and his Companion, that at two Thrusts they laid the Stranger on the Ground: *Don Francisco* believing he had received his Mortal Wound, reassum'd to himself that Courage, seconding his Blows so powerfully, and with such nimbleness, that they were forc'd to retreat.

But all his Magnanimity had not been able to have defended him against so Potent an Enemy, had not Dame Fortune step't in to his Protection; for the Inhabitants by this time were alarm'd, and open'd their Windows; others came forth with Lights, and to cry out for help, which the greatest Party perceiving, forsook the place, and made their Escape.

By

By this time the Stranger that was slain, had recover'd himself, for those Thrusts he receiv'd, lighted on some private Armour he had on, which was as hard, as the very Adamant. *Don Francisco* in this Skirmish having lost his Hat, by chance took up another, which he put on, without looking whether it was his own.

The Gentleman rising up, said (to *Don Francisco*): Sir, that I am indebted to you for my Life, is not a greater truth, then that, I shall never scruple to lose it in your Service; and what Fortune has been pleased to bestow on me, I shall be very ready to lay at your Feet; but lest my Ignorance might (when occasion serves) render me incapable of paying you that Debt, I shall beg to be acquainted with your Name, that by my future Gratitude I may express my thankfulness.

Sir, (reply'd *Don Francisco*) the Service I have paid you, is so much the Duty of one Gentleman to another, that it merits not an acknowledgment; but to comply with your Desires, I shall give you that satisfaction which is agreeable to your Demands. I am a Gentleman, a *Spaniard*, and a Student in this University, and if my Name can render you any Service, I am called *Don Francisco de Bazola*.

You

You have highly honour'd me (reply'd the Stranger) in every respect, but I dare not discover my Name to you, but am willing you should be inform'd from another, rather than my self; and I will take that care, you shall not remain long a Stranger to it. By this time they perceiv'd eight Persons, making towards 'em; *Don Francisco* thinking them to be Enemies, desired the Stranger to be in a readiness to receive 'em, and he would not be wanting in his Duty to assist him: though their number be so unequal, I believe, Sir, (reply'd the Stranger) they are not Enemies, but Friends; the Words were no sooner spoke, but they surrounded him, Whispering some few Words to him, but so low, as *Don Francisco* could not hear 'em.

Upon this, the Stranger turning aside from 'em to *Don Francisco*, he embrac'd him, saying, Sir, these Gentlemen are my Friends, and have promis'd me their assistance, else I should have created you farther trouble, by conducting me to some place of Safety; but since Fortune hath offer'd this means for my Preservation, I will resign my self up to their Protection. Having lost his Hat (as he pretended) he desir'd his Friends to get him another; scarce had he spoke the Word, when *Don Francisco*

Francisco offer'd him the Hat which he had; the Stranger no sooner view'd it, but return'd it to him again, saying, Sir, this is not mine, but I beseech you except of it, and wear it as a Trophy of this days Victory: Moreover, (he added) I am sorry that Time Summons me away, which hinders me the paying you that further respect that is due to your Merits. Using some short Complements, the Stranger took his leave of *Don Francisco*; who was in a great Surmize, who this Person should be; but by the richness of the Hatband of Diamonds, which was on the Hat the Stranger gave him; he concluded, he must be some great person of Quality.

Don Francisco as he was returning home, met *Don Bernardo* his Companion, who told him he thought he had been lost; and withal desired him to turn back, and walk with him some few Paces, and he would give him a Relation of what had happened to him in his Absence: *Don Francisco*, willing to hear his Story, return'd back with *Don Bernardo*, who gave him this following Account.

A little more than an hour after you were gone, I went in order to find you out, and before I could reach thirty Paces, saw a Person coming in great hast, as it were
to

to meet me, and approaching nearer to me, perceiv'd it was a Woman, in a long Habit, who with a Voice, interrupted with Sighs, and Tears, said, Sir, are you a Stranger, or one of this City? Madam, (I reply'd) I am a Stranger, and a *Spaniard* at your Devotion, and am ready to assist any Lady in Distress: I see Amazement, Madam, in your Face, 'Pray are you Wounded, or have you receiv'd any prejudice whereby your Life is in danger? Sir, (said she) the Injury I have receiv'd, may prove my Death, without some speedy Remedy: Therefore, I beseech you, by that Civility which is never wanting in any Gentleman of your Nation, to Conduct me safe to your Lodging, with the greatest speed imaginable; there I will inform you of my Person, and the occasion of giving you, Sir, this trouble.

Seeing my assistance was desired with speed, without any reply, I led her through private ways to my Lodging; *Roderigo* my Page was ready, who when he had opened the Door, I order'd him to withdraw, and without his seeing her, convey'd her to my Chamber: She was no sooner entered, but she threw her self on the Bed, and fell into a Swoon; upon which, I uncover'd her Face, which was shaded with a

Vail, and discover'd the greatest Beauty that ever Mortal Eyes beheld ; her Age, I Conjectur'd, might be about Seventeen : I stood a while in admiration at such a rare Angelical Form, and Shape, but recovering of her self, she put me out of that deep Ecstasie I was in, but she continued sighing, and lamenting her Condition ; lifting up her Eyes she look'd earnestly upon me, and said, Do you know me, Sir ? No, Madam, (I reply'd) I never was so happy to be acquainted with so much Beauty.

O unhappy is that Beauty (said she) which Heaven bestows on many for their great Misfortune ! But this, Gentle Sir, is no time to commend Beauty, but to remedy the Events of Future Mischiefs : Therefore I beseech you, by your Worth, and Nobleness, to leave me here lock'd up from all Humane Eyes, and presently return to that place, where I receiv'd from you that kind assistance : If there be any Persons engaged with one another, I entreat you, Sir, side not with any Party, but rather seek to reconcile their difference ; for whatsoever Blood is spilt on either side, will be a new supply to my former Miseries. Having done speaking, I assured her those Commands she had laid upon me, should be obeyed, and punctually observed ; so ha-
ving

ving left her to her self, I am now going to
finish my Promise.

The Accident is very strange, (reply'd
Don Francisco) and if you have done, I
will give you an Account of my Adven-
tures. So relating to him the whole Story
of what had happened to him, but particu-
larly of the Quarrel he engaged himself in,
in rescuing a Gentleman who was defend-
ing himself against a very unequal number;
which he believ'd might be that Engage-
ment he was going to inform himself of,
and which the Lady would receive satis-
faction from: Moreover, he told *Don Ber-
nardo*, all things were now silent; and
did believe that those Persons who were
engaged, were Persons of great Quality.
They both admir'd at each others Fortune,
resolving now to hasten homewards to look
after their Charge, and give their Atten-
dance to the Lady.

As they were walking home, *Don Ber-
nardo* acquainted *Don Francisco* of the Ob-
ligation the Lady had laid on him, and of
his Promise he made to her for performance
of it, which was, That none should be ad-
mitted into the Chamber, but himself. *Don
Francisco* reply'd, I will devise some Stra-
tagem or other to behold this Beauty
you have so highly commended. In dis-

courting, *Don Bernardo* cast his Eyes on the Hatband *Don Francisco* had, which did sparkle, and shine with great lustre; so taking it from his Head, they both found it to be exceeding rich, and of great Value: This Hat (reply'd *Don Francisco*) was presented to me by the Person whom I assisted, telling me, I should accept of it, because it was well known; and keep it as a remembrance of that Days Victory.

Being arriv'd at home, *Don Bernardo* open'd his Chamber Door, and finding the Lady leaning her Cheek on her Hand, which she had bath'd with her tender Tears, *Don Francisco* having an earnest desire to see her, put his Head half way in; at which instant, the sparkling of the Diamond Hatband shined in those Eyes which were full of Tears. Come in my Lord *Duke* (said she) come in, Why will you distribute to me with so sparing a Hand, the richness of your Presence.

Madam, (reply'd *Don Bernardo*) your Ladyship's mistaken, here's no *Duke* to excuse himself; for not waiting on you. How, Sir, (said she) no *Duke*! Then have my Eyes deceiv'd me; for that Person that looked into the Room must needs be him, whom the richness of his Hat cannot conceal. Indeed Madam, I can assure you,
(reply'd

(reply'd *Don Bernardo*) the Hat which you saw, no Duke wears it; and if you are willing to be fully satisfied, by giving him admittance into your Presence, the Person (*Madam*) shall attend you: Sir, if it will not be too great a trouble to you, (said she) to request that favour of him, I shall be more at ease; yet if my hopes are frustrated, and he prove not to be the *Duke*, it will make an Addition to my Affliction; *Don Francisco* heard what was said, and having leave granted for his Admittance, he made his Entry into the Chamber, and having paid those Respects due to her Person and Quality, she was soon convinc'd that he was not the *Duke*: then Blushing at the *Mistake*, with a discomposed Voice said to him,

Unhappy, and Miserable that I am! Inform me, Sir, I beseech you, without holding me in Suspence, whether you know the Person that did own this Hat? Where you left him? And whether happily alive? or is it the unwelcome Messenger of his Death? Then Weeping (she said) And is it possible for me to behold those sparkling Diamonds here, and to behold my self thus clouded without thee, immur'd up in a Chamber under the Power of Strangers? Dear *Madam*, said *Don Francisco*, torment
F 3 not

not your self, the Owner of this Hat is not dead, neither are you in such hands, that you will receive the least prejudice by; for our Lives and Fortunes are ready to protect you when ever any occasion shall require our Service; and be assured Madam, that all the Respect shall be paid to you, which is due to your Birth, and Quality. Then she desired him to give her an Account of what Passages happened in the Enterprize, for (said she) that Hat belongs to *Cosmo de Medicis, Duke of Millain*.

Don Francisco, not willing to hold her longer in Suspence, recounted to her the whole Relation. Madam, (said he) the Person who presented this Hat to me, I suppose is the *Duke of Millain*, I left him in very good health, and in the Company of some Friends that came to his assistance. This (Madam) that I have related to you is a certain Truth. *Evadne* returned him many Thanks, and told him her Mind was much eased for the present.

By this time *Dorila* had dressed the Child, and going to carry it out, as she pass'd by the Lady's Chamber, the Child cry'd so strongly, that it gave an Alarm to the Lady, who enquiring of both the Gentlemen, desired to know what Child that was, which to her thinking, was newly Born: Madam

(reply'd

(reply'd *Don Francisco*) it is a Present was laid at our Doors this Night, and *Dorila* our Woman is going to get a Nurse for it. Pray, Sir, let her bring it to me (said the Lady) and i'll exercise that Charitable Act for others, since *Fortune* is not so kind to permit me to do it for my own. Then *Don Francisco* called *Dorila*, to bring the Child, which he presented to the Lady, saying, (Madam) you may behold the Gift which this Night has produced, and it is no surprize to us, for we often meet with such Accidents. The Lady *Evadne* having the Child in her Arms, look'd as earnestly on the Face, as she did on the meanness of the Cloths it had on, and could not refrain from weeping; so covering her Breast, that she might with more Modesty give the Infant Suck, she apply'd it to her Nipple, and laid her Face to the Childs, bathing it with her Tears.

The Lady considering the Child received little or no Sustainance, she return'd it to *Don Francisco*, saying, In vain have I exercised my Charity, I find I am not experienced in these Cases: Then she desired him to give order, that the Child might not be carried out into the Air at that time of Night, but be kept till the next day, and before it went she desired it might be

brought to her, for she took great delight in viewing it.

Don Francisco returning the Child to *Dorila*, gave her order to take care of it till the next day, and then dress it up as handsomly as she could in those Rich Mantles it was brought in, but not bring it till he call'd for it: Then returning to the Lady's Chamber, where there was only *Don Bernardo*, with the Lady *Evadne*, who through grief being ready to faint, desired something to eat whereby she might support her Spirits, that she might be able to utter her intended Relation. Then *Don Bernardo* went immediately to his Closet, and fetch'd thence some Conserves, and Sweet-Meats, wherewith she being refresh'd, she began her Account in these Words:

I am one of this City, (whom I doubt not but you have heard very often nominated) the Unfortunate *Evadne Barbarino*; and by those which us'd to flatter me, was fam'd for Beauty; but such as it is, (Gentlemen) you may perceive that those which did applaud it, wanted Skill: Being a young Orphan, I was left under the Guardianship of *Marcellus* my Brother, who was indeed very Vigilant over me: Thus being confined to Solitude, only accompanied by my Woman, which Waited on me, growing

ing up in Years and Stature, Fame's Trumpet blew aloud, by the Breath of those Persons who had privately visited me, and by a Picture which my Brother's Curiosity would have done by a Famous Painter of *Italy*. But all this would have been the least part of hastening my Misfortunes, had not the *Duke of Millain* done a Kinswoman of mine the honour to give her in Marriage. My Brother, to add more Guests to it, desired my Company; there it was the Duke beheld me, and wrong'd his Judgement, in making me the Object of his Love; who now has brought me to endless Misery.

Gentlemen, I will not relate to you, the Devices, Plots, and Means, how the Duke at the end of two Years came to obtain his Desires, which had their Birth at this Wedding: For neither Guardings, Watchings, Brotherly Admonitions, nor any other Humane Industry, were sufficient to hinder our private Assignations; but before I would surrender up my self into his close Embraces, he gave his faithful Promise upon his Honour, to Marry me: I begg'd of him very often to inform my Brother of his Intentions; but to what I desired, he pleaded those Excuses, which he intreated me to approve of, to be requisite, and necessary:

cessary: In Obedience to his Commands, I did, as many other Lovers do, believe the best; within a few days I found an Alteration in my Self, and not willing to discover my Condition, I feigned my self Sick, and Melancholy, desiring my Brother to remove me to that Kinswoman's House, where was the beginning of my Affliction.

There did I ease my Mind, and make known the present danger which seem'd to threaten me; for small Felicity did I take, when Jealousies and Fears were always tormenting me, thinking that my Brother had suspected my Imprudence. But it being fully agreed upon between the Duke and my self, that when I was in my last Month, I should give him notice of it, and that he with some other Friends would make Provision for me to go to *Mitlain*, where those Matrimonial Rites should be solemnized.

This was the Night that was concluded on for his coming, and this very Night writing and expecting of him, I heard my Brother pass by, with many other Persons, which seemed to be ready to engage, by the noise of their Armour, this suddain Fear, made Passion so prevalent, that instantly I was delivered of a Son, and this waiting Woman of mine, who was the
Duke's

Duke's Sollicitress, and privy to all my Actions; she seeing this suddain Alteration, wrapt the Child in other Clothes than this Infant has on, which was laid at your Lodging, and going to the Street Door, she gave it (as she inform'd me) to a Servant of the *Duke's*. In a little while after, accommodating my self the best I could, answerable to my present Necessity, I left the House, thinking the *Duke* had been near at hand, which indeed I did contrary to his Orders; but the fear of my Brother's severity hindred room for better Consideration, and foolishly forced me forth, where I met with this Charitable Reception at your Hands.

Having ended her Discourse, her Head fell from her arm whereon it rested; the Gentlemen ran immediately to see whether a Fainting Fit had not seiz'd her; but perceiving she wept bitterly, *Don Francisco* applyed himself to her in these Words: Madam, if my Self and Companion, when Ignorant of your Birth and Quality, have had that Commiseration of you as a Lady in Distress, we are now ready (Madam) being fully informed of your great Worth, to pay those double Obligations and Respects which are due to your Merits, and you may command (Madam) what ever

Spanish

Spanish Civility can lay claim to : Though you never were under the like Misfortune before ; yet I beseech you, Madam, by your Nobleness, shew Patience an Example : Believe me (Madam) I am of that prophetick Spirit, that such strange beginnings will terminate in a happy Conclusion: for the Gods will ne'er permit that so much Beauty should be Oppress'd, and such Vertuous Thoughts so ill rewarded : The best advice, (Madam) I now can Dictate to you, is to take your rest, and preserve your Spirits ; *Dorila* our Servant shall attend you, whom you may place Confidence in, and knows as well how to silence your Misfortunes, as she does how to pay her Respects and Services; and will endeavour to wade through all difficulties to oblige you.

Sir since you will oblige me so far (said *Euadne*) let me see her ; for being proffered to me by so good a hand as yours, I shall think her very necessary in this present Occasion, but I desire that none else may be Eye-Witnesses of my Misfortunes. None Madam (reply'd *Don Francisco*,) shall dare to approach you or invade your privacy, without your Knowledge: so leaving her alone, they went out, and *Don Francisco* called to *Dorila*, and ordered her to carry
in

in the Child dress'd up in its Rich Mantles; which she had done in the same manner he brought it home: Then *Dorila* went in with the Child, being inform'd before what she should answer to such questions as the Lady should ask her.

So soon as the Lady *Evadne* saw her, she bid her welcome, and said to her, prithee *Dorila*, give me that pretty Creature, and bring hither the light. *Evadne* taking the Child in her Arms, she seemed to be much concerned and look'd very earnestly upon it, saying, *Dorila*, tell me truly, Is not this the same Child you brought some few hours since? Yes, Madam, (she reply'd.) How comes this suddain Alteration in the Mantles, (said *Evadne*?) Either these are other Garments, or else, this is not the same Infant? then she fell a weeping, saying, tell me, I conjure thee, dear *Dorila*, by all which thou lovest best, and all that's nearest and dearest to thee, tell me, I say, where thou hadst this Babe and Mantles, for I am the unfortunate owner of 'em, if sense of Sight and Memory doth not fail me; for in this Garb, I delivered to my Maid, the most beloved of my Soul.

Don Francisco and Don Bernardo, hearing her in this Passion, were not willing she should be held any longer in Pain or Suspence, resolv'd to remove the Doubts and Scruples which at that time had got Possession of her. Then Don Francisco said to her, these Mantles and this Child (Madam Eudae) are both yours; then he related to her by Degrees, that he was the Person whom the Maid delivered the Child to, how he brought it home, and order'd Merile to change the Mantles, that the Child should not be known. However, after her Ladyship had acquainted him with her Delivery, he was certainly assur'd it must be her Son, and he had inform'd her sooner, had he found out an opportunity; but now seeing her suddain Passion, proceeding from misdoubt, it might be recompens'd with the supervening Joy of knowing her own. Infinite were the Tears of Joy shed by Eudae, endless were the Kisses she gave her Son, and many the thanks which she rendred to Don Francisco and Don Bernardo, calling them her Guardian Angels, with many other Titles, in Expression of her Thankfulness.

Thus

Thus leaving her with *Dorila*, to whose Care they recommended the Lady, with a strict Charge to let nothing be wanting that was necessary for a Person in her State and Condition; having so done, that little remnant of Night which was left, they had Occasion to use it for rest; the next Morning they enquired after *Evadne*, how she had slept that Night, *Dorila* told 'em pretty well, and that she was not yet awake; whereupon, they went to visit the Schools, and passed through that Street where the Duke was set upon, and by the House, which the Lady *Evadne* came from, to harken out, if any Discourse were concerning *Evadne*, or the Duke; but all was hush'd up and silent, perceiving no notice to be taken of either.

Having heard their Lectures they returned home. *Evadne* hearing of them come, sent *Dorila* immediately to desire their Company. *Don Francisco*, and his Companion told *Dorila*, they were ready to attend her Pleasure. So entering her Chamber, having complemented *Evadne*, they told her they had waited upon her sooner, but they were not willing to be so presumptuous as to press into her presence without Order: She desired them with Tears and Intreaties, not to use those Ceremonies

remories now to her, but to lay them by for a more fit opportunity. For she having the Happiness to see none but themselves, and *Dorila*, she looked upon Freedom to be the only Felicity could here be enjoyed; then she enquired of them whether they heard any reports concerning her escape: they informed her they had made enquiry with all the Curiosity they could devise, but not a word was to be heard concerning it.

Whilst they were Discoursing, one of the Pages came to the Chamber Door, and told *Dorila* there was a Gentleman below, attended by two Servants, whose name is *Marcellus Barbarino*, and desires earnestly to speak with *Don Francisco de Bazola*: Upon the hearing of this Message, *Evadne*, with a low Voice, uttered these Words; My Brother! (Gentlemen) my Brother! it is he! Doubtless, he has had Intelligence of my being here, and is come with an intent to deprive me of my Life; therefore, I beseech you Noble *Spaniards*, succour and protect a poor Distress'd Woman, and suffer her not to be murdered in your presence.

Don Bernardo intreated her to have Patience, and told her she needed not fear any danger would happen to her, so long as he had
had

and a Life to lose in her Defence, then he desired *Don Francisco* to walk down, and hear what the Lady's Brother had to say; which accordingly he did: then *Don Bernardo* called for his brace of Pistols (which were ready charged) and laid them on the Table, commanding his Men to be ready with their Swords if there should be Occasion: *Dorila* seeing these Preparations, shaked like an Aspen-Leaf, and the Lady *Evadne*, fearful of some ill Success, trembled much more; but *Don Bernardo* being of a chearful Courage, comforted her up, with great Expressions of his Fidelity towards her.

In the mean time, *Don Francisco*, found *Don Marcellus* at the Door, who after having complemented one another, *Marcellus* said, Sir, I beseech you, (for this is the Custom of *Italy*,) to honour me with your Company to that Church over against us, for I have a Secret to impart to you, which my Life and honour depends upon; Sir, I am very ready to wait on you (reply'd *Don Francisco*;) so walking over to the Church, they chose out at a place where none could hear 'em, and *Marcellus* began his Relation in these Words:

G

Noble

Noble *Spaniard*, my Name is *Marcellus Barbarino*, so well known to others, that I need not sound a Trumpet in my own Praise; I have for some years since continued an Orphan, and had left to my Care one only Sister, to whom for Beauty Nature has been so Bountiful, that it is beyond the power of Art to delineate it; to deal ingeniously with you, there is not a Beauty, take it all together, that can equalize it; her youthful and tender years, made me careful in the keeping so rich a Jewel, but the imprudent will of my Sister *Evadne* (for that's her Name) hath defrauded all my Preventions.

The Duke of *Millain*, with *Lynx's* Eyes overcame those of *Argos*; outwatch'd my Vigilancy, and overpower'd my Industry; for he not only enticed my Sister, taking her out of a Kinswoman's House by Night, but is (as it's reported) newly delivered of a Child by him; it was late ere I had notice of it, and this very Night I went in search of him and found him out, but in the Battle some *Angel* stept in to Assist him, and would not permit me to fetch out the stain of my Honour with his Blood. My Kinswoman inform'd me, that the Duke had deluded her under the promise of Marriage, and Allurements of the Sweet Name

Name of Husband : Thus being bereav'd
of a Sister, and my Honour, I have until
now lock'd up my Bosom, and was not
willing to declare my mind, till I could find
out a speedy Remedy.

My Resolution is now to go to *Millain*,
and require of the Duke full Satisfaction,
either by Marrying my Sister, or dispute
it with his Sword. In which Journey and
Enterprize, (Noble Sir) I would desire
your good Company, being so well assur'd
of your Courage, that good Fortune will
not be wanting in any of your Proceed-
ings. I was unwilling to acquaint any
Relations with this Design, least they
should frustrate my Intentions; but from
you (dear Sir) I have a greater Confi-
dence of Encouragement in the pursuit
of it, then any Dissuasion to the con-
trary.

Sir (reply'd *Don Francisco*) I am sorry
for the Occasion, but am glad of having
the opportunity of serving one of so mag-
nanimous a Soul; from this time I dignifie
my self your Defender; and take to my
Charge, either the Satisfaction or Revenge
of your Honour, and since the Gods are
our Judges we need not fear partiality, for
the justest Sword will be the sharpest, and
therefore the conquer'd will be esteem'd

ed Guilty. Now (Sir) all that remains, is, that you resolve upon the time, which, I think, the sooner the better, for the Iron is to be wrought while 'tis hot; the heat of Choler increases Courage, and an Injury whilst it is fresh, rouses up Revenge.

Don Marcellus hearing these Words, arose from his Seat, and imbrac'd *Don Francisco* in his Arms: Sir, (said he) having so Generous a Breast as yours is, it will be needless to use Motives, by setting before you any other Interest, than that of Honour; the gaining of which, in this Enterprize, shall be wholly yours, if Fortune be not wanting to give us Success; and for our Journey, if it stands with your Convenience, to Morrow Morning will be a proper time, for I shall be able to day to provide all things necessary.

Your time shall be mine, (reply'd *Don Francisco*) only give me leave *Seignior Marcellus*, to impart this to a Friend and Companion of mine, a Gentleman, whose Valour, and Silence, you may as well build upon as mine. Since you have taken my Honour to your charge, (reply'd *Marcellus*) I know you will impart it to none, but what are as Judicious as your self; and this Gentleman being a Friend and Companion of yours, I should be much wanting

ing in my Respects, if I declined so great a Favour; for that Person must needs be happy, who is worthy of your Acquaintance; and good Fortune must needs attend him, whom you are pleas'd to stile your Friend and Companion.

Then they imbrac'd each other, and took their leave, *Marcellus* telling him he would send one next Morning to call him, and so take Horse without the City, that there might be no notice taken of their Journey: After this *Don Francisco* went home, and acquainted *Don Bernardo*, and the *Lady Evadne*, of what had passed between *Marcellus* and himself, and of the Resolution they had made of taking their Journey next Morning.

Dear Sir, (said *Evadne*) your kindness is very great, and as great your Confidence: How suddainly have you engaged yourself in an Affair so full of Inconveniencies? How are you certain, Sir, whether my Brother will lead you to *Millain*, or convey you to some other place, the better to accomplish his Designs of Revenge? But wheresoever you go, you may be assured, my best Wishes go along with you; though I confess myself a Wretched, and Unfortunate Woman, which am afraid of every shadow; yet my Timorousness is the more excusable, since

my Life, or Death depends upon the Duke's Resolution. Who knows but Fury in 'em both may rage to that height, that nothing but Blood can Expiate the Wrong? And Sir, you cannot chuse but think, that your Absence will create in me a strange Suspence, expecting every hour between Hope, and Fear, either the welcome, or unwelcome News of your Success. Do I so little love the Duke, or my Brother, that I dread not the Misfortunes of 'em both, and feel the Anguish of a double Event lie heavy on my Mind?

Raise not your Fears (said Don Francisco) Madam, to that pitch, but leave some place for hope: Trust to my Care and Conduct in this Affair, and I make no question, but all things will end in a happy Union; our going to *Millan* is not to be excus'd, neither can I decline assisting your Brother: We are yet ignorant of the Duke's Intentions, neither do we believe he knows of your Flight from your Kinswomans House: But perhaps, we may have a very fair Account from his own Mouth, and no Man can better give a Relation of it than himself; and (Madam) I must deal plainly with you, I have that equal Honour and Friendship for the Duke and your Brother, that

that Duty binds me to be Careful and Vigilant for both their Safeties.

The Gods protect you (said *Evadne*) and give you that good opportunity of bringing your Affairs to a happy Issue, and me a thankful acknowledgment for all Favours received from you in this my Extremity: For had I not been so fortunate as to have met with this high Civility at your Hands, I must have remained the most Unfortunate; but Thanks to your Goodness, which led you to so much Charity and Pity, as to Relieve the Distressed: However Fears may assault me in your Absence, or Hope hold me in Suspence, yet methinks I long now to see you gone, and as quickly to see you return; that I may receive the welcome News of your Prosperous Success.

Don Bernardo approved well of the Design, and thanked *Don Francisco* for recommending of him to *Don Marcellus*; assuring him he would accompany them in their Journey; not knowing what might happen, but perhaps they might have occasion for a third Person; so, for fear of the worst he would be ready to see how Affairs went, and to prevent all unjust Proceedings.

It is not requisite (said *Don Francisco*) the *Lady Evadne* should be left alone ; nor to make Seignior *Marcellus* suspect, that I wanted Courage to perform my Promise and Resolution : The Respect I have for the Lady's Safety (reply'd *Don Bernardo*) shall not be wanting ; whatever Enterprize you engage in, you must allow me a Participation ; therefore abandon all Excuses, or else disanul our Friendship : My Intention is to follow you at a distance undiscovered by *Don Marcellus* ; and (I presume) the *Lady Evadne* will not be displeased at it ; and I am confident *Dorila* will be so careful, that there will be nothing wanting in our Absence towards her Accommodation.

I shall be so far from resenting your Departure, (said *Evadne*) that it will be rather a satisfaction to me, that you accompany one another ; and I should be guilty of breaking the Bonds of Friendship, if I should interceed to the contrary : Besides, Sir, (speaking to *Don Francisco*) who knows what danger you may be expos'd to, that may require *Don Bernardo's* Assistance. Then taking out of a little Cabinet which stood by, two rich Jewels, she presented one to *Don Francisco*, and one to *Don Bernardo*, desiring them to accept them as small

Remem-

Remembrances for those many Favours she had receiv'd at their Hands: but they modestly return'd them, and told her they would not hazard so great a Treasure in the Enterprize they were going to undertake: So recommending of her to the care of *Dorila* their Woman, they humbly took their leave.

Dorila used her Industry and Diligence in waiting on *Evadne*, wondering at her Master's Journey, but was ignorant where they went, and about what business; the next Morning *Don Marcellus* came betimes to the door, and found *Francisco* ready prepared for the Journey, handsomly Accoutred, with his rich Hat, but the Hat-band he covered with Cyprus, the better to conceal it: So walking out of the City into a Garden, a remote place, they took Horse, and taking Bye-Paths, they went towards *Millain*.

Don Bernardo upon a fine Nag, and in a good riding Suit followed after 'em at a distance; but he perceiving they espy'd him, especially *Don Marcellus*, resolv'd to take the direct way to *Millain*, not questioning but there he should meet with them: They had scarce gone out of the City, but *Evadne* had given *Dorila* an Account of all Transactions, concerning the Duke

Duke and herself; not concealing the occasion of her Master's Journey, or her Brother *Don Marcellus* his Resolution.

Dear Madam (said *Dorila*) I perceive the danger you are in is greater than you are sensible of, which if not speedily prevented may utterly prove your ruine: If you please (Madam) to receive my Sentiments, I don't believe Seignior *Marcellus* your Brother is gone to *Millain*; but rather that he has decoyed them from home, whereby he may accomplish his designs in taking away your life: Pray (Madam) consider how slightly we are guarded, if any such black design should evidently appear, how weak and poor an Opposition could be made; we have only three raw Pages left behind, and what Courage, or Skill can they use in your defence? Indeed (Madam) I have too high a respect to delude you with Flattery, for my Heart Prophetically tells me of the ruine which threatens this House, and for a speedy Remedy I will employ my Life in your Preservation.

Evadne hearing *Dorila's* Arguments which she utter'd with so much earnestness; and showed such Manifestations of Fear, that she was wholly possess'd, all she had spoke was certainly true; so contemplating with
her

her self, that if *Don Francisco*, and *Don Bernardo* should be Slain, her Brother might be entring the Chamber, and execute his Revenge: Being thus perplexed, she ask'd *Dorila* what Counsel she could give her to prevent this Storm, which she perceived was coming.

Madam, (reply'd *Dorila*) there is an honest Curate of a Country Village, two Miles from *Millain*, whom I once did serve; he will do any thing for me that I can require, or is in his power to perform: If you please I will take care to find one out to carry us safe thither; and as for the Nurse which Suckles the Child, she will go along with us to the Worlds end: And admit, (Madam) that you should be found out it is more honourable for you to be in the House of an old Curate, than under the Roof of two Young *Spanish* Students. In Conclusion, she rendred such Reasons, that poor *Evadne* was willing to follow her Advice; and so in less than four hours, they had both of 'em got into a Waggon, together with the Nurse, and the Child; and without being heard of the Pages, set forwards of their Journey for the Village where the Curate dwelt; all which was done by the Perswasion of this foolish Woman *Dorila*.

To defray the Charges of this Journey, *Evadne* would have given *Dorila* a Jewel to have Pawn'd, but she inform'd her, she could furnish her; for her Master, not long before, had payed her a Years Wages. *Evadne* having heard *Don Francisco* discourse, that he, and her Brother would not ride the direct Road to *Millain*, she gave order to the Waggoner to take the Common Road, the better to avoid 'em; bidding him drive leasurely, and she would reward him well for his pains.

We will now leave them on their Journey, and return to *Don Francisco* and *Don Marcellus*, of whom it is reported, they had Information upon the way, that the Duke was not in *Millain*, but *Bologna*: So leaving the Bye-Ways, they entred into the High Road, considering with themselves that the Duke must pass that way in his Return from *Bologna*: They had not been long entred into the Road, but they espyed a Party of Horse marching towards them: upon this *Don Francisco* perswaded Seignior *Marcellus* to step aside out of the Road, for if the Duke should happen to be in the Company, he would entertain him with some Discourse, before he entred into *Millain*, if he saw a fit Opportunity: *Marcellus* approved of his Advice, and told him, he would

would leave the management of it to his Care.

So soon as *Marcellus* was gone aside, *Don Francisco* slipt off the Cyprus which cover'd his Hatband, for some Reasons he had, which he afterwards declar'd: By this time the Horse drew pretty near, amongst them was a Woman upon a Brown Nag, and in a fair riding Suit with a Mask on, either for the better concealing her self, or for a Preservative from the Sun and Air. *Don Francisco* made a Halt whilst the Horse came up to him; as they drew near him, they view'd his Lively, and Spritful Deportment, his Physiognomy, the Gallantry of his Garb, and the rich lustre of his Diamond Hatband, together with the proudness of his Horse; more especially the Duke of *Millain*, who was in the Company: he no sooner espied the Hatband, but presently apprehended it must be *Don Francisco de Bazola*, who rescued him from that great danger wherein he was surprized; so entertaining the verity of it in his Thoughts, he made up to him, and said after this manner, Noble Sir, if I call you *Don Francisco*, I hope I shall commit no Mistake, for your brave Deportment, and gentle Disposition, together with that Hatband, confirms me to be in the right.

Sir,

Sir, (reply'd *Don Francisco*) you are under no Mistake, for I never was yet guilty of any dishonourable Practices, whereby the concealing of my Name was found necessary, and since my Name has receiv'd that Honour to be known by you, I hope (Sir) you will inform me of the occasion, and make me so happy that I may remain no longer ignorant of yours, but that I may pay those Respects due to your Person and Quality.

Seignior *Francisco*, (reply'd the *Duke*) I am one who stands indebted to you for my Life, and one whom your Victorious Arm so lately did protect; and had not the Gods design'd it, Death, at that time, had been my Portion: My Name is *Alphonso*, but more known by the Title of the Duke of *Millain*: The *Duke* had no sooner declared himself, but *Don Francisco*, with great Agility alighted from his Horse, the *Duke* with the same nimbleness, was as soon out of his Saddle, and took *Don Francisco* and embraced him in his Arms. Seignior *Marcellus* from a far beholding these Ceremonies, dubious whether they were Actions of Kindness, or Anger, put immediately Spurs to his Horse, but in the midst of his Career, he took him up gently by degrees, and made a Halt, seeing the *Duke*, and *Don Francisco*

Francisco Complementing each other. The *Duke* espying *Don Marcellus*, knew him at the first Sight, but had not the least Cogitation of his being so near him : he was somewhat amazed at it, and enquired of *Don Francisco*, whether he was of his Company : Yes, (said *Don Francisco*) and I will acquaint your Excellency with the occasion of it ; so desiring the *Duke* to step a little aside out of the Road, he thus proceeded :

Don Marcellus, whom your Excellency sees there, has a great Accusation against you, concerning his Sister the *Lady Evadne*, and the Relation was to this effect : That four Nights since, you convey'd her from his Kinswomans House, and have deluded, and dishonoured his Sister ; for which now he is come to demand satisfaction from you : All he expects (Sir) from you is, either by performing your Promise to her of Marriage, or to end the Dispute with your Sword ; he has desired me to accompany him, and to be an Umpire in this Affair, or else his Second, which I have freely undertaken : Now (Sir) understanding from his own Words, the occasion of the late Animosity between you, I am well assured you were the Master of this Present you pleas'd to honour me withal, and to be the Donor of ; and knowing
like-

likewise, that none could better be an Arbitrator in this Cause than my self, nor be more tender of your Excellencies Safety than I am, I was the more eager in the Prosecution of what I have undertaken : Now that (Sir) which I would desire of you is, That you would declare whether that be true which *Don Marcellus* alledges.

Dear Sir, (replyed the *Duke*) it is such an Invincible Truth, that I dare not deny it, though my Inclinations led me to it : But farther, I must speak in my own Vindication, I have neither deceiv'd the Fair *Evadne*, nor conveyed her away ; though I am not ignorant she is removed from her Kinswomans House, but whither, I remain a Stranger at this time : I do here Vow the Lady *Evadne* to be my Wife, and if I did not publickly Celebrate those Nuptials, the Reason of it was, The Dutches my Mother was desirous to Match me to the Lady *Livia*, Daughter to the Duke of *Ferrara* ; but my Mother being now more ready for Deaths Arrest, than for Lifes Protection, I can now the better perform my Duty to the last Period of her Life, and after her Death, keep that Fidelity and Constancy I ever had for dear *Evadne*.

I will instance to you some few Particulars of these grand Mistakes; the same Night you wrought my Deliverance, my Intention was to have Conducted *Evadne* safe to *Millain*; she was in that Month, which she was to bring forth that happy Issue the Gods had ordained her to be Mother of; now whether it were by reason of the Rencontre, or my own Negligence, I am dubious for when I went to her Kins-womans House, I found at the Door *Laurana* her Maid, the Supervisor of our Contracts, Jocular Meetings, and Agreements: I enquired for her Lady, she answered me, she was newly gone, but had that very Night been delivered of a Son, one of the Fairest Creatures that ever Eyes beheld; and that she had given it to my Servant *Giacomo*. *Laurana* is here with me and *Giacomo*, but my Child and *Evadne*, are both missing. I have been two days in *Bologna* in search after 'em, but by all my inquiry I can receive no satisfactory account.

Now, Sir, (reply'd *Don Francisco*) when the Lady *Evadne* and the Child shall appear, you will receive 'em both as yours, the one for your Dutcheſs, the other as your Son? Most joyfully, (reply'd the Duke) as long as the Ground receives the welcome Showres; for though I value my self as a

H Gentle.

Gentleman, yet I esteem my self more to be a Christian: The Lady *Evadne's* Vertues Merit a greater Title than I am able to dignifie her with; and should that Glorious Sun but once appear, or my Mother's Days be expired, the World shall then be certified, that if I understood what it was to be a Lover, I also knew how to finish those Vows in publick, which solemnly I made to her in Secret.

This will be joyful News to *Don Marcellus*, (said *Don Francisco*) if your Excellency will permit him to be a sharer in it, and not be held any longer in Suspence. I much resent it, (reply'd the Duke) he has remain'd unhappy so long under a *Mistake*. *Don Francisco* being infinitely well pleas'd, made Signs to *Don Marcellus* to advance towards 'em, who immediately Dismounted himself, not thinking of the good Fortune which attended him: The Duke met him with open Arms embracing him, and greeted him with the Name of dear Brother: *Marcellus* being surprized, scarce knew suddenly how to return an Answer to so loving a Salutation, and courteous a Reception: Thus while he was standing in Suspence, before he could recollect himself, *Don Francisco* applyed himself to him in this manner:

The

The Duke (*Seignior Marcellus*) has been pleased, out of his own Generosity, to declare, that his Affections for your Sister are so great, that nothing but the making of her his Wife, he hopes, will give full satisfaction; and what he avers here in private, he is ready to avouch at any time in Publick; the Duke informs me, that four Nights since, he went to fetch away the Lady *Evadne* from your Kinswomans House, to conduct her to *Millain*, and to wait for a Conjunction in the celebrating his Nuptials, which he had deferr'd upon very good Reasons which he has imparted to me; his Excellency hath likewise acquainted me with the Rencontre he had with you; and moreover, when he went for your Sister (the Lady *Evadne*) he met with *Laurana* her Woman, which is here in Company, who inform'd him, that it was not above an hour since her Lady *Evadne* had been delivered, and that she gave the Infant to a Servant of the Duke's, that being believing the Duke was there, went directly out of the House, imagining that you (*Seignior Marcellus*) had already notice of her Proceedings; however *Laurana* brought the Child to the Duke's Servant, and so she was by Mistake; *Evadne* is concerned, and you reprehend the Duke:

Now he declares, that wheresoever the Lady *Evadne* shall appear, he will receive her as his true and lawful Wife : Now Seignior *Marcellus*, what can the Duke express more, or what more, in reason, can you desire, or wish for, than only the finding out of those two Rich, and Unfortunate Pledges?

Don Marcellus throwing himself at the Duke's Feet, who hastily took him up: to whom *Marcellus* apply'd himself, Of your Dignity and Magnificence, (most Noble Sir, and dear Brother) my Sister, nor my self could never expect more from you, than what you have declared; first inequalizing her with your self; and next, in ranking me in the number of your Friends and Alliance : With that the Tears fell from their Eyes; but considering it might portend weakness to manifest their Grief, they suppress'd and wip'd 'em away.

Thus things stood, when *Don Bernardo* discover'd himself; but drawing near he made a Halt for some little time; for though he knew *Don Francisco*, and *Marcellus*, he knew not the Duke; he could not tell what to do with himself, whether he should go on or retire : At last coming up to one of the Duke's Servants, he demanded of him whether he knew that Gentleman,

tleman, which was with the other two, pointing to the Duke? He answer'd, It was the Duke of *Millain*; at which he was amaz'd, and knew now less what to do with himself than before; but *Don Francisco* put him out of this Perplexity by calling to him by his Name; thereupon *Don Bernardo* alighted, seeing they were on Foot, and approaching near the Duke, received him with much Amity, as being *Don Francisco's* Friend and Companion.

Then *Don Francisco* related to *Bernardo*, all which had pass'd between him, and the Duke; *Don Bernardo* was exceeding glad, and ask'd him, why he did not compleat the Joy and Happiness of these Gentlemen, by informing them where the Lady *Evadne*, and her Child was? The Duke and *Marcellus* hearing them speak of *Evadne* and the Child, enquir'd of them, what they discours'd of? Gentlemen, not to hold you any longer in Suspence, (reply'd *Don Bernardo*) I am willing to be an Actor in this Tragic Comedy, and to alter the Scene, by the Discovery of the Lady *Evadne*, and her Child; who are both safe at my Habitation. So they both repeated to them the whole Story, of what has been before related, which gave the Duke and *Marcellus* great Satisfaction: Then *Marcellus* embrac'd

Now he declares, that wheresoever the Lady *Evadne* shall appear, he will receive her as his true and lawful Wife : Now Seignior *Marcellus*, what can the Duke express more, or what more, in reason, can you desire, or wish for, than only the finding out of those two Rich, and Unfortunate Pledges?

Don Marcellus throwing himself at the Duke's Feet, who hastily took him up: to whom *Marcellus* apply'd himself, Of your Dignity and Magnificence, (most Noble Sir, and dear Brother) my Sister, nor my self could never expect more from you, than what you have declared; first inequalizing her with your self; and next, in ranking me in the number of your Friends and Alliance : With that the Tears fell from their Eyes; but considering it might portend weakness to manifest their Grief, they suppress'd and wip'd 'em away.

Thus things stood, when *Don Bernardo* discover'd himself; but drawing near he made a Halt for some little time; for though he knew *Don Francisco*, and *Marcellus*, he knew not the Duke; he could not tell what to do with himself, whether he should go on or retire : At last coming up to one of the Duke's Servants, he demanded of him whether he knew that Gentleman,

tleman, which was with the other two, pointing to the Duke? He answer'd, It was the Duke of *Millain*; at which he was amaz'd, and knew now less what to do with himself than before; but *Don Francisco* put him out of this Perplexity by calling to him by his Name; thereupon *Don Bernardo* alighted, seeing they were on Foot, and approaching near the Duke, received him with much Amity, as being *Don Francisco's* Friend and Companion.

Then *Don Francisco* related to *Bernardo*, all which had pass'd between him, and the Duke; *Don Bernardo* was exceeding glad, and ask'd him, why he did not compleat the Joy and Happiness of these Gentlemen, by informing them where the Lady *Evadne*, and her Child was? The Duke and *Marcellus* hearing them speak of *Evadne* and the Child, enquir'd of them, what they discours'd of? Gentlemen, not to hold you any longer in Suspence, (reply'd *Don Bernardo*) I am willing to be an Actor in this Tragick Comedy, and to alter the Scene, by the Discovery of the Lady *Evadne*, and her Child, who are both safe at my Habitation. So they both repeated to them the whole Story, of what has been before related, which gave the Duke and *Marcellus* great Satisfaction: Then *Marcellus* imbraced

Francisco, and the *Duke*, *Don Bernardo*, returning then thanks for this happy News, and relinquishing them of their Feats.

'Then calling to *Laurana*, *Evadne's* waiting Woman, that deliver'd the Child to *Don Francisco*; she having taken notice of *Marcellus*, stood trembling and quaking for fear; they ask'd her if she knew the Person, to whom she delivered the Infant? She reply'd no; but ask'd him if he were *Giacomo*? And he answer'd, yes, and upon that belief she gave it him: that's very true, said *Don Francisco*, and immediately you shut the Door, bidding me have a care of it, and see it safe kept, and return quickly back: I confess you are in the right, answered *Laurana*, shedding many a Tear; but the *Duke* bid her refrain, adding that now there ~~was~~ no Occasion of Mourning but Rejoycing; and since Fortune has been so favourable to us, I will not as yet enter *Millain*, but return back to *Bologna*; for all these seeming Contentments are but as a shadow, till the seeing of *Evadne*, make them prove real; so unanimously they consented and presently turn'd about for *Bologna*.

Don

Don Bernardo rode away before, to prepare *Evadne*, that she might not be surpriz'd, with any suddain Passion upon the unexpected coming of the *Duke*, and her Brother; but not finding of her he appear'd the most dejected Man in the World; though when he saw that *Dorila* was wanting, he imagined that by her Diligence and Perswasions *Evadne* was missing. The Pages inform'd him that *Dorila*, was wanting the same day his Master *Don Francisco*, and he went; but as for the Lady he enquir'd for, they never saw her. *Don Bernardo*, was in great Distraction at this unexpected Accident, fearing the *Duke* would take them for great Lyars and Impostures; or perhaps, imagine some great abuse, which might redound much to the prejudice of their Honour, and *Evadne's* Reputation.

Whilst he was thus pondering and casting these doubts and scruples with himself, entered the *Duke*, *Don Francisco* and *Marcellus*, by Streets and Lanes unfrequented, having left the rest of their Equipage without the City, they at length came to *Don Francisco's* House, and found *Don Bernardo* sitting in a Chair, in a posture altogether Melancholy, and Pale as Death; what, are you not well? (cry'd *Don Francisco*).

where's *Evadne*? How can it be expected I should be otherwise, (reply'd *Don Bernardo*) since *Evadne* is absent? Who with *Dorila* that we left to attend her, went away the same day which we did. Nor was *Francisco* the less surpriz'd, when he heard this unfortunate News.

In a word, they were all extremely troubled, full of Cares and various Imaginations, not knowing what to think; but whilst they were thus in their Distraction, there came a Page to *Don Bernardo*, who whispering him in the Ear acquainted him that *Diego*, *Don Francisco's* Page, had conceal'd a very handsome Woman in his Chamber, ever since his Master went, and did believe her Name was *Evadne*, for he had heard him call her so. *Bernardo's* trouble was now renewed afresh, and rather desired that *Evadne* should not be found at all, (knowing that she was one whom the Page had hid) than to find her in such a place; yet without being perceived, he went privately to the Pages Chamber, where finding the Door lock'd, and him gone out, with a low Voice he called, Lady *Evadne*, open the Door, and receive your Brother, and the Duke your Husband; to which, he heard a Voice from within answer, You need not fear me, I am not
so

so ugly; but that Dukes and Earls may come after me; but this it is to have to do with lousie Pages. I deserve indeed no better a reward. By which Words, *Don Bernardo* saw he was mistaken, and that she was not the Lady *Evadne*.

DO While this pass'd, came *Diego* the Page, who posted presently to his Chamber, and finding *Don Bernardo* at the Door, he commanded the Key from him to open it, then falling down upon his Knees, he beseech'd him, if his Master had not heard of it, that he would be pleas'd not to acquaint him with it; for he did confess he had committed a fault, and was sorry for what he had done; that she had been there three Nights, and he would now instantly put her out of the House. And what is this Woman's Name? said *Don Bernardo*, Sir, (reply'd the Page) it is *Evadne*.

The Page who made this discovery (and who envy'd, *Diego*) came down, where the Duke, *Don Francisco*, and *Marcellus*, were talking of *Diego*. That Page yonder, said he, has kept up *Evadne* as close, like a Hawk in a Mew, and could have wished his Master had not come home so soon, that he might have taken his Pleasure of her

her three or four days longer. *Marcellus* over-hearing this, ask'd him, what is that you say my Friend? Where is *Evadne*? Above (answered the Page.) The Duke had no sooner heard this, but like Lightning he flew up Stairs to see *Evadne*; so happening to go to the Chamber, where *Don Bernardo* was, he cry'd out; where art thou *Evadne*? Where is my Dearest Life? She that was wrapt up in the Sheet, with a maundring Voice, said here's *Evadne*, there's not so much harm done as you think there is, nor such a strange thing for a Woman to Lye with a Page, that you need make such a wonder of it. *Marcellus* being there, In a great fury, took the Sheet by one of the Corners and pull'd it off; discovering a Woman of no ill Aspect; who being abash'd clapt her Hands before her Face, and made hast to reach her Cloths to her, which served her instead of a Pillow. They saw she was a common Hackney of the Town: then the Duke demanded whether her Name was *Evadne*; she made him answer it was, and that she had Relations of very good Account, and Credit in the City, that would scorn to do what she did.

The

The Duke was so vext, that he almost imagin'd the Spaniards had put a trick upon him; but that he would not give way to the entertaining of so ill a Suspicion, he turn'd his back, and without speaking one word, *Marcellus* following him, they got to their Horses, and went their way, leaving *Don Francisco* and *Don Bernardo* more vext than they; then they determin'd with all speed to use their utmost Endeavours in the finding out *Evadne*, and in satisfying the Duke of their Integrity. They put *Diego* out of the House, and dismiss'd him their Service, as a bold impudent Fellow, and turned that shameless Strumpet out of Doors.

They went to *Marcellus's* House, to enquire after the Duke, who told them, that he made no stay at all but went directly for *Milain*, leaving order with him to make dilligent search for his Sister; moreover, telling them the Duke was very well satisfyed of their Fidelity, and that the Duke and himself did impute it only to *Evadne's* Timorousness; but they did hope in process of time she would be heard of.

Thus they comforted themselves, not being willing to make enquiry after her by publick Proclamation, but by some private means,

means, in regard her being mist was known to none but her Kinswoman, and amongst those that did not know the Duke's Resolution, his Sister might run the hazard of her Reputation.

The Duke being now upon his return to *Millain*, as good Fortune would have it, or rather Divine Providence had so order'd it, that he came to that Village, which the Curate belong'd to, where was *Evadne*, the Child, the Nurse, and *Dorila*, the Plotter and Contriver of their Escape; they had given him an account of all the Proceedings, and desired his Advice and Counsel, what they were best to do.

The Curate was a great Lover of the Duke, to whose House fitted and accommodated like that of a Clergy-Man, well to pass, the Duke us'd oftentimes to visit from *Millain*, and from thence went a Hunting. For he took great delight in the Curates Gravity and Discourse, so that the Curate was not troubled to see him there; but to see him so Melancholy, presently perceiving that his mind was over-whelm'd with some extraordinary Passion. *Evadne* hearing the Duke was there, extremely resented his coming, being ignorant of the Occasion; thus being perplexed, and in a great Agony, fain she would have spoke
with

with the *Curate*, but he being busie entertaining the Duke, he had not the leisure to Discourse with her.

At length, said the Duke to him, Father, I must confess my Spirit is very much oppressed with Grief, and I do not intend this day for *Millain*, but will be your Guest; therefore, 'pray send one of your Servants to bid those which came with me, to make hast to *Millain*, this being done, there was immediately great Preparations made to entertain him. *Evadne* waiting for an opportunity to speak with the *Curate*, at last she sent for him, and holding him fast by both hands; O Father! said she, 'pray what is the Duke's Occasion of coming hither? Inform me, I beseech you, and if you can by any means, raise some Discourse concerning me, by that means you may discover whether his Intentions be real or false; this I intreat you to do according to your own Sagacity.

The *Curate* replied, the Duke was very sad and pensive, but had not as yet declared the Cause: My advice to you is this, That you presently dressed up the Child, as rich as you can, and adorn him with your own Jewels, and those which the Duke gave you, then leave the rest to me; *Evadne* thank'd him, and promised she would

would go immediately about what he had so well advised her. The Curate in the mean time, went forth, to entertain the Duke till Dinner was made ready, and as he was discoursing of divers things, the Curate humbly implor'd the Duke's Pardon, for taking that boldness upon him as to enquire into the Reason of his being so Melancholy; and with all, excusing it, that he had not assum'd that Liberty to himself, had it not been so apparent to be seen.

Father, (said the Duke) it is evidently to be seen that inward Passion will demonstrate it self in the Physiognomy of either Man or Woman, and the greatest of my Grief is that I cannot as yet Communicate it to any that can ease me of my pain; why (my Lord reply'd the Curate) were you in a Capacity to be merrily disposed, I could present to your Eyes one of the delightfulest Objects in the whole Universe, which is left to my Care and Conduct. That Man, (reply'd the Duke) would be very much void of Reason, who could have a Remedy apply'd to his Malady, and should refuse the taking of it; Therefore (Father) pray shew me this piece of Curiosity you so much applaud, for I believe it must be some extraordinary Rarity.

The

The Curate presently went to the Lady *Evadne's* Chamber, to fetch the Child, who was just made an end of dressing, very finely adorn'd indeed, with her Jewels, and looked very sweetly; so taking the Child in his Arms, he went to the *Duke*, beseeching him to look upon it: The *Duke* viewing of it, said, indeed it was a fine Child, and took it out of the Curates Arms and kissed it; then looking stedfastly on the Jewels, he knew they were the same he gave to *Evadne*; being full of Admiration, he ask'd the *Curate* whose pretty Child it was? and told him it was as fine as a young Prince.

My Lord, (replied the Curate) indeed I don't very well know, but some Months since, a Gentleman of *Bologna* brought it to me, and charged me to be very careful of him, and breed him up, according to his Quality, for he was a Noble Man's Child; there came likewise a Nurse to attend him, of whom I have enquired several times, if she knew the Parents, but she told me, she could not satisfie me in that particular; but if the Mother be as Fair and as Beautiful as the Nurse, she must needs be the flower of all *Italy*; now I have seen the Child (reply'd the Duke) I hope, Father, I may have that Liberty,
of

of seeing the Nurse: Yes, (reply'd the Curate) your Highness may command it, I will immediately attend you to the Chamber where she is, for if the Child hath thus transported you which is but a Copy, what will the Mother not do which is the Original? The Curate would have eased the Duke's Arms, and have taken the Child from him, but he would not part with it till he had given it many Kisses. In the meanwhile, the Curate stept a little before, to inform *Evadne* the Duke was coming to visit her, and desired she would be ready to receive him.

Evadne being surpriz'd with a suddain Passion, that there arose such fresh Colours in her Face, which were mighty becoming, and rather prov'd a Friend then an Enemy to her Beauty. The Duke was intent, and astonish'd at the sight of her, and *Evadne* throwing her self immediately at his Feet, would have kiss'd them; but the Duke, without saying one Word, gave the Child to the Curate, and went with great hast out of the House; which *Evadne* seeing, she turned about to the Curate, and being much amazed at this suddain Motion;

Alas,

Alas, Sir, (said she) has the sight of me so fear'd the Duke, that he cannot endure me in his presence? Am I grown so Odious, and deform'd in his Eyes, that he Loves and Abhors me? Hath he forgot those Obligations wherein he stands bound to me? Would he not vouchsafe to speak so much as one Word to me? Was his Son so Burthensom to him? Was he so weary with holding him, that he so quickly rather threw, than put him out of his Arms? To all which complaint, the Count reply'd not a word, but wondring at the suddain flight of the Duke, for it seem'd to him to be rather a flight than any thing else.

But all this haste was made to no other end, save only to call *Giacomo*, whom he commanded to make all the haste he could to bring, and bid *Marcellus*, and the two Gentlemen, *Don Francisco*, and the Countess, with all speed, and laying all Enquiries aside, to meet him at the Countess's House. *Giacomo* was not slothful, but presently put his Lord's Command in Execution; who being thus dispatch'd, the Countess presently return'd back again where *Francesca* was, but found her weeping, upon which, the Duke took her in his Arms, and adding Tears to Tears, exchange'd a

Thousand Kisses on her Rosie Lips, but their Tongues were locked up in an Amorous Silence.

The Nurse and *Dorila* observing these Amorous Passages, leapt for Joy, and were transported with the Pleasure of seeing it. The Curate also bestowed a Thousand Kisses on the pretty Infant, which he had in his Arms. By this time the Curate's Dinner disturbed their close Imbracements, but being at Dinner, *Evadne* gave the Duke an account of all that had happened to her, since she left her Kinswoman's House, and that *Donila* a Servant of *Don Francisco's* perswaded her to come hither, and that she had serv'd her very faithfully, and with a great deal of Respect. The Duke likewise recounted to her all that which had befallen him to this present.

Some three days after came *Marcellus*, *Don Francisco*, and *Don Bernardo*, who were in great hopes the Duke had heard of the Lady *Evadne*. But *Giacomo* who was purposely sent for them, could not any ways acquaint them with the Business: the Duke went forth to receive them in a large Room, adjoining near to that where *Evadne* was: he did not shew a Countenance of any Satisfaction at all, which made these new Guests to remain still sad and pensive, look-

looking dejectedly upon one another; however, he desired them to sit down: So seating himself by them, he directed his Discourse to Marcellus. You know well, Seignior Marcellus, that never did delude your Sister, the fair Phillis, you are not unacquainted of the Diligence I have used, for the finding of my Son, in order to the happy Union of which, according to those Vows I have made to her, neither are you a Stranger that she appears not, and my word is as good as to be Eternal. I am in my fourth Year, and not so well grounded and experienced in the World, as to avoid those Delights and Pleasures, which offer themselves very often to me; the self same Passion which made me promise to be your Husband, led me likewise, before I gave my Word unto her, to promise Margaret a Country Girl, a Farmers Daughters in this Village, whom I thought to have put off, that I might have applyed my self to Endeavours Worth, though not to such as which my Conscience dictated to me, which was no small Manifestation of my Love; but since no Man Marries a Wife which is Invisible, and that it does not stand with reason, that a Man should seek after a Wife that forsakes him,

there is no reason I should stay for *Evadne* that flies me: I say this (Sir) that you may see how willing, and ready I am to give you satisfaction. And thus I have demonstrated to you, that I never did, or had any intention of doing you the least Injustice, or Injury: And therefore, I would crave that leave of you, that I may comply with my first Promise to Marry this Country Maid which is here in the House.

Whilst the Duke was making this Speech *Marcellus's* Countenance chang'd very often, and was very restless; which were evident Proofs and Tokens of Passion, taking possession of his Senses; *Don Francisco*, and *Don Bernardo* were much disturbed: The Duke then reading their Minds in their Faces, he desir'd *Marcellus* to be patient, and enjoyn'd him not to return him one word in answer; for (continues he) I mean to shew you the beauty of the Person, whom I intend to make my Wife, not doubting, but it will oblige you to gratifie my desires, for it is such, and so powerfully Charming, that it will easily excuse me for far greater Errours: When the Duke was risen, and gone from 'em they all consulted together, and *Don Francisco*

Marcellus, he thought the Duke's Request was very unreasonable, and that he ought to give some reasonable time for the finding out of the Lady *Evadne*.

While they were thus debating this business, from out of a Room just before 'em, came *Evadne*, led betwixt the Curate and the Duke; after them followed *Laurana*, *Evadne's* Woman (the Duke having sent for her to *Millain*); then the two Nurses, and *Donila*, which belong'd to the two *Donis* Gentlemen: When *Marcellus* saw his Sister, and had taken a full view of her, and knew that it was she, stumbling for joy, he went and threw himself at the Duke's Feet, who took him up, and placed him in his Sisters Arms, who imbrac'd him with all possible Demonstrations of Joy. Then *Don Francisco*, and *Don Bernardo*, told the Duke, that he had put upon 'em the most discreet, and most pleasing deceit in the World.

The Duke took the Child which *Laurana* brought in her Arms, and giving it to *Marcellus*, Here Brother (said he) take your Nephew, and my Son, and now whether you will give me leave to Marry this Country Lass, who is

the first that ever I plighted my Faith to. It were endless to repeat *Marcellus's* Reply, what *Don Francisco* ask'd him, what *Don Bernardo* thought, the rejoycing of the Curate, the Joy of *Laurana*, the Content of the Adviser, *Dorila*, the Admiration of *Giacomo*, and the Nurse: And in a Word, the general content of all.

The Curate forthwith Married them; *Don Francisco* was the Father that gave her; and amongst them all it was agreed upon, That those Nuptials should be concealed, till they had received the News of the Dutchess, his Mother's Death, who was now almost spent, by reason of her long Sickness, that in the mean time *Evadne* should return with her Brother to *Bologna*.

But the Dutchess shortly after dyed, and *Evadne* entred into *Millain* rejoycing the City with her Fair Presence; Mourning Weeds were turn'd into Gay and Rich Cloths; the Nurse, and *Dorila* were liberally rewarded; *Laurana* was Married to *Giacomo*; *Don Francisco*, and *Don Bernardo*, were wonderfully well contented, that it had been their good Fortune to have been any way serviceable to the Duke, who offer'd them two of his near Kinswomen

men to be their Wives, with exceeding Rich Dowries. But they told him, the Gentlemen of *Peru*, for the most part, Married in their own Country; and that not out of any scorn, but to comply with the commendable Custom, and the Will of their Parents, who had already provided Wives for them, they could not except of this his most Noble Offer.

The Duke admitting of their Excuse, however sought all Generous Opportunities to send them Presents to *Bologna*, which were very considerable. The Dutchess gave also one of her Jewels to *Don Francisco* and another to *Don Bernardo*; who when they saw all their Modest Refusals would not serve, they with unwilling willingness received them. *Evadne* was visited very often at *Millain*, by most of the great Ladies; among whom her Transcendent Beauty, and Incomparable Vertues, made her shine with as much Superiority, as a Star of a greater Magnitude exceeds in Splendour the lesser Luminaries; and the Duke grew every day more Enamour'd of her than ever.

Sometime after, *Don Francisco*, and *Don Bernardo*, return'd into their own Country, where they were Married to Rich, Noble,

Noble, and Beautiful Young Ladies ; continuing still their Correspondence with the Duke, and the Dutches, and with Seignior Marcellus Barbarino, with all the Love and Amity in the World,

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

THE

Army in the Field.
 Marcellus Barbarino, with all the Love and
 Obedience, and the Duties, and with the
 Noble, and Beautiful Young Ladies; con-

Generous Lover

A

NOVEL.

OH the Lamentable Ruines of Un-
 happy *Nicosia*! The Blood of thy
 Valiant and Unfortunate Defen-
 ders, being yet scarce dry! if
 (as thou art insensible of it) thou hadst any
 feeling at all in this Disconsolate Condition
 wherein now we are, we might joyntly be-
 wail our Misfortunes: It would help to
 ease me in some manner of my torment, to
 find a Companion of my Sorrows, and
 make that burthen of my grief the lighter,
 which now I find so heavy (I had almost
 said insupportable) for me to bear: But
 however, there is some hope yet left thee,
 that these thy strong Towers demolished,
 and

and laid level with the ground; thou mayest one day behold them, (though not in so just a posture of defence, as when they were overthrown) erected to their former Beauty and Strength.

But I, of all Unfortunate, (the most unfortunate of Men) What Felicity can I hope for in that stretched Consternation wherein I now find my self? If I should return to the same Station wherein I was, before I fell into this, such is my Misfortune, that when I was free, and at liberty, I knew not what Happiness was, and now in this my Captivity I neither have, nor can hope for it.

These Words did a Christian Captive utter, looking with a sad, and mournful Countenance from the rising of a Hill upon the ruined Walls of lately lost *Nicosia*. Thus did he discourse with them, and compared his Miseries with theirs, as if they had been able to understand him; The common, and proper condition of afflicted Persons, who being violently carried away with their own Imaginary Conceptions, both do, and say those things which are beyond all Reason, without either Study or Consideration.

Whilst

While he was thus Complaining to himself, from a Pavillion pitch'd in the Field, not much distance from him, came out a Sprightly Turk, a Young Man of a Noble Presence, and with an Ingenious Aspect, accompanied with Briskness and Courage, inferable to his Physiognomy; who drawing near to the Christian, without much Ceremony, yet in a kind, and civil manner; Sir, (said he) I durst lay a Wager with you, that those Pensive Thoughts, which I read in your Face, have brought you hither: You read aright, answered *Casparino*, (that was the Captives Name) such Thoughts as those have brought me hither indeed: But what does it advantage me? Since where-ever I go, I am so far from procuring any Peace, that I cannot obtain so much as a Truce, or the least Cessation of my Sorrows: Nay, rather these Ruines, which from hence discover themselves, have rather increas'd my Pains. Those of *Nicassia* you mean, (reply'd the Turk) I mean none else, (answer'd *Casparino*) but those which here offer themselves to my View. You have great occasion (quoth the Turk) to weep, if you entertain your Thoughts with such Contemplations; for they who but two years since have seen this famous and rich Island of *Cyprus*

124 *The Generous Lover.* Nov. III.

pus in its Prosperity, and peaceable State; the Inhabitants thereof enjoying all that Humane Happiness and Felicity, Heaven could afford, or themselves desire, and now should behold them banish'd from it, or made miserable Slaves within it, could not have such Impenetrable Hearts, as to forbear bewailing their Calamity.

But let us leave discoursing of things, that are not to be remedy'd, and come to your own Bosom Sorrows, for I long to know if they be such as you express them to be; and therefore, I earnestly entreat, nay Conjure thee, by that which thou owest for those Services I have done thee, the good Will I bear, and the Love I have shewn thee, seeing we are both of the same Country, and bred up in our Childhood together, to deal freely with me, and acquaint me with the cause of this thy Melancholy: For though Captivity alone be sufficient to afflict the stoutest Heart in the World, yet I imagine the Current of your Disasters has a deeper Bottom.

For Generous Minds (such as thine is) do not use to render up themselves to common Misfortunes, in such a measure, as to make shew of Sorrows so extraordinary; which I am the rather induced to believe, because I know that Poverty is not so
much

much your Master, but you may pay your Ransom upon reasonable terms; nor are you immur'd up in the Towers of the Black Sea as a Prisoner of Note, or Captive of Consideration, who late, or never obtains his desired Liberty: For which Reason your ill Fortune has not yet depriv'd your hopes of seeing your self set free; and therefore when I see thee so much overcharg'd with Grief, and making such doleful Lamentations, I am forc'd to believe, that the pain proceeds from some other cause than thy lost Liberty, which I intreat thee to discover to me, upon the faithful promise of all the assistance I am able to afford thee. Who knows, but that Fortune in her Wheeling hath brought this about, that I should, *Proteus* like, be clad in this Habit, which I so much abhor, to the end I may be serviceable to thee?

Thou knowest already, *Gasparino*, that my Master is a chief Minister in this City; thou likewise knows the great Sway which he bears here, and how much Interest I have in him; together with this, thou art not ignorant of the fervent desire I have not to die in this State, which I thus seem to profess; for my own Heart can testifie, if ever I should come to the Test, I am resolv'd openly to confess the Christian Faith,
from

from which my few Years, and less understanding, separated me : From all this that has been said, I leave it to thy self to infer the Conclusion, and to consider seriously, whether my proffered Friendship may be useful to thee.

Now, that I may know what Remedy thy Misfortune requires, it is requisite thou should'st recount it to me ; the Relation of it being as necessary for me to hear, as the Rich Patient's mind to his Physician : And I assure thee by all the Fidelity that belongs to Friendship, to secure it in the deepest Silence. To all these Words of his, *Gasparino* gave an attentive Ear ; though his Tongue was silent, and seeing himself obliged by those kind Expressions, and his own necessity, return'd this Answer :

My dearest *Pyrrhus*, said he, (for so was this *Turk* called) if as thou hast conjectur'd aright at my Misfortunes, thou could'st prescribe as well the Remedy, I should think my self happy in my lost Liberty, and would not change my State for the greatest Felicity imaginable ; but I understand well the Cause is such, that all the World may take notice whence it proceeds ; though that Man is not to be found who dares undertake to find out a Remedy, much less to
give

give me the least Relief; and that thou mayst be inform'd of the verity of my Distource, I will relate as briefly as I can, the Cause of my Woes; but before I enter into this confused Labyrinth of my Miseries, I would first desire thee to acquaint me with the Cause, why *Bazon Bashaw* hath pitch'd here in this Field these Tents and Pavillions, before he makes his entry into *Nicosia*, being deputed to be *Vice-roy* or *Bashaw* there.

I will, (said *Pyrrhus*,) answer your demands in a few Words; and therefore you must know, that it is a Custom among the *Turks*, that they who come to be *Vice-roys* of some *Province*, do not immediately enter into the City where their Predecessor resides, till he departs out of it, and leaves the Place free to his Successor. For when the new *Bashaw* has made his Entrance, the old one stays without in the Field, expecting what Accusations shall come against him, and what Misdemeanours (during his Government) they shall lay to his Charge; which being alledged and proved, are recorded, and a note taken of them; now the other being settled in his Residence, he gives to him that leaves his Charge, a Scrole of Parchment seal'd up very close, and therewith he presents himself at the Gate
of

of the *Grand Seignior*; which being seen and perused by the *Visier Bashaw*, and by those other inferior *Bashaws*, they either reward or punish him according to the Relation that is made of his Behaviour. For this Reason, thy Master *Bazon Bashaw* has remained in this Field four days, but he of *Nicosia* is not as yet come forth, having been very sick; but being now upon the mending hand, he will without fail come forth, either to day or to morrow at the farthest, and is to lodge in certain Tents which are pitched behind this rising Hill, which as yet thou hast not seen, and thy Master is forthwith to enter the City. Thus much to your first Question; now in the Prosecution of my promised Relation.

But let me first ask you, whether you know in our Town of *Trepana* a Virgin, to whom Fame hath given the repute of being the fairest in all *Sicily*; in whose praise, the most transcendent Wits have expressed themselves, and of whom the most Judicious have concluded, that she was the perfectest Pattern of Beauty, that the past Age had, the present has, and that which is to come, can hope to have. Nature indeed had bestowed on the whole composure, every thing so perfect, that envy it self could not tax her in any one particular.

And

And it is possible (Pyrrhus) that all this while thou hast not told me, yet who the Name? I verily believe, either thou dost not lend an Ear to me all this while, or when thou wast in *Trepana* thou wert senseless. *Pyrrhus* replied, That if the whom he had set forth, with such incomparable Beauty, were not *Graciana* the Daughter of *Pisana Sorecos*, he knew not who she could be, for that she alone had all that fame to attend her he had spoke

'Tis she, *Pyrrhus*, (reply'd *Gasparino*) 'tis she (my dearest Friend) who is the principal cause of all my Felicity, and Misfortune, 'Tis she, and not my lost Liberty, for whom my Eyes have shed so many numberless Tears. 'Tis she, for whom my Heart is ready to burst with continual sighing. 'Tis she, for whom my Complaints weary the Gods by my Invocation, and the Ears of those which are my Auditors. 'Tis she, for whom thou look'st me to be Distracted, or at least, for a man of low Esteem, and less Courage. 'Tis *Graciana*, to me a Tygres, but to another, Amiable, and Courteous: She it is that keeps me in this Wretched, and Miserable Estate.

K

For

For you must understand, that from my Minor Years, or at least, ever since I gave place to Reason, I not only Lov'd but did Adore her, and kneel'd to her Devotion as to a Deity; her Parents knew my Addresses were design'd to a Vertuous Intent; for many a time have they acquainted *Graciana* with that Ardent Love, and Affection I bare to her, and have often importun'd her to grant me a kind Acceptation.

But she who had placed her Eyes on *Hippolito* the Son of *Moronio de Corisca*, (whom you know very well, a Young Spark, Neat and Spruce, Lilly-white Hands, and Curled Locks, a Charming Tongue, and Amorous Expressions, composed of *Civet*, *Musk*, and *Amber Grease*, Gay Cloths, and a Pleasant Deportment) would not so much bestow one Glance of her Eyes on me, who had not altogether so pleasant a Countenance as *Hippolito*; nor vouchsafe to entertain with the least Grain of Gratitude my best Endeavours to please her, my many and continual Services, but still requited them with Disdain and Hatred; and to such Extreams did the Excess of my Love bring me, that I should have rendred my self happy, had her Disdains, and Cruelties put a Period to my Life, that I might not have

have been Witness of her conferring such open, though truly modest Favours upon *Hippolito*. Consider now, being thus tormented with Disdain and Hatred, and almost mad with Rage, and Jealousie, in what a miserable case my Soul was, while two such Mortal Plagues were reigning there! *Graciana's* Parents concealed those Favours she bestowed on *Hippolito*; thinking that he, attracted by her most Exquisite, and Incomparable Beauty, (which indeed was matchless) would propose a Contract, and so in him acquire her a Richer Husband, and perhaps he might be so: But I dare be so presumptuous to declare, (without any Ostentation) that my Birth, and Quality is no ways inferior to his; and for his mind, it cannot be nobler furnish'd than mine; neither can his Valour, if once called in question, 'gain the Victory: But that indeed which over-balance'd me, was *Graciana's* Favour, and her Parents promoting of the business, which only made the Scales uneven, by their inclining to *Hippolito*.

Now it so happened, that persisting in the pursuit of my Pretentions, I had intelligence, that one day in the Month of May, last past; *Graciana*, her Parents, and *Hippolito*, accompanied with their Kindred,

Friends, and Servants, to make merry in *Moronio's* Garden, near adjoyning to the Sea, towards the Salt Pits. I know the place well, (said *Pyrrihus*) go on *Gasparino*, I was more than four days in one, but I could have wish'd I had not been there four Minutes. I knew that, (reply'd *Gasparino*) and at that very moment that I understood it, my Soul was possess'd with such a Fury, such a Hell of Jealousies, that it bereaved me of my Senses ; as you may perceive by my following Relation.

I hasted to the Garden, where I was inform'd they were, I found most of the Company very pleasant, and *Hippolito*, and *Graciana* sitting under a Wall-Nut Tree, at some distance from the rest: How pleasant an Object I was to 'em, I am yet to learn; but the sight of her wrought so upon me, that I stood like a Statue without either Sence, or Motion ; but I continued not long in that Ecstasie, before my Anger roused my Passion, and Rage gave Motion to my Hands and Tongue: I confess, my Hands at present were bound by the respect which was due to that fair Face, which I had in view, but my Tongue breaking Silence, I utter'd all that a Rejected Lover, or Passion could invent.

But

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 133

But all I did say, could not move *Hippolito* to displace himself, but sat looking on me as one amaz'd, not offering once to rise; yet my Voice was so loud, and my Expressions so sharp, as occasioned those which were walking in the Garden to draw near; who hearing the revengeful Language I gave my Rival, came in to his assistance; and then all Drawing upon me, there began a most furious Combat between us: I valued not their number, but encountred them with such an Undaunted Courage, that I Wounded seven or eight, and put *Hippolito* to his Flight; at the same time *Graciana* affrighted at this Engagement, fell into a Swoon, which, as it reinforc'd my Courage, so it enrag'd my Enemies the more to Revenge, which it had been impossible for me to escape, had not Fortune provided a Remedy worse than the Disease; for on a suddain there rush'd into the Garden a great number of *Turks*, Pirates of *Viserta*, who with two Gallies, had put into a little Creek of the Sea, between two Rocks hard by the Shore, where they Land- ed, without being heard, or seen by the Sentinels of the Watch-Towers, or discovered by those Scouts, whose daily office it was to scour the Coasts, and see that all was clear. When my Antagonists espy'd 'em,

K 3

leaving

leaving me alone, they swiftly ran away, and shifted so well for themselves, that they got safe out of their danger, so that of all the whole Company, the *Turks* took no more Captives, but only three Persons besides my Self and *Graciana*, who lay there still in a swoon. I defended my Self and *Graciana*, as long as strength would permit me, till at length being wounded in four places, and having killed four upon the place, I was constrain'd, as the stoutest Heart must to his Fortune yield.

The *Turks* with their accustomed Diligence, having got as much as they could, though not very well pleased with the Success, made hast to imbarque themselves, and presently put out to Sea, so that what with their Sails, and help of their Oars, in a short space they recovered *Fabiana*; where they muster'd their Men, and finding they had lost four of their best Souldiers, *Levant-men* (as they call them) they were the more willing to take their revenge of me; and therefore the *Admiral* of the Captain-Galley commanded them to hang me up at the Main-yard's Arm. *Graciana* beholding the speedy Preparations for my Death, gave the Captain of the Galley to understand that I was a Person of Quality; and

II. *Nov. III. The Generous Lover. 135*
and that if he did not spare my Life, he
would certainly lose a considerable ran-
som, and therefore advised him to tack a-
bout again for *Trepana*, whence his ransom
money would soon be brought him aboard.
This was the first and the last Kindness
which *Graciana* shew'd me, and all for my
greater Injury. The *Turks* hearing what
Graciana had reported, easily believed her;
and this their hope of profit turned the
Course of their Malice. The next Morn-
ing, hanging out a flag of Peace, they an-
chor'd before *Trepana*; as for the Night
before, how I imployed it, you may better
conceive than I express; not so much for
the care of my Wounds, but to think on
the danger wherein my cruel Enemy was
amongst these *Barbarous* People. Being come
now well to the City, one of the Gallies
entered the Haven, the other stood off. All
the Citizens flock'd to the Sea side, and a-
mongst the rest was *Hippolito*, who stood
far off observing what pass'd in the Galley;
whilst my Steward was treating with the
Turks; but I had given him order not to
treat about my Liberty, but of *Graciana's*
and for her freedom to offer all I was worth,
either in Lands, Goods, or Chattels; com-
manding him moreover to go on Shore, and
acquaint *Graciana's* Parents, that they should

leave it to him to treat about their Daughter's Liberty.

The chief Captain who was a *Grecian*, but a *Renegado*, demanded for *Graciana*, six thousand Crowns, and for my self four thousand, declaring withal, he would not sell the one without the other. The setting so great a price, (as I understood afterwards) was, he was smitten with the Beauty of *Graciana*, and was therefore unwilling she should be redeemed. *Graciana's* Parents offer'd him nothing on their part, relying on the promise my Steward had made them, by my order; neither did *Hippolito*, make any Propositions towards her ransom. And so after many demands and Capitulations, my Steward concluded the Business, giving for *Graciana* five thousand Crowns, and for my self three thousand; the Captain accepted this offer, forced thereunto by the Perswasions of his Companion, and all the rest of his Souldiers; but because my Steward had not so much Money in cash, he desired only three days time, intending to sell so much of my Goods, till he had made up the summ. *Rozak*, (so was the Captain call'd) was glad of this, thinking in the mean while, to find some Occasion to break off the Bargain, and so sail'd back again to *Fabiana*, with a promise

promise to return at the end of three days, and to receive his Money according to Agreement. But it so unfortunately fell out at the same time the *Turks* discovered, from the main Top-Mast, six *Italian* Gallies, and guess'd them, (as it was true) to be either of *Malta* or *Sicily*; so that the Captains immediately hoylting Sail, and turning their Prowes towards *Barbary*; in less than two hours lost the sight of those Gallies, and by the help of approaching Night, secured themselves from the danger that threatened them.

Now I leave it to your good Consideration (Friend *Pyrrhus*) how much my mind was troubled in this Voyage, finding it to fall out so cross and contrary to that which I expected; and much more, when the next day the two Gallies reaching the Island of *Pantanalea* on the South part, the *Turks* went to get Wood, and fresh Victuals; but most of all, when I saw both the Captains Land, and share between them all those prizes they had taken, which was to me a lingring Death: *Rozak*, gave to *Ledolfo*, (for so was the other Captain call'd) six *Christians*, four for the Oar, and two very Beautiful Boys, both Born in *Corso*, together with my self, that he might have *Graciana* for his own: 'Tis true

true I could not understand what they said, though I was not Ignorant what they did; neither had I known then the manner of their sharings, if *Ledabo* had not come to me and told me in *Italian*; Christian thou art now mine, (as my Captive) rated at two thousand Crowns; if thou wilt have thy Liberty, thou must give me four thousand, or resolve here to end thy days. I then demanded of him whether the Christian Lady, were his? He told me, No, but that *Rozak* kept her for his own use, with Intention to make her turn *Moore*, and then marry her. Whereupon I promised him if he would bring the Business so about that the *Christian Lady* might become his Captive, I would give him ten thousand Crowns in good Gold for her ransom. He reply'd, it was impossible, but he would acquaint *Rozak*, with the great Sum which I offer'd for her Freedom; perhaps, said he, considering the profit he will reap by it, he may alter his purpose, and accept of the ransom. He did so, and then presently commanded all those of his own Galley to embark themselves as soon as possible they could, intending for *Tripoli* in *Barbary*, where he was born; *Rozak* likewise determined to go for *Viserta*; and so imbarcked with the same hast they used to do when they

they discover any Gallies which they fear, or Vessels which they think to be a prize; besides they saw the weather begun to change, inclining to a Storm.

Graciana was on Land, but not where I might see her; save only at the time of her embarking, where we both met at the Sea-side. This her new Lover led her by the hand, and setting her foot upon the Plank which reached from the Land to the Galley, she turned back to look upon me, though my Eyes were never off from her; looking upon her with so much tender Affection, and languishing so long, at length I was depriv'd of that little sense of seeing I had left, and fainted away; the like they afterwards told me betel *Graciana*, who dropt from the Plank into the Sea, where she had been drowned, but that *Rozak* leapt in after her, and brought her out in his Arms.

But when I came again to my Senses, and saw my self alone in one Galley, and she other steering a contrary Course, and sailed out of sight, carrying away with them the one half of my Soul, or (to speak truth) all of it; new Clouds hovered over my Heart, and I began again to curse my Misfortune, and called aloud for Death to seize me: such and so great was
the

the Lamentation I made, that it proved so offensive to my Master's Ears, that he threatned if I did not hold my Peace, he would severely punish me. Whereupon I suppressed my Tears, and smother'd my Sighs: But froward Fortune, not contented to have brought me into this so narrow straight, took a course to overthrow all, by taking from me all hope of Remedy; for in an Instant, the storm we so much feared overtook us, and the Wind which blew strongly from the South, blew full in the Teeth of us; and began with such fury to re-inforce it self, that we were forced to tack about, and suffer our Galley to go which way the Wind would carry her.

Our Captain's Design was to have put into Some part of the Island for shelter, and more particularly, on the North part thereof; but it fell not out according to his Expectation, but rather, quite contrary to what he had design'd; for the Wind blew so high, that within little more than Fourteen hours, we saw our selves within two Leagues, or thereabouts, of the same Island, from whence we had put forth; and now there was no remedy for hindring our being driven upon it, amongst very high Rocks, which

which presented themselves to our view, threatening us with inevitable Death.

We saw on the one side of us, that other Galley wherein was *Graciana*, and all their *Turks*, and Captive-Rowers labouring hard with their Oars, to keep themselves off as well as they could from running upon the same dangers. We used the same means in ours, but with better success ; for they being tyred out with their Voyage, and overcome by the stiffness of the Wind, and blustering storm, forsaking their Oars, and abandoning their own safety, suffer'd themselves to fall amongst the Rocks, against which the Galley dashing it self, was split in a thousand pieces.

Night was then drawing on, and so great was the cry of those that gave themselves for lost ; and the Consternation of those in our Vessel made aking Hearts, for that not any of those things our Captain commanded was understood or done by them ; only they ply'd their Oars, allowing it for their best remedy, to turn the Prow to the Wind, and cast two Anchors into the Sea, to keep off Death for a while, which they expected every moment : And although the terrour of dying was dreaded by all the rest, yet in me it was quite contrary ; for flattering my self with the alluring hopes

hopes of having a prospect of her in the other World, who was so lately departed out of this; every minute that the Galley deserr'd its drowning, or splitting against the Rocks, seem'd to me an Age of Pain: and yet I could not forbear, but cast my Eyes sometimes, upon the insulting Waves, to see whether I could espy floating upon those proud Billows, the Body of unfortunate *Graciana*.

At length day appear'd, but with the Symptoms of a much greater Storm than the former, at which time, we found our Vessel riding out at Sea, some distance from the Rocks; but having discovered a point of the Island, which we perceived might easily be doubled, both *Turks* and *Christians*, began to be chearful, and with new Hopes, and new Hearts, falling with Courage to their work, in six hours we doubled the point, where we found the Sea more calm; insomuch that coming under the Lee of the Island, the *Turks* leapt out to Land, and went to see if there were any Relicks remaining of the Galley, which the Night before fell among the Rocks; but even then neither would Fortune be so Favourable to me, as to grant me that poor Enjoyment which I hop'd to have receiv'd, of having *Graciana's* Body in these my Arms;

Arms; whom, though dead and bruise'd I should have thought my self happy to have imbrace'd, thinking thereby to have master'd Fate, and link'd my self to her though Dead, whose Life my Stars had utterly deny'd me. To which purpose, I intreated one of the *Renegadoes* to go on Shore, to view whether the rolling Sea had not cast her Body on the Land: But all in vain; for just at that very Instant the Wind began to rise, and the Sea grew rough, so that the shelter of that Island, was of no benefit to us.

Ledabo seeing this, would not struggle against *Fortune*, who before had so violently persecuted him; and therefore commanding his Men to fit the Galley, to bear little Sail, and to turn the Prow to the Seaward; while he himself took Charge of the Rudder, he suffer'd the Vessel to run through the wide-Sea; being well assur'd that no impediment would cross its Course; which made its way with that Swiftness, that in three Days and three Nights, passing in sight of *Trepana*, of *Melazo* and *Palerme*, we arriv'd at *Tripoli* in *Barbary*, where my Master fell Sick of a *Pleurisie*, attended with a burning Fever, in that violent manner, that in three days it sent him of an errand into the other World.

The

The king of *Tripoli* seiz'd presently upon all his Wealth, and I fell into the Hands of his *Vice-roy*; and within fifteen days after he received his Commission for *Cyprus*, with whom I am here arriv'd, but do not intend to seek my Redemption, though he has often importuned me to it, (by Reason, *Ledalbo's* Soldiers had inform'd him of my Ability,) and wondring that a Person of my Quality should be so much wanting to my self, as not to entertain so good a motion. I gave him a slender answer, and only told him, that he had receiv'd a wrong Information; but know assuredly (*Pyrrhus*) I will never return back to that place which will prove my torment, and where *Graciana's* Death will in part, if not be wholly imputed to me.

This (*Pyrrhus*) is my ill Fate, and the Occasion of these my Sighs and Tears. *Graciana* is dead, and with her are buried all my hopes; and though that which I had (whilst she liv'd) hung but by a slender Thred; yet, yet,—and then his Speech forsook him, whilst his Tears, which were numerous had eased his Passion; but having vented his Grief, and recovering himself, *Pyrrhus* promised him all the Kindness and Assistance that a true Friend could

accommodate him withal. And to that end, assured him of his utmost endeavour so to contrive it, that they might be both Slaves to one Master; and that living both together, they might be the more serviceable one to another; for my Master (continu'd *Pyrrhus*) is Judge of this City, and none is his Superior in it; nor none more in his Effects than my self.

While they were thus discoursing, as luck would have it, they saw a great throng of People coming out of the City; occasioned by the old *Vice-roy's* coming forth into the Field, to give place to *Pyrrhus's* Master. Here they left off any farther Communication for that time, and went to the Tents; just at that very Instant, as the old *Bashaw* came thither, and the new one came forth to receive him at the Tent door; *Hatten Bashaw*, (for so was he called, that left the Government) came attended with *Janizaries* (being the ordinary Garrison Soldiers in *Nicosia*, ever since the *Turks* were Masters over it) to the number of five hundred. They marched in two Divisions, the one with Muskets, and the other with drawn Scymeters. When they came to the Tent of the new *Bashaw*, *Hatten*, they were drawn round it; and when *Hatten Bashaw* approached the Entrance of

L

the

the Tent, he made a low Reverence to *Hazen*, who with a less bowing of his Body congyed to him again.

This being done, *Hattem* presently entred into *Hazen's* Pavillion: Then there was brought him a very stately Horse, richly Caparison'd, upon which he was mounted, and conducted round the Tents, and a great part of the Field, with loud Acclamations in their own Language; Long live *Solyman Sultan*, and *Hazen Bashaw*, his Vice-roy; they repeated this very often, and then presently return'd back to the Tent, where *Hattem Bashaw* remained all the while; and then with the *Cadi*, or Judge, *Hazen* and *Hattem*, shut themselves up close for the space of an hour, to treat of the Affairs of the City. Within a little while after, the *Cadi*, or Judge of Causes, came forth to the Door of the Tent, and with a loud Voice in the *Turkish*, *Arabic*, and *Greek* Language: Declar'd, That all who had any thing to lay to the Charge of *Hattem Bashaw*, might have free admittance: for there was *Hazen Bashaw*, whom the *Grand Signior* had sent his Vice-roy into *Cyprus*, would do them all Right and Justice. Some *Greek Christians*, and some *Turks* entred to crave Justice; but their Charge was so slender, that the Judge dis-

patch'd

perch'd them immediately, finding no grounds for their Complaints.

In this Interim entred in an Officer, who gave the *Bashaw* notice, that there was a *Jew* at the Tent Door, who had brought a most Fair and Beautiful *Christian* Virgin to be sold; the Judge or *Cadi* commanded that she should be brought in: Up-
on which the Officer went forth, and presently return'd, ushering in an Ancient *Jew*, who led by the hand a Woman in a *Barbary* Habit, so richly attir'd, that the wealthiest *Moors* in *Fex* or *Morocco* was not able to compare with her; for throughout her whole Dress, she surpass'd all the *Affrican* Women, her Face was covered with a Scarf of *Crimson Taffata*: The small of her Legs, and her Arms, (which through this Scarf were easie to be seen) were adorn'd with Bracelets of Gold, wherein not less scatteringly, many fair Pearls and precious Stones. In Conclusion, the fashion of her Cloths, and all other her Furniture, were such, that the *Cadi* or Judge, and the two *Bashaws*, upon the very first sight of so much Grandeur, being mightily taken, before any other thing was said or questioned by them, desired the *Jew* to take the Scarf from off the *Christian's* Face; But then such a splendour, such a Beauti-
ful

ful Countenance discovered it self, as dazl'd the Eyes of all the Beholders.

But he in whom this amazing Beauty, wrought the deepest Impression, was the sorrowful *Gasparino*, as one who better than any other knew her, she being his cruel and beloved *Graciana*, who so often, and with so many Tears, had by him been reputed, and deplor'd for dead. Nor was *Gasparino* the only Person that suffer'd *Loves* powerful Reign, but at the same time, the two *Bashaws* and the *Cadi* were equally smitten. And therefore, without questioning the *Jew*, where or how he came by her, they only asked him, what he would take for her? The Covetous *Jew*, replyed, : Two thousand Crowns ; he had scarce set the price, but *Hattem Bashaw* proffered to give him his Money down.

But *Hazen Bashaw*, who was resolv'd he should not have her though he ventured his Life ; Well, (said he) and I will give the *Jew* two thousand Crowns, which he demands ; not that I would either give so much, or go about to circumvent *Hattem*, did not that inforce me, which were he as sensible of it as my self, he would not be so unjust as to condemn me ; for this lovely Slave belongs not to any of us, but to the

the *Grand Signior*; and, therefore, say I, I buy her in his Name; now let me see who dare be so insolent as to offer to take her from me.

That dare I, replied *Hattem*, because for the self same end and purpose do I buy her; and it belongs more especially to me, to tender this present to the *Grand Signior*, by reason, I am taking my Voyage for *Constantinople*, and am provided with that conveniency for her safe conduct. And by that means, I may the better obtain the favour of the *Grand Signior*. Nay, rather, it will be better received from my Hands, (reply'd *Hazen*) to take Care of sending her to the *Grand Signior*, since I do it without any respect to my own private Interest, or Expectation of profit. And whereas you alledge the conveniency of carrying her along with you; I will send her in a Galley of my own, well armed, and provided with a sufficient Convoy at my own Charges. At these Words, *Hattem's* Blood began to rise, so that laying his hand on his Scymeter, *Hazen*, said he, My Intentions are the same with yours, and she is mine, for I was the first that purchased her; therefore if thou thinkest to circumvent me, this Scymeter shall defend my Right, and chastise thy Presumption.

The *Cadi*, who was attentive to all that had past between them, and burned no less in Loves Flames than either of the other, fearing least he should lose his Treasure; *Hazen* and *Hattem*, said he, let me intreat you both to lay aside these your differences, which I doubt not but to compose in such a manner, that both of you may effect your intentions, and the *Grand Signior* be sensible of both your Services. To these words of the *Judge*, they shewed themselves obedient. *Hattem*, you would have this Christian, (said the *Judge*) for the *Grand Signior*; and *Hazen* says the like: You alledge, That you were the first in offering the demanded price, *Hazen* contradicts you; and though he doth not inforce his Argument so home, yet I understand you both agree to buy the Slave for the same purpose; only you got the start of him, in declaring first; yet he ought not to be wholly defrauded of his intentions; and therefore in my opinion, let this business be thus accorded, *Hazen* shall pay two thousand Crowns, and *Hattem* shall lay down the other two thousand, and let the Captive remain in my power, to the end that I may send her in both your Names to *Constantinople*, that neither of you may remain unrewarded; for (as an Bywitness)

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 151

I can testify the forwardness of you both to gratifie the *Grand Signior*; to which purpose I will send her at my own cost and charge, with that Equipage and Attendance, which is due to him, to whom she is sent.

The two enamour'd *Bashaws* neither could nor would contradict him; each of them forming, and imagining in his mind, a hope (though doubtful) of promising to themselves the attainment of the end of their inflamed desires; *Hazen*, who was to continue *Viceroy* of *Cyprus*, thought to win the Judge by great Gifts, to deliver the Captive up to him, and *Hatterm* having other projects in his Head, and both conceiving his own design the surest, they easily condescended to what the Judge propounded, and with a joint consent delivered the Captive presently to him, and made present payment to the Jew of a thousand Crowns a piece; but then the Jew would not part with her upon those terms, unless they would likewise purchase her wearing Apparell, and Jewels, which he valued at a thousand Crowns more. Upon which the *Cadi* or Judge, that he might not shew himself less Bountiful than the two *Bashaws*, promis'd to pay those thousand Crowns, thinking it proper to have her presented to

the same dress (which she then wore) to the *Grand Signior*.

When *Gasparino* saw all this, and that it was no Dream, he came to *Pyrrhus*, and whispering him in the Ear; Friend (said he) dost not thou know her? Not I, said *Pyrrhus*; then reply'd *Gasparino*, this is *Graciana*. How (answered *Pyrrhus*?) 'Tis very certain (reply'd *Gasparino*.) Peace then, reply'd *Pyrrhus*, for Fortune is now so ordering the business, that thou shalt find her Complaisant, since *Graciana* is in my Masters power. *Gasparino* would have put himself into some place to have been seen by her, but *Pyrrhus* would by no means permit him, for fear some suddain passion should overthrow his present hopes.

Graciana being thus surrendred up to the Judge, he came to her and taking her by the Hand deliver'd her to *Pyrrhus* commanding him to convey her to his Lady *Radula*, with orders to use her kindly, as being the *Grand Signior's* Slave. *Gasparino* seeing *Pyrrhus* lead her away, all alone, followed her as far as he durst; but having lost her, he went to seek out the Jew; whom after he had found out, he civilly demand-
ed of him where he had bought that Cap-
tive Christian; and by what means she
came to his Hands. The Jew made him an-
swer

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 153

swer that he met with her in the Island of *Pantalea*; and that he bought her of certain *Turks*, whose Galley had been split against the Rocks of that Island. And as he was proceeding in his discourse he was interrupted by one which came from the *Bashaws* to inform the Jew, That he must come immediately to 'em.

Now as *Pyrrhus* waited on her between the Tents and the Town, he took occasion to ask *Graciana*, Whence she was, and where born; who made him answer, her Native place was in the City of *Trepana*: Then *Pyrrhus* question'd her whether she knew in that City, a Rich and Noble Gentleman called *Gasparino*? At her hearing him named, *Graciana* fetching a deed sigh, Too well Sir (said she) to my prejudice: How to your prejudice, Madam (said he?) Because he knew me (said *Graciana*) to his own, and my unhappiness. But I pray resolve me (said *Pyrrhus*) did you know in the same City another Gentleman, a very worthy person called *Hippolito*? I likewise knew him, reply'd *Graciana*, and I may say much more to my Grief than *Gasparino*.

But, pray Sir, if I may be so bold to ask you, where had you this Intelligence? I am (said *Pyrrhus*) of *Palermo*, and by various

ous accidents in this Disguise; and for *Gasparino*, and *Hipollito*, I know them well, in regard it is not many days, since they were both in my power; for certain *Moors* of *Tripoli* in *Barbary* had taken *Hippolito* Captive and sold him to a *Turk*, who brought him to this Island.

But tell me Sir, how came *Gasparino* to this Island, he came (reply'd *Pyrrhus*) with a *Pyrate* who took him Prisoner in a Garden, near the Sea shore of *Trepana* and with him a certain Virgin, but I could never get him to tell me her name. He staid here some few days with his Master, who was to go and visit *Mahomet's* Sepulchre, but just at the time of his departure *Gasparino* fell so extreamly Sick, that his Master left him with me, (as being his Countryman) that I might use all the best means I could for his Recovery, and take care of him till his return hither, and if he did not return hither, that I should send him to him to *Constantinople*, according to the advice I should receive from him.

But the Gods had otherwise order'd it, since that, unfortunate *Gasparino* without any Symptom of a dangerous Sicknes, within a few days ended his Life; making often mention of one *Graciana*, (whom as himself told me) he loved more than his
OWN

own Life, and was as dear to him, if not dearer than his own Soul, *Graciana* (as he related to me) suffered Shipwrack at the Island of *Panta^alea*, the Galley wherein she was, being split upon the Rocks, and her self drown'd, whose Death he continually lamented, till his mourning had brought him to breath his last.

Well (Sir) replied *Graciana*; but as to that other young man *Hippolito*, whom you spoke of, in those his discourses which he had with you, did he not at any time speak of *Graciana*? Did he tell you how she and *Gasparino* were made Captives? Speak of her (said *Pyrrhus*!) yes a thousand and a thousand times; and enquired of me very frequently, whether any Female Christian of that name had of late been brought to this Island; telling me withal how joyful he would be to hear any Tydings of her, that he might ransom her; to which purpose he possess'd his Master with so much Credulity, that she was not so rich as he supposed her to be; and that having had the happiness of enjoying of her formerly, he needed not set so great a value upon her; however if three or four hundred Crowns would purchase her freedom, he would willingly Disburse it for the kindness he had formerly received from her.

It

156 *The Generous Lover.* Nov. III.

It seems, said *Graciana*, he valued her kindness but at a low rate that would not go beyond four hundred Crowns; but *Gasparino* was more Noble, Valiant and Generous, Fuller of Magnanimity than to make so poor an offer. O ye Gods forgive that inconsiderate wretch, who was the occasion of Generous *Gasparino's* death! for I am that unhappy woman, whose death he so much lamented. And Heaven knows were he now alive, how much I would repay his kindness! and should be witness how sensible I am of his misfortunes, who hath endured so much for mine! Having so said she besought *Pyrrhus*, (considering she knew not where she was, not whither her Fates would hurry her) to assist her in her miseries.

Pyrrhus reply'd, he would perform to her all the service he was capable of, and advise her according to his best understanding. With that he informed her of the Difference between the two *Bashaws*, upon her account; and how she now remain'd in the power of the Judge his Master, in order to convey and present her to the great *Turk*, *Han* the Fourth at *Constantinople*: But he hoped Heaven would otherwise dispose of her: how-ever he advis'd her in the mean time to use a fair deportment,

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 157

ment, and ingratiate her self into the favour and good opinion of *Albuma* his Master's wife, in whose Custody she is to remain till they send her to *Constantinople*, acquainting her withal, of *Albuma's* temper and qualities, with many other things which might redound to her benefit; at length they were arriv'd at his Master's house; *Albuma* seeing her so richly attir'd, and so lovely, gave her a very friendly and kind entertainment. *Pyrrhus* having rendred up his charge, returning back to the Tents, gave *Gasparino* an account of what had passed between him and *Graciana*.

Gasparino having attentively heard the relation of his Friend: How must we (said he) proceed in this Affair, and imploy our time to the best advantage? that which is first of all to be done, (answer'd *Pyrrhus*) is for you to be entertain'd in my Master's Service, which being effected we will afterwards consult, what is in the next place most convenient. But whilst they were thus talking, came the Guardian of the Christian Captives belonging to *Hazen*, and took *Gasparino* along with him. The Judge return'd with *Hazen* to the City, and *Hatten* taking his leave, prepared forthwith to set forward on his Journey, being very importunate with the Judge to hasten the send-

sending of the Captive Virgin; and withal, to Write to the *Grand Signior* in his behalf, for the better promoting his Interest: All which the *Judge* promis'd to perform, though he meant otherwise.

Hatter being gone full of false hopes, and *Hazen* abiding behind, not altogether in despair; *Pyrrhus* so brought the business about, that *Gasparino* was entertain'd into his Master's Service: But still Time's Hour-Glass run on, and *Gasparino* burn'd so with desire to see *Graciana*, that he could not enjoy one Minute of rest: And now *Gasparino* was advis'd to change his Name, the better to conceal himself from *Graciana*'s knowledge, before he had seen her, (So he gave himself the Name of *Mauritino*,) but it was so difficult a Task to see her, that he could not as yet obtain it.

Yet one day it so happen'd, that the Lady *Albana* behold her Slave *Mauritino*, and took such an affection to him, that he made a deep impression in her Heart, and fix'd a stronger in her Memory, and perhaps taking little or no satisfaction in the cold Embraces of her Aged Husband, she easily gave way to this her Lustful Desire, and acquainted *Graciana*, (whom she now dearly loved) with her filthy wish'd-for Embraces: *Graciana* indeed was of an obli-

ging

ging Temper and Sweet Behaviour; her therefore *Albina* inform'd, that the Judge had received into his House a Christian Captive, of a lovely Aspect, and fine Deportment; that in her Eye he was the Comeliest Person that ever she beheld, and that he was of the same Country with *Pyrrhus*, but could not contrive which way to bring it about, whereby he might understand her affection for him, and she fearing he should slight her Amours when he did know of it.

Graciana being willing to please her, ask'd what was the Captives Name? *Albina* told her *Mauritino*: to whom *Graciana* reply'd, if he be a Gentleman, and of that place you say he is, I must needs know him; but of the Name of *Mauritino*, I don't remember any such in *Trepana*; but if your Ladyship will permit me to see him, and Discourse with him, I shall be able to inform you, both who he is, and what may be expected from him: It shall be done (said *Albina*) with the first Opportunity; and according to your Discretion you may give him some light of my Affections, and in so doing this Friendly Office, I shall place the greater Esteem upon you.

As

As *Albana* had thus declar'd her self to *Graciana* within less than two hours after, the Judge calling *Pyrrhus*, and *Mauritino* to him; with no less Efficacy than *Albana* his Wife had done to *Graciana*, did he discover to them the Affections he had for the Virgin Captive, requiring their Privacy, and Advice, what course he should take to keep the Female Christian to himself, and yet comply with the *Grand Signior* whose she was; acquainting them withal, that he would rather die ten thousand Deaths than once resign her up to him. After several Consultations, among Persons aiming at contrary ends, it was at length concluded, that *Mauritino*, as being a Person of her own Native Country, should undertake to Court her for his Master, and if he could not prevail by fair Means, he should then use Violence to force her; and that being done, they should then report abroad, she was Dead. The Judge, or *Cadi* rested extreamly well satisfied with this Contrivance of his Slaves, gave *Pyrrhus* his Liberty, and after his Death half of his Goods: He likewise promised *Mauritino*, not only his Freedom, but good store of Crowns if he succeeded.

Now

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 181

Now if he were so Generous and Noble
promising his Captives were as Prodi-
gious in their Performances, offering to pull
down the Moon to do him Service; much
easier to draw *Graciana* to his Imbra-
ces, so as *Mauritimo* might have the op-
portunity of discoursing with her. I will
grant him free access to her, said the *Cadi*,
Judge, as often as need requires, if that
will advance the business; and to that pur-
pose I will send away *Albuma* my Wife to
her Friends in the Country; and in the
mean time *Graciana* shall have all the Li-
berty in the World to Discourse and Con-
verse with her Countryman. This Agree-
ment being made between these three, all
was hush.

The next day the *Cadi*, or Judge came
to *Albuma*, and in a pleasant Humour told
her, she might, when she pleas'd, visit her
Father and Mother, and stay in the Coun-
try as long as she would, or till he sent for
her. But in regard her heart was overjoy'd
with those fair hopes which *Graciana* had
given her, she had no inclination of go-
ing; and therefore told him, at this time
she had no great fancy to depart from home;
if he would let her go thither; when she had, she would
acquaint him with it, but whenever she
went she did design to take the Captive

M

Christian

Christian along with her.: By no means (reply'd the Judge) for it is not requisite that the *Grand Signior's* Female Slave should be seen by any person. That matter not much, (reply'd *Albama*) for she may be as private in my Father's House, as any where else: Besides, the longest time I mean to spend with them, shall not be above four or five days; for that will seem an Age to me to be so long absent from you. The Judge made no reply, because he would give her no occasion to suspect his farther Intentions.

Whilst these Transactions were agitating, the Judge had some Affairs to mind, which *Albama* his Wife, knew would detain him from home, for the space of four hours: He was no sooner gone, but he commanded *Mauritino* to be called to him. No sooner was *Mauritino* admitted, but he walked through the whole House, gazing about him, yet could he not perceive any thing, save a dumb, and still Silence till he cast his Eye aside, where *Graciana* sat, at the foot of a curious Stair-case of polish'd Marble, which led up to a spacious Gallery that surrounded the whole House. Instantly so many Passions seiz'd the Enamour'd *Gasperino*, as wrought in him both Amazement, and Refreshment.

considered with himself, that he was a Cap-
 ture, and in another's Power; but at length
 overcome with all Facility, those little
 resolutions, with a Formidable Love, and
 melting Sadness, and Pusillanimous
 Courage, advanc'd to the place where she
 was; at what time *Graciana* turning her
 head aside, fixt her Eyes upon *Mauritino*,
 who look'd on less stedfastly upon her.
 When both their Looks encountring
 in each other, by different effects had
 given evident signs of that which their se-
 cret Souls felt within: *Gasparino* was at a
 stand, and wanted motion to advance fur-
 ther; and *Graciana*, who upon *Pyrrhus's*
 relation of *Gasparino's* Death, gave credit
 to it, holding him now so unexpect-
 edly, and full of Fear and Amazement,
 thought herself as if she had seen some Appa-
 rition; *Gasparino* coming to himself, and
 perceiving by her Gestures, the true
 cause of *Graciana's* Fears, assur'd her in the
 most passionate Expressions, that a Lover
 could be none, that he was the same unfor-
 tunate *Gasparino*, whom she had made so.
 Having dissipated her Fears, de-
 termin'd to speak lower, and not speak of
 himself; so that what she should ask him:
 you may be sure our Lady hath
 heard, and may over-hear our Dis-

course; and (to deal plainly with you) has acquainted me, that she is a great Admirer of you, and has employed me to interceed with you in her behalf: if you answer her Desires, your days here in Captivity may seem more easie to you, though in the end prove pernicious: However for the present you must counterfeit your Embracements, first for my desire, and next it is a piece of rudeness to despise any Lady's Addresses.

To this *Gasparino* reply'd, I never could harbour any such Thought, Fair *Graciana*, that any Service you should ever command me to undertake, should prove so hard a Task for me to perform, as this which you lay before me; neither is it agreeable to the Honour and Faith of a Gentleman, or the Reputation of a good man, to feign and dissemble in such weighty Consequences: However, because you shall not say I gave a refusal to your first Request, your Commands shall be obeyed; I'll *Janus* like look two ways, pursue the ill, because it is for good to come of it. I will to satisfy your desire, and *Albuma's* Pleasure, (Lust I should have call'd it) comply as far as a counterfeiting yielding will permit, so that thereby I may gain the Happiness of seeing you; to which purpose do you study for my Answers

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 165

to her, according to your Discretion, which having said he entreated her briefly to tell him how she escaped from the hands of the Pyrates, and how she came into those of the Jew, who so lately sold her.

10. *The Story of my Misfortunes*, (answered *Graciana*) require more leasure than time will now permit, yet will I not leave you wholly unsatisfied: Know then, that the very same Evening we parted, *Rozak's Galley* was carried with a strong Wind to the same Isles of *Pantalea*, where we likewise saw your Vessel; but ours, we being not able to hinder it, ran unavoidably upon the Rocks. However *Rozak* foreseeing his own Destruction and mine before his Eyes, before the fatal ruine happen'd, took care to have me rowed on Shore, between two Cables fastened together, which was done at first by the Captain himself, who had ventured his Life to save mine, till an unfortunate Billow threw him upon the Rocks, and dash'd out his Brains. After which, two others which were endeavouring to save themselves, took hold of my Cable, and shall'd me to Land, where I lay in a *Strait* for some time; but of this I know nothing myself, but by information. With some other Persons sav'd themselves, who though *Turks* us'd me with as much respect,

166 *The Generous Lover.* Nov. III.

respect, as if I had been related to them : We kept our selves close in a Cave for eight days, the *Turks* fearing the Christians should espy 'em, which had command of the Fort in the Island ; and all that time we fed upon nothing but the wet Bisket which the Sea had cast upon the Shore, from the broken Bins of the Galley, which the *Turks* gathered up by Night, that they might not be discover'd.

At the eight days end, there arriv'd upon that Coast, a Vessel of the *Moors*, which came to an Anchor a little off the Land ; upon which the *Turks* made such signs to the Vessel which lay not far off, that they which were in her perceiv'd they were *Turks* that call'd to 'em. Thereupon they sent out their Cock-Boat, and receiv'd them into their Bark, wherein was an exceeding rich *Jew*, a Merchant ; all the Lading of the Vessel, or the most part of it was his, being Freight'd with Carpets, and Hides, with other Commodities, which they carry from *Barbary* to the *Levant*. In that Vessel the *Turks* sail'd for *Tripoli* ; and in that Voyage they sold me to the *Jew* for two thousand Ducats, an Excessive Price, if his Love towards me had not made him so generous, as he afterwards declared to me.

Leaving

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 167

Leaving the *Turk* after all this in *Tripoli* the Vessel Tack'd about to perform her Voyage, and the *Jew* began to be very hot in his Solicitations: At length despairing to obtain his lustful ends, he resolv'd to make the most of me, the first opportunity that should offer it self: At last he understood that the two *Bashaws* were in this Island, where he might sell and vend his Merchandize, as well as in *Xio*, whither he was bound; and intending to sell me to one of the *Bashaws*, he put me in this Habit which I have on, to make me the more Sailable and Amiable to the Eyes of those that bought me.

And now I understand this *Cadi*, or *Judge* has purchas'd me, with a design to send me as a Present to the *Great Turk*, of which I am not a little fearful: Here I heard of your supposed Death, and I must now declare to you, if you dare believe me, That it griev'd me to the very Soul; though I rather envied than pity'd your Misfortune; not out of any disrespect, but because I knew you were then happy, while I continued still in misery.

Dear *Graciana*, (reply'd *Gasparino*) you judg'd aright, in what you have now spoken; only Death had deprived me of this Happiness which I now enjoy, in seeing of
M 4 you

168 *The Generous Lover*: Nov. III.

you once more; a Felicity which I esteem more dear than my Life: But Fairest of Creatures, I am now to acquaint you, the Judge my Master, by no less various Accidents than yours, entertains the same Affection to you, as *Albano* your Lady declares she has for me; and he has made choice of me to be the Interpreter of his Thoughts: I received the Motion, though not to do him that piece of Service, but to gain the happy opportunity of conversing with the Joy of my Life. Thus you may see (*Dear Graciana*) to what hard measure our Misfortunes have hurried us; you to be Agitator in working such Impossibilities; and me likewise to be Solicitour in such a Prodigious Cause as this, which rather than obtain, I would forfeit Life, and all I have, which now I value, since it has afforded me this great Happiness.

I am doubtful what to say, or imagine, (*reply'd Graciana*) how we shall be able to get out of this Labyrinth; but you see, what our Condition constrains us to make use of: I am sure our Inclinations never tended to Dissimulation, and Deceit; we must now make a Virtue of necessity; and therefore I will acquaint *Albano* with some feeling Expressions pretended to be yours; that shall rather entertain her with Hopes, than

than drive her to Despair: You shall likewise report of me to the Judge, what you think most convenient, that may not prove prejudicial to my Honour, but prevent his designs; and since I wholly intrust you with it, you may assure your self it never was yet violated, though indeed those Difficulties I have endured might call it in question: As for our Conversing one with another, will (by their means) appear very easie, provided you declare to none your Pretensions to me, for in that very hour, you do that, you must expect never to see me more; for I would not have you prize me at so low Rate, to think that Captivity can effect that, which Liberty could not attain to.

Madam, (reply'd *Gasparino*) as to that Particular you may at present easily command my Obedience: I am willing, e'er I entertain such Thoughts, to give you farther Proofs of my Affection, in working your Deliverance, and mine: Now as to what concerns the Judge, take you no care of that, but do you undertake the like with *Albuma*. With this they took their leaves of each other; *Graciana* remain'd very well satisfied with *Gasparino's* fair Intentions, and he the most joyful man in the

170 *The Generous Lover.* Nov. III.

the World that he had heard *Graciana* speak with so much sweetness.

Albama, in this Interim of time, had shut herself up in her Oratory, praying to her Prophet *Mahomet*, that *Graciana* might bring her good Tydings of the Business recommended to her Care. Nor was the Judge less solicitous than his Lady, as wholly depending upon a good successful Answer, which he hoped to receive from *Mauritinio*; to whose Charge he committed his discouraging with *Graciana*.

Graciana greatly pleased *Albama*, by giving her very good hopes that *Mauritinio* would acquiesce to her Desires, but telling her withal, he must intreat her Patience while two Moons were first expired; before which time, he could not answer that, which he much more desired than her self; and this forbearance was only desired, that he might finish his Vows, for his Deliverance from Bondage. *Albama* was not at all displeased with the excuse of her beloved *Mauritinio*, but promised to obtain his Freedom, before the appointed time, provided he would answer her Expectation; and therefore entreated *Graciana* to inform him of it, and see what Operation she could make with him to dispence with the said time; engaging withal to furnish him
with

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 171

with as much Money as the Judge should require for his ransom.

As for *Gasparino* before he would return an answer to his Master, he consulted with *Pyrrhus*, what answer to make him, and the result of it was, that they should acquaint him, the Case was desperate, without any hopes of winning her; and therefore, as soon as possible he could, he should carry her away to *Constantinople*; and that in the way thither, either by fair means or by force, he might obtain his Desires. Then to keep from the *Grand Signior's* Displeasure, he should purchase for him another Slave, which in the Voyage should be thrown over-board, upon pretence that *Graciana* was fall'n Sick, and dead of her Distemper, which they said should be done in such a manner, as it should never be discovered; neither should he incur the *Grand Signior's* Displeasure, but fulfil his own Heart's Desire; afterwards, for the continuance of his Favour, they would invent some Stratagem, which should make all firm and secure.

This old Judge, his strong Affections to *Graciana* had so blinded the Eyes of his understanding; that had they told him a thousand greater unlikelyhoods, he would have believed them all; only one more difficul-

ty offer'd it self to the Judge, which in his Opinion was greater than all the rest; which was, least his Lady should hinder him from going to *Constantinople*, without permitting her to go with him; but immediately they removed that Obstacle, by informing him, that in the Room of the *Christian* which they were to buy, and to throw over-Board instead of *Graciana*, *Albunia* would serve Excellent well for that purpose; and none better to please him, whom he earnestly desired to be freed from, more than Death.

This scruple being thus remov'd, that very day, the Judge Discourses with *Albunia* concerning the Voyage he intended to make to *Constantinople*, to transport the *Christian* to the Grand Signior; by whose Bounty, he hoped to receive some higher preferment. *Albunia* replied, she approv'd very well of his Design, thinking he would leave *Gasparino* at home. But when she found he was to go with him, she began to change her Opinion, and to dissuade him from that, which before she had advised him to. In short, she concluded, That if he did not take her with him, she would use all the means that possibly could be found out to hinder his Voyage: that pleas'd the Judge, who had before determin'd

to shake off that Yoke, which was so uneasy to him.

All this while, *Hazen Bashaw* was not negligent in soliciting the Judge to resign up the Christian Slave to him, offering him Mountains of Gold; but all his Gifts and Promises wrought no effect upon him, but to forward him more in his departure. Within twenty days, he had fitted and rig'd up a *Bregantine* of fifteen Banks, Manning it with Voluntary Soldiers, lusty young able Men, partly *Moors*, and some *Greek Christians*. Therein he embarked all his Wealth; neither did *Albuma* leave any thing in her House of any considerable Value, for *Albuma's* Design was the same with that of *Pyrrhus's*, That when the Vessel was out at Sea, *Gasparino* and he should make themselves Masters of the *Bregantine*, and Sail away with it. But she thought not fit to declare her Intentions to them, till she saw her self embarked, hoping thereby to gain *Gasparino's* Affection; being verily perswaded, that carrying such store of Wealth along with her, he would not refuse her for his Wife.

But as private as *Albuma* kept her Design, *Gasparino* understood it from *Graciana*, whom *Albuma* had made acquainted with her Contrivance; and now the day of

of departure being come, *Hazen* went forth, accompanying them with all his Soldiers to the Sea side; where he remained with his Eye fix'd upon the *Bregantine*, till he had quite lost the sight of it. But then as one who having long continued in such torment, oppress'd by Love which did disturb this quiet, being ready furnish'd with Intentions, without delay he put that presently in Execution, which with long Deliberation he had fore-casted; having therefore a Vessel for that purpose ready in another Port, he clapt into her fifty Soldiers, with all his Friends and Acquaintance, whom he had obliged by many Gifts and Promises, giving the strict Charge to put forth to Sea immediately, and recover the *Judge's Bregantine*, and to put to the Sword all that were in her except *Graciana* the Captive; also he gave them order to sink the Vessel, that nothing might remain, the better to prevent discovery.

Nor did they need many Arguments; for their Covetousness of the Plunder added Wings to their Feet, and Courage to their Hearts; considering the vastness of the Spoil, which was known to be in the Vessel. Two Days had the *Bregantine* sail'd in her intended Course, which to the Judge seem'd two Ages; for the first day he

he greatly desired to have put his Design in Execution, but his Slaves advis'd him to the contrary; for the first Contrivance was that *Graciana* should fall sick, the better to shew a pretence to her Death, which would require a little longer time; he did not approve of so long a delay, but would have it reported she dyed suddainly; and so quickly make an end of what they had projected, by dispatching his Wife out of the way, that he might allay the heat of that Fire, which by degrees consumed his Bowels. But in Conclusion to what they proposed, he at length condescended.

In this space of time, *Albama* had discover'd her Design to *Pyrrhus*, and *Gasparino*, and they were ready to put it in Execution, as soon as they had doubled certain points they were to Sail by; but the Judge was so hasty with them, and so sharp set, that they were fore'd to promise him to perform the task they undertook, upon the first opportunity that should offer it self. And now the day began to appear, wherein (according to the Contrivance of *Pyrrhus* and *Gasparino*) they were to accomplish their Desires, or to end their Days, when upon a suddain they descri'd a Vessel, which with Sails and Oars made briskly after them; at first they were afraid, they

they had been *Christian* Pyrates, from whom neither the one nor the other could expect any Benefit.

Thereupon they prepar'd to defend themselves, and to do all that might be done in such a Case of Necessity, three hours afterwards they drew nearer to them, till they came within Cannon-Shot. Perceiving this, they immediately struck Sail, and loos'd their Oars, and put themselves in a posture fit to receive them. But when the Vessel came within sight, the Judge bid them cheer up and fear nothing, for the Vessel was *Turkish*, and would do them no prejudice; withal, he commanded a White Flag should presently be hung out, which they in the other Galley, already blinded with greediness of gain, took no notice of, but made up with greater fury to Board the *Bregantine*. At the approach of this danger, *Pyrrhus*, by chance, turning his Head aside, perceiv'd from another point of the Compass, another Galley bearing up with full Sails carrying *Christian* Colours.

Now I am apt to believe the Judge would have given all the hopes of his Pleasure, to have found himself again in *Nicosia*, so great was his Confusion and Amazement; more especially to see himself so fiercely
at-

attack'd by the first Vessel, that they want-
ed very little of sinking his *Brigantine*.
But when he saw them to be Soldiers of
Nicosia, he soon guess'd the Cause of their
coming, and by whom set on work; and
gave himself for a lost Man: Indeed had
it not been that the Soldiers more minded
the Spoil than the Slaughter, not a Man had
escap'd alive.

But by this time, when they were most
busie about their Pillaging, the Vessel
bearing *Christian* Colours, came up with
the Victor Galley, and began to batter it
very rudely; but before she came to grapple
with her, the Captain demanded what Ves-
sel that was, and from whence: They made
answer that it belong'd to *Hazen* the *Bashaw*,
Vice-roy of Cyprus. How comes it then to pass
that you being *Musselmén*, have robb'd
this Vessel, which carries the *Judge of Ni-*
cosia? To which they answer'd, that they
were commanded to take her by their Su-
perior, and therefore they were to obey,
without asking any Questions.

The Captain of the last Vessel thus satis-
fied with that which he desir'd to know,
fell off from *Hazen's*, and made towards
that of the *Judge*, and with the very first
Volley of Shot he kill'd him ten of his Men;
and presently after enter'd her with great

N

Courage

Courage and speed. But they had scarce set their Feet upon the Hatches, but the *Judge* instantly knew *Bazon*, the *Bashaw*, who with the same Design as *Hazen*, had pursu'd him; and that he might not be known, had put forth *Christian Colours*.

The *Judge*, understanding the Intentions of both these Lovers, finding himself thus set upon, began to shew his Anger, reviling one, reproaching another, and threatening others, and so severely rebuk'd the Soldiers, for drawing their Swords against a *Judge* and *Minister* of *Mabomet*, and their Natural Sovereign the *Grand Signior*, that the Seamen began to consider what they had done, and were about to put up their Scymeters, only *Bazon* shut his Eyes and Ears to all that he saw or heard; and falling upon the *Judge*, gave him such a cut on the Head, that if the blow had not been born off by the thickness of his Turbant, he had cleft his Scull in sunder; for it came with such a force, that it strook him down between the Banks of the Vessel.

This Action caused *Bazon's* Soldiers to follow the Example of their General, so that all was now again in worse Confusion than before; *Bazon's* Men fell upon the

Judge,

Judge; and *Hazen's* Soldiers fearing that *Bazon's* Men should get their Plunder from them, entred *Bazon's* Vessel, that in Conclusion, the Slaughter was so great, that there was hardly a *Turk* left alive, but what was much wounded. *Gasparino* and *Pyrrhus*, observing that the *Turks* were in a manner all slain; and those which remain'd alive, were sore wounded, now thought it their only opportunity; and therefore calling to their Assistance two Kinsmen of *Albuma's*, and being aided by the Volunteers, who were *Venetians*, with a great deal of ease, and without receiving so much as one Wound, they cut the Throats of all the rest; and Boarding *Bazon's* Galley, which they found without Defence, they took it, with all that was in it. Of those that dyed in the second Encounter, was *Bazon* the *Bashaw*, whom a *Turk* in Revenge to the *Judge* ran through the Body.

Being now Masters of all the three Vessels, by *Pyrrhus's* Advice they took out all things that were of any price or value, both in their own, and *Hazen's* Vessel, and stow'd them in *Bazon's* Galley, which was a Vessel of far greater Burthen, and fitter to take in the Lading; nor did they want Rowers, for they being most *Veneti-*

an. Slaves, were glad of the opportunity to return home, after they had carried the Vessel where *Pyrrhus* should require them. But before they set Sail, *Pyrrhus* and *Gaspertino*, full of Expressions of Joy, for their good Success, went to *Albuma*, and told her, that if she would return to *Cyprus*, they would man her own Vessel, and give her one half of the Goods, which she had imbarc'd. But she having not yet lost that Amorous Affection, which she bare to *Gaspertino*, told him, she would go with him to *Venice*, or elsewhere.

The Judge was by this time come to himself, having drest and bound up his Wound, as well as the place would permit, they likewise inform'd him that he should take his choice, either to go with them, or to return in the same Vessel he set forth, to *Nicosia*. To which he replyed, that since his ill Fortune, had been so great, he would rather accept of his Liberty, and supplicate the *Grand Signior* to redress those Injuries, he had received from *Bazon* and *Hazen*, two of his *Bashaws*. In the end, they mann'd his own Vessel, and furnish'd him with all things necessary for his Voyage; they gave him some *Chequins*, of those which once had been his own; and so having taken his leave, he begg'd that *Graciana* would vouch-

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 181

vouchsafe but only to imbrace him; which he would look upon as a great Kindness, and would of it self be sufficient to make him forget all his Misfortune; to which *Graciana* yielded, at the request of *Pyrrhus* and *Gasparino*; that done, the Judge further begg'd her but to lay her Hands upon his Head, not doubting but her charming Hand would heal his Wound. Which *Graciana* did likewise perform according to his Desire; and now having bored many holes in *Hazen's* Vessel to sink it, a merry Eastern Gale seeming to court the Sails, they made such fresh way, that in a very few hours they lost the sight of the *Judges Brigantine*, who with Tears in his Eyes, stood beholding how the Wind carried away his Wealth, his Wife, and *Graciana* his Souls Delight.

The Wind still favouring them, without touching any where, in a few days they got within sight of their beloved Country; which not a little augmented that Joy, which had already taken Possession of their Hearts; and no wonder their Spirits were transported with a new Contentment, which is one of the greatest that can be purchased in this Life, to arrive after a long Captivity, safe in their own Native Country, there being nothing can equalize it, but the

the Pleasure of Victory and Conquest. About an hour after Day-break, they found themselves within less than a League of the City, at what time *Gasparino* gave Order to trim the Vessel with several Flags, Streamers, and Pendants, and row'd leisurely into the Haven; which being discovered from the Port, an infinite number of People presently shewed themselves upon the Shore.

In the mean time *Gasparino* entreated *Graciana* to cloath and dress her self in the same manner, as when she was conducted by the Jew into the Bashaw's Tent. *Gasparino* and *Pyrrhus* also put themselves into *Turkish* Habit, as also did the Christians that ply'd the Oar; for there were Garments enough of the slain *Turks* to serve them all. This occasion'd a pleasant delusion of the sight to those that were upon the Land; for the People that stood gazing to behold a stout Vessel so gayly trim'd with Streamers, and Pendants playing, and triumphing in the Air: But when they beheld the *Turkish* Habits and white Turbants, they began to grow fearful and jealous of Stratagems; thereupon they forthwith betook themselves to their Arms upon the Haven, while the Horse were sent out to scour the Coast.

But

Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 183

But those fears were soon dispell'd, when Landing, they with Tears of joy saluted the ground, as an Evident sign they were Christians, who had made prize of the Vessel. The last that landed was the fair *Graciana*, having a Veil cast over her Face of Crimson Taffety, led by *Pyrrhus* and *Gasparino*: Which object drew after them the eyes of all that infinite multitude, who at their Landing kneeling as the rest did, Saluted the Earth with their prostrate Lips. By that time this was done, the Captain and Governor of the City were come up unto them, who presently knew *Gasparino*, and ran with open Arms, and all the manifestations of exceeding joy to imbrace him. With the Governor came *Hippolito*, and his Parents, and the Parents of *Gasparino* and *Graciana* with all her Kindred and Acquaintance, who were the greatest Persons of Rank and Quality in the whole City; all whom *Gasparino* received with a Joy and Affection, equal to what they had shewed to him. Then taking *Graciana* in one hand and *Hippolito* in the other, whose Colour then began to change; but *Gasparino* saluted him with much respect according to his degree and quality, and then declared himself.

Gentlemen (said he) you may well remember the misfortune which some Months since happen'd to me in *Moronio's* Garden, together with the loss of *Graciana*; nor can you forget the diligence which I used to procure her liberty, offering my whole Estate for her ransom; which though to you it may seem a kindness, was to me none, it being to redeem what I priz'd above all the World. What from that time has happen'd to us both, will require long time and a seasonable opportunity to relate; let it suffice for the present to tell you, That after many various and strange Accidents, and after a thousand lost hopes of remedying our misfortunes, the Gods have protected us and return'd us home to our Native Country, with Riches agreeable to our Contentment, and Compleated our Happiness; yet neither from this nor my procured liberty, is the end answerable to my desire, but in that great pleasure which I conceive my sweet Enemy takes as well to see her self Free, as to see before her here the chief object of her affections.

In short I offer'd my whole Estate for her Ransom, resigned up my Heart only to her self, contriving the means for her Liberty, and adventur'd my Life for her
safe-

II. Nov. III. *The Generous Lover.* 185

safety ; and though from all these may be raised engagements of moment, yet I will not impose any one thing upon her, except this one, which I presume she will agree to ; and so saying he puts up his hand, and with a Grace full of humility, took away the Scarff from before *Graciana's* Face ; which had the resemblance of the dissipating of a Cloud which darkens the Sun's brightness ; Here, *Hippolito*, (said he) I deliver thee such a Jewel, which it behoves thee to esteem above all those things that are esteem'd worthy. In the same manner (said *Graciana*) I freely give thee that which thou hast ever had in thy Memory ; for this if you please you may call me Generous, since in comparison of this Gift, to give away my Life, Estate, my Honor, all is nothing. Take her most fortunate of Men ; and if thy understanding can but soar so high as to value her worth, thou art the happiest of all mankind ; and with such a Jewel as here, I give and allow thee as much Wealth as comes to my share in this adventure.

Having thus said he was silent, as if he had laid a charm upon his Tongue ; but presently recollecting himself, What Jurisdiction (said he) have I over *Graciana*, to give her to another ? Or how can I dispose

pose of that to another which is none of my own ? *Graciana* is his, and so much his, that her affections to him can meet with no opposition ; or if there may intervene those obligations which she may think she owes me, from this time forward I disclaim and cancel them ; I give therefore to *Hippolito* nothing ; because I neither can nor dare do otherwise ; only I confirm the grant of my Goods made to *Graciana*, without desiring any other recompence, but only that she would be so credulous, and not think otherwise, but that my intentions were honest and just, and never aim'd at any other design but what was agreeable to her infinite Beauty and Perfections.

Here *Graciana*, turning to *Gasparino*, If any favours (Sir said she) were by me shewed to *Hippolito*, you must believe them to be Vertuous, and to proceed more from duty than affection. But now if they will give me leave freely to dispose of that which your Valour and Generosity hath obliged me withal. Here her Parents interrupted her, telling her she had free liberty to do as her discretion should direct her. For, which when she had return'd them her humble thanks with all duty and submission, I had rather incurr, said she, the censure of inconstancy, than to be tax'd with

with

with ingratitude ; and therefore Valiant *Gasparino*, my affection, hitherto so reserv'd and dubious, shall now declare it self, to be in your Favour ; I am yours, *Gasparino*, and will be yours till death, if the knowledge of some more deserving Beauty have not prevented my happiness.

Gasparino hearing these words was so transported with Joy, and in a manner in such an ecstasie that he knew not how presently to return *Graciana* an answer in any other dialect than by prostrating himself on his Knees to her, and kissing her fair hands, which he held so fast, and bath'd often with his tender and affectionate Tears. *Hippolito* likewise wept, but 'twas for Grief for the loss of *Graciana*. *Graciana's* Parents wept Tears of Joy and Gladness, while all the Standers by were full of admiration and astonishment.

Gasparino having recovered himself out of that deep ecstasie of Joy wherein he was lost, they all seated themselves at a small Banquet which *Graciana's* Friends had prepared. They were full of Mirth, and Jollity, exchanging multiplicity of kisses with each other, and thinking of their past misfortunes ; amongst the rest *Graciana* remembered a Song which *Gasparino's* Boy Sung in the Garden, a little before the
Turks

188 *The Generous Lover.* Nov. III.

Turks came and surpriz'd them ; which occasion'd her often to reflect upon her ingratitude, in not making a Suitable return to his affections ; but withal desired that his Boy might Sing it. He told her that Song was now quite out of date with him ; but to satisfy her request it should not be wanting ; so calling his Boy he commanded him to Tune his Instrument, and Sing that last Song which he Sung in the Garden : He readily obeyed his order and began.

The S O N G.

*Go, Treacherous hopes, by whose uncertain
Fire*

*I cherish my Tyrannical desire :
Love is a more uncertain Guest than Care,
And my Fate's such,
That it will cost as much
To Love as to Despair.*

*Tis true, our Lives are but a long disease,
Made up with real care and seeming ease.
Ye Gods that such uncertain Favours give,
Oh, tell me why,
It is so hard to dye,
And such a Task to live !*

This

This being ended the Bishop of that City was then present, who with his Benediction and Licence conducted them to the Cathedral Church, and instantly Married them. *Pyrrhus* and *Albina* were reconciled to the Church, who seeing it was imposible to be *Gasparino's* Wife, contented her self in matching with *Pyrrhus*, to whom *Gasparino* gave Generous and Noble Gifts: in conclusion all remain'd fully contented and satisfied; and the fame of *Gasparino* spread it self through all *Italy*, and many other places under the name of, *The Generous Lover.*

THE

THE
Libertine :A
NOVEL.

THe Sun having run his due Course in a hot Summers day, the Evening being approach'd, an Ancient Gentleman , accompanied with his Wife, his Son a little Youth, a Daughter about Seventeen Years of Age, with a Maid Servant, having been taking a Walk for their Recreation upon the Banks of the River of *Toledo*, and were returning home, the Night was clear, and bright, and the Hour Eleven, the High-way large, and their Paces slow, that they might not lose, through weariness, those Pleasures which the delightful Meadows, lying by the River side, afforded them , and depending

pending on the security, which the strict course of Justice, and the well dispos'd Humour of the People of that City warranted, the good old Gentleman walk'd leasurely along with his small Family, not the least surmizing of being disturbed; but far from the thoughts of having any Disaster happening to 'em. But in regard Misfortunes commonly approach, when least thought of, contrary wholly to his Expectation, and quite beyond all imaginary Conceptions, there happen'd one, who not only disturb'd their present Recreation, but gave them great cause to weep many Years after.

There was a Gentleman of that City about the Age of two and twenty, whose great Wealth, his nobleness of Blood, but chiefly his depraved Disposition, and too much assum'd Liberty, together with the loose, Extravagant Libertines, like himself, which he kept Company withal, led him to commit such Obscene Actions, as ill became his Person and Quality, and entituled him only to Audaciousness and Insolency: This Gentleman, (whose Name, for Modesty sake we shall conceal, and call *Octavio*) with four other Frolicksome young Gentlemen full of Jollity, were upon the top of a Hill singing to their Instruments in a
mad

mad merry Humour, these following Verses.

*How Sweet, and how Free is the Plunder,
When we care not for Jove, nor his Thunder?
When we enter a Town,
Then the Lasses go down,
And to their Overcomers lie under.*

*Why then should we study to Love, and
look Pale,
And make long Addresses to what will
grow Stale?*

*If her Fingers be soft, long, and slender,
When once we have made her surrender,
She will handle a Flute,
Better far than a Lute,
And make what was hard to grow tender.
Why then, &c.*

*If her Hair of a dark Chest nut brown is,
And her Belly as soft as the Down is,
She will fire your Heart,
In performing her Part,
With a Flame, that more hot than the Town is.
Why then, &c.*

When

*When the Houses with Flashes do glitter,
And we sever the Sweet from the Bitter;
And in that bright Night
We can take our Delight,
No Damsel shall scape but we'll hit her.
Why then should we study to Love, and
look Pale,
And make long Addresses to what will
grow Stale ?*

As the old Gentleman had reach'd the Foot of the Hill, these Libertines were coming down; and meeting with this harmless Family, they in a very rough manner, Vizarding their own Faces, threw up the Veils of the Mother, Daughter, and Maid: The old Gentleman was not a little offended at the Action, and reprehended them exceedingly for it; telling them, they did not understand the Rules of Civility, nor indeed good Manners, to offer any such Abuse to Ladies, which were Modest, and not for their turn.

They minded not his Discourse, but instead of giving him a suitable Answer, they Retorted upon him with Scoffs, and Scorns, repeating, *If her Hair of a dark Chest-nut Brown is, &c.* and without farther Misdemeanour, went forward on their way: But the great Beauty of *Almeria*, which *Octavio* had

had seen; (for that was the Name of this Gentleman's Daughter) began to rouse his unbridled Passion in such a manner, that he resolv'd to Enjoy her, in despite of all Inconveniences that might ensue; and to that purpose, consulting with his Companions, they all return'd back immediately, with an Intention, and full Resolution, to force her from her Parents: They being willing to please *Octavio*; for in *Spain*, rich Men which are lewdly and Licenciously given, shall never want those that will Canonize their evil Actions; and therefore in their Communication, they approved of the design, and resolved to put it in Execution after this manner.

They put on their Vizards, and with their Swords drawn, they faced about, and with a swiftness of foot, presently overtook those, who were rejoycing for their late Delivery: *Octavio* seiz'd upon *Almeria*, and taking her up in his Arms, ran away with her, with all the speed imaginable, she having no strength to defend her self from this Violence; for the sudden Passion that possess'd her, was so prevalent, that it took away the use of her Voice, which Fear and Amazement had rendred useles; and Swooning away, she was deprived of all her Senses: Her Father made what resistance he could, and

and called out as loud as his Voice would permit him, the Mother Shriek'd, her little Brother Cry'd, and the Maid Wept, and tore her Hair; but neither their Crys nor Shrieks were heard, nor could their Tears move Compassion, for the Solitariness of the place, the late Season of Night, and the Resolute Cruelty of those Debauchees that assisted their wicked Design: So that the one went away Jocund and Merry, and the other went home Sad and Pensive.

Osorio return'd home to his House, rejoicing at his Adventure; but the Parents of *Almeria* with great Affliction, and full of Despair, were without Sight, and destitute of all the rest of their Senses, wanting their Daughter's Eyes, which were the Light of theirs; they were very melancholy, lacking the Sweet, and Facetious Company of *Almeria*; they were in Confusion, and Amazement, not knowing which way to steer their Course; whether they should give timely notice of their Misfortune to the Ministers of Justice, or else conceal it: They were loth to be the principal Instrument of publishing their own shame, and Dishonour; nor did they know on whom to complain, but their own bad Fortune. *Osorio* in the mean time, being subtil, and Crafty, brought *Almeria*

home to his Father's House, who having lock'd her up in his own private Lodging, while she was yet in a Swoon; and the better to keep her ignorant of the way he had brought her, he Blindfolded her with a Handkerchief, that she could not take notice of the Streets she had pass'd through, nor of the House, or Room whereunto he had brought her.

Before *Almeria* had recovered her Swooning, *Octavio* had satisfied his Lustful Passion; for the unchast violence of Youth seldom or never, respect either time, or place, but runs on headlong, whither their unbridled Lust leads 'em, letting loose the Reins to all Licentiousness: Having the light of his understanding thus blinded, he robb'd *Almeria* in the dark, of the best Jewel she had; for the Sins of Sensuality reach no farther for the most part than the accomplishing and fulfilling of them: *Octavio* presently resolv'd to turn the abus'd *Almeria* out of doors; and it entred into his Imagination to lay her out in the Street, being thus in a Swoon as she was; but going to execute this Villainous purpose, he perceived she was newly come to her self: At what time recovering her Voice; Heavens defend me, (said she) where am I! What Darkness is this? What Clouds have
com-

compassed me about? What ails me? How comes this to pass? Then calling out for her Father, and Mother, and neither answering, she repeated a thousand Lamentations in the dark; and calling to remembrance how she was assaulted, and forced violently from her Parents, she at last took fast hold of *Octavio's* Hands: If thou art such a one (she cry'd) whose Soul will admit of Entreaty, I earnestly beseech thee, since thou hast thus triumph'd over my Honour, gain the Victory likewise over this wretched Life; Deprive me of it, I conjure thee immediately; for it is but requisite I should lose the one, since I cannot regain the other: And consider with thy self, that the rigour of that Cruelty which thou hast exercis'd upon my Weakness, will be tempered and mollified by the pity thou wilt extend towards me, by taking away the Life which thou hast now made so deplorable and miserable.

These mournful Arguments which *Almeria* alledg'd to *Octavio* left him so amazed, and confused, that the horridness of the Crime seemed to make him sensible of the wrong he had committed, that he knew neither what to say or do; so that his silence made *Almeria* think at first, it might be some Apparition that was with her; but

O 3

when

when she found that she touched a real Body, and calling to remembrance the violence used to her walking along with her Parents, and duly weighing the greatness of her Misfortune, with the very Thoughts thereof, she return'd anew to vent those words which her many Sighs, and Tears had before interrupted.

“Bold Ravisher, (she cry'd) thy Actions
“make me judge thee to be one of no
“great Years; I pardon thee the Violation
“thou hast offer'd me, and forgive thee
“that foul Offence thou hast committed,
“provided thou wilt here solemnly Swear
“to me, that as thou hast cover'd my Honour
“with this Darkness, so likewise that
“you would bury it in perpetual Silence,
“never to acquaint any person with it : It
“is but a small satisfaction, I crave at your
“Hands, in comparison of so great an Injury;
“yet to me, (considering this perplex'd State
“I am now in) it will be the greatest that I can
“beg of you, or you can grant me : Consider besides, That I
“never beheld your Face, nor ever do desire
“to see it; for though I cannot but desist
“upon the offence, yet will I endeavour
“to forget the Offender : Neither will I imprint
“in my Memory, the Image of the Author of my
“Woe, but pour forth
“my

"my Complaints between my self and Hea-
 "ven, without desiring the World to be
 "my Auditours, for they are not Compe-
 "tent Judges of such Cases, as to their real
 "effects; but are rather Commentatours to
 "cast ill Reflections upon 'em. I must con-
 "fess my Passion has made me guilty of Ig-
 "norance, in uttering these Verities to you,
 "which indeed ought to be grounded up-
 "on the experience of more Years, than e-
 "ver I had the honour to arrive to; yet I
 "may make that Interpretation, that Grief
 "and Sorrow, doth with equality, fix, and
 "dissolve the Tongue of the Afflicted; one
 "while amplifying the received Injury,
 "that others may be the more induced to
 "believe it; another while burying it in
 "the Grave of Silence, the better to hin-
 "der the application of Remedies: So that
 "whether I express my self in Words, or
 "remain silent, I flatter my self with those
 "Perswasions, that you cannot be wanting
 "of Motives to believe me, or of Remedies
 "to supply me; since that Incredulity in
 "you, would but imply Ignorance, and to
 "afford me Relief, be an Impossibility:
 "yet may your Charity extend so far, as to
 "grant me some ease in this my Affliction,
 "whereby no place may be vacant to en-
 "tertain Despair, since the expence of it

“will amount to so little a charge: Yet flat-
“ter not your self with vain, or false hopes,
“that Time shall allay, or pacify that just
“Rage, which I shall ever bear towards
“thee; neither make farther Attempts up-
“on my lost Honour, since thy Designs in
“that Enterprize will be wholly frustrated;
“for having already satisfied thy base Lust,
“I should think thy evil Concupiscence
“might be less inflam’d: Impute this your
“Offence to heat of Passion, committed
“against Reason, by Accident; and I will pro-
“nounce that rash Judgment upon my self,
“that I was not Born, and brought forth
“into the World, but to prove Unfortu-
“nate; convey me therefore presently into
“the Street, or at least, near unto the great
“Church, from which place I can take Di-
“rections to my own Home: Promise me,
“and Swear likewise, not to pursue me, or
“be at all inquisitive after my Habitation,
“Name, or Parents; for I would not have
“them so unhappy as to bear a share in my
“Misfortunes: Return me a suitable an-
“swer, I beseech you, to these my Re-
“quests. If that fear doth possess thy Spi-
“rits, that thy Voice should discover thy
“self to me, then answer me in Silence.

All

All the answer *Oſavio* return'd to the long Discourse of the afflicted *Almeria*, was no other than a kind Embracing her, as if he intended to renew the Combats of his Amorous heat ; which being perceived by *Almeria*, ſhe us'd that force and resistance which her tender Years render'd her capable of, and defended her self with that Courage, and Resolution, using her Feet, Hands, and Teeth ; then with her Tongue broke out into these following Expressions.

“Know, Cowardly Traytor as thou art,
“and basest of all Humane Kind, without
“either Fear, or Shame, who ere thou art,
“those Wrongs which thou hast offer'd
“me, thou mightest have exercised upon a
“Stock, or Stone ; for I was bereft of ei-
“ther Sence, or Motion; the Conquest,
“and Triumph of this Nights Victory can-
“not but redound to thy Reproach: As
“for thy second Ignoble, and Filthy At-
“tempt, thou shalt never obtain thy un-
“lawful Desires, unless thou takest away
“my Life : Though thou robbed'st me of
“that precious Jewel, when surprized by a
“Swooning Fit, and acted thy lewdness
“with Pleasure, and Delight ; yet know
“that now my Spirits are return'd to my
“assistance, thou shalt sooner conquer my
Life,

“Life than gain the Victory over my Honour; for if I, now being able to make resistance, should yield to thy abominable Lust, thou mightest then very well conjecture, and boast, that the Ecstasie I was in, was only feigned, when thou wast so audacious and insolent in the operating my utter ruine and destruction.

But in conclusion, *Almeria* used so strong an opposition, and made such a manful resistance, that the Strength, and Courage, and with it, the vigorous Desires of *Ocavio*, were weakened; for the Insolence he had us'd to *Almeria*, had no other rise, than from a violent Lascivious Impetuousness; from which root never springs that true Love which is permanent; but instead of that heat of Love, there remains only Repentance, and a coldness of Affection to second it. *Ocavio*, then waxing some degrees cooler, but much more weary, without uttering a Word, left *Almeria*, to her self in his Chamber, and went to hunt out for his *Libertinian* Companions, to consult and advice with them, which Method he should take, both for his and *Almeria's* satisfaction, and safety.

Almeria perceiving her self alone, and fast lock'd up, arose from the Bed, and went groping about the Room with her Hands,

Hands, to search out for a Door to get out, or a Window to leap down. She first found the Door, but lock'd too strong for her to open it; then she found out the Window, which she unhaspt, and open'd the Wooden Shutters, and by the light of the Moon that shone so clear and bright, being in its plenitude, she perceived the Chamber richly Hung, the Bed gilded, and all the Furniture very magnificent; that it seem'd rather the Apartment of a Prince, than of a private Gentleman; she summ'd up the number of the Chairs, which were very rich, and the Escritores, and Cabinets which were very gay and stately: She took notice of the Door, and the Pictures which adorn'd the Room, though she could not well discern the Figures whereby to describe 'em; the Window was very large, and strongly secured with Iron Bars, a defence against Banditties, and Robbers, which are there very frequent: The Prospect before the Window was a lovely Garden, with a pleasant Fountain in the middle, adorn'd with all that Art and Nature was capable of: Near it was a little Wilderness, in the center whereof was a Spring, whose Water was received in a Cistern of Alabaster, which was held by the Statue of a Nymph cut in White Marble: Near un-
to

to it stood a row of Orange Trees, whose Fragrant smell was very comfortable : The Walls of the Garden which enclosed it were very high ; many Difficulties stood in opposition to hinder her escape, and the view that she had taken of every thing induced her to believe, that the Owner thereof must needs be some Magnifico, and not one of an ordinary Extraction : Wandering some time round the Apartment, at length she spied a Table Book, richly Bound in Seals Skin, neatly over-laid with Silver, and curiously wrought, and engraved, with a large Silver Pin belonging to it, which lay upon a Cabinet that stood near to the Window : She took it and put it up in her Pocket, not out of any ill design of Robbery ; but being inspired to promote a discreet Design, which her Thoughts prompted her to : Having secured it, she shut the Window, leaving it as she had found it, and returned back to the Bed, expecting what kind of end such a bad beginning would produce.

To her thinking, it was not much above half an hour after, that she heard a Door open, and some person coming to her, and without so much as speaking one Word, with an Handkerchief Blindfolded her ; and taking her by the Arm, took her out of the
Room,

Room, and shut fast the Door after him. This Person was *Octavio*, who though he had been upon the search for his fellow *Libertines*, yet he was not altogether willing to find them, or give them the least intelligence of that Nights Transactions; and therefore resolv'd to acquaint 'em, that repenting himself of that ill Act, and being mov'd with the Virgin's Tears, left her in the Mid-way: Having thus recollected himself, he return'd back with all speed, to convey *Almeria*, near to the Great Church, according to her own Directions: Before the Morning was approach'd too far, and to avoid the inconveniency of detaining her till the Night following; in which Interval of time, he resolved to exercise no more Violence, nor give any other occasion to discover himself. Having conducted her to the place appointed, he told her in a kind of broken Language, and with a counterfeit Voice, She might then go securely to her own Habitation; and that none should follow her to espy where she went; so left her to untie the Handkerchief which he had bound about her Eyes; which before she could loosen, he was got far enough out of her sight.

Almeria

Almeria being now at Liberty, she made all the haste she could, still looking behind her, at every step she fetch'd; going to her Father's House, she found her Parents amaz'd, and astonish'd, and so far from preparing themselves to go to Bed, that they had not so much as entertain'd the least thought of taking any Rest: When they saw her, they ran to her with open Arms, and Embrac'd her, and indulgently received her. Tears of Joy had furnish'd their Eyes, and their Tongues could not express their Gladness, for the present, their Hearts being so transported within them: But *Almeria's* Heart being loaded with Passion, and overwhelm'd with Grief, besought her Parents to withdraw into a private Room, and there, in a few Words she gave them an account of what had befalln her, and her unfortunate Success, with all other Circumstances belonging to it, but could not by any means discover the person that robbed her of her Honour: She acquainted them with all she had beheld in that Famous Theatre, wherein was Acted that Woful Tragedy of her Misery; the pleasant Garden, and Fountains, the Cabinets, the Bed, and Hangings of rich Arras; and last of all, she shewed them the fine Table Book, which she had brought from thence
with

with her : She likewise told 'em, though she did not desire to come to the knowledge of him, who was the Offender ; yet if they thought it convenient to have him discover'd by the means of that Table Book they might do it, by causing it to be publickly proclaim'd, that he who had lost such a Table Book might have it restor'd at such a place, as the Party that lost it should appoint : So by knowing the Owner of it, they might both know the House, and likewise this *Libertine*. But (*Almeria's* Father reply'd) your Advice, Dear Child, is very pertinent, and would take good effect, were it put in Execution, if the Subtilty, and Craftiness of the World, now in these days, did not make any opposition : For, in all probability, such a Trifle as that may not suddenly be miss'd ; but, perhaps if it should, they would set no great value on it, especially such an Owner, as you describe this *Libertine* to be, and when he recollects himself, that the Person which was with him in his Apartment took it away, he will rather desire to have it Conceal'd than Divulg'd.

Her Father therefore advis'd her to keep it secure, for perhaps (said he) in process of time, thou may'st have occasion to make use of it ; for as it has been a Wit-
ness

ness of thy Dishonour, may at last be
 an Evidence to posterity of Justice, and
 revenge that, which thou hast so
 lately received: I tell thee, Dear Child,
 that the least Grain of publick Dishonour
 lies heavier upon us, than a ponderous
 weight of secret Infamy; *True Dishonour*
consists in Sin, and true Honour in Vertue.
 The Powers Divine are offended with our
 Sayings, Doings, and Desires; and since
 that thou neither in Thought, Word, or
 Deed, hast provok'd the Divine Ven-
 geance, esteem thy self Vertuous; for I
 shall ever have that Charity for thee; and
 continue to thee still a Kind, and Indulgent
 Father. With these Prudential Reasons,
 did this old Gentleman comfort up his
 Daughter *Almeria*; and her Mother Embrac-
 ing her, confirmed what her Father had
 cherish'd her withal; and desired her not
 to let any Sorrow, or Grief disturb her
 Mind, for she retain'd the same Affection
 for her now, as she had formerly. Where-
 upon, she burst forth into showres of Tears,
 and often did abscond herself, and through
 Modesty's Promptitude, she betook her self
 to a Private, and Retired Course of Life,
 under the Shelter, and Protection of her
 Parents.

Osavio

Ottavio in this Interval, being return'd home, and sitting down in his Chamber, as he cast his Eye upon the Cabinet, he mis-
 sed his Table Book, but presently he imagin'd, the Party that he brought home might take it away with her; he made slight
 of it, and never made any enquiry after it: Many days before, *Ottavio* had determined
 to Travel into *Italy*, for his Father who had been there in his Minority, perswaded
 him to go, instructing him, that they could not attain to true Gentility, who had not
 gain'd it by Experience in Travel; *Ottavio* put on that Resolution, to be Conformable
 to the Will of his Father, whom he knew would set him forth in a good Equipage;
 he gave him Bills of Exchange payable at Sight, for good round Sums of Money,
 for all those places, whether he intended; so that he, and two of his *Libertinian*
 Companions, prepared for their Journey: They had taken up three Places in the *Italy*
 Coach, to go for *Rome*, *Genoa*, and *Naples*; there were three Persons in the
 Coach, besides themselves, which had taken Place in the Coach, a Lady, a Young
 Gentleman, and an University Scholar. Amongst all their Discourse *Ottavio* enquired
 what *Italy* afforded for the satisfaction of Gentlemen? The Stranger that was in
 P the

The Coach, told him it was a place very Pleasant, Ingenious, and Witty, for he had been there, and could give a very good account of it: As for the People, many of 'em were of an Effeminate Disposition, he told him, for he had heard many Stories from them, which he could relate, if it would not tire out their Patience: *Octavia*, and the Lady told him, he would highly oblige them, and it would prove a very Diverfitive Recreation: The Gentleman informed them, that he was willing to contribute any Discourse to the good Companies Satisfaction, and should esteem it as a great Honour, if what he was to relate, should receive their kind Acceptance; so that not to hold them any longer in Suspence, he related the first that came in his Mind, and directed himself to 'em all.

In one of the Cities of *Italy*, there lived a Person, a Man, of whose Nature, if one might judge by the Complexion of his Face, that he was a greater Servant to *Bacchus*, than to the Priests of *Diana*; he had Married a Woman of a large Fortune, and good Reputation, and who govern'd her Family and Children very discreetly, at which her Husband was much satisfied: One day it was told him, that his Wife was fall'n very Sick, being taken suddenly, and was

in very great danger of ending her days; whereat he appear'd as sorrowful as a Man might be, and in great Diligence made haste to her relief. He found her in that desperate Condition, that she stood in more need of a Priest to absolve her, than of a Physician to cure her; and therefore he expressed for her the greatest Lamentation in the World; and the better to dissemble his Grief, he spoke faintly, and with a hollow accent in the Throat, in Imitation of his dying Wife; and that Painter must be a good Artist, that could lively represent the sadness of his Looks and Countenance.

After that he had paid all the Services to her that possibly he could, she then desired that a Crucifix should be brought her; which the good Man perceiving, he cast himself on the Bed, and thinking his Wife past all hopes of recovery, he cryed out, and labouring with his Tongue, did Expostulate, O Heavens! What shall I do, I shall lose my poor Wife, I shall become the most wretched, and most unhappy Man in the World! With divers other Complaints. At the last, when he perceived there was no Body in the Room but his dying Wife, and a young Chamber-Maid, beautiful enough, and very amiable, he

called her softly to him, and said to her, Sweet-heart, I am ready to die my self, to see thy Mistress in this Condition; I am so over-whelmed with Grief, I know neither what to say or do, but only to recommend my self to thee, and to Desire thee to take Care of my House and Children: Here take these Keys, and look well after what I commit to your Charge, for I shall not be able to look after them any more.

The poor Girl being mov'd with Compassion to hear him express these Words, did endeavour to comfort him what she could, and did beseech him, that he would not enter into so great a Despair; for if she must lose her Mistress, she hoped she should not lose her good Master also. He replied, Sweet-heart, it is impossible, for I find my self to be a dying Man, and not for this World; See how the cold Sweat stands upon my Brow; put your Cheek unto mine, and your Lip unto my Lip; and speaking these Words, he forc'd his Hand into her Breast, whereat the Maid seem'd very Coy, but he desired her to let all Fears vanish, for if she had any hopes of his Recovery, she must approach nearer to him, and with those Words, he took her in his Arms, and threw her on the Bed. His Wife who had not spoken in two days before, did with

her

VI. vol.
Nov. IV

The Libeatine. 213

her weak Voice, begin to cry out as loud as possible she could. Ah, ha! what are you doing? I am not as yet Dead; and threatening them with her hand! O you wicked Creatures! I am alive still, and hope I shall not die yet.

Her Husband and the Chamber-maid hearing her Voice, did immediately rise; but she was so extremely incensed against them that her Anger consum'd all the moisture of her Catarrh, which was the load she was perplex'd withal before, & caus'd her to choke in the Throat, and could not utter so much as one Word; but now she gave them all the Opprobrious Language she could imagine. And from that Minute she began to recover, and perpetually did reproach her Husband for making so much of his Chamber-maid.

Having ended his Story, the Gentleman applied himself to the Lady, Madam (said he) you may see the Hypocrisie of Men, who for a little pleasure, they forget all the Sorrow and Pains their poor Wives endure; but we must have so much Charity for him as to believe he thought it the only Remedy for her Recovery; for seeing all his Kindness and Affection could not pull her out of that languishing Condition,

he was resolv'd to try this Experiment, which indeed proved a Catholicon. Indeed Sir, (replyed the Lady) I can't blame you for harburing so much Charity for your own Sex; but had it been my Case, I should not have rise only out of my Bed, but out of my Grave also, to be revenged on such a Husband. What wrong (replyed the Gentleman) Madam did he do to comfort himself a little after he thought she was Dead; for I hope there is none of the Company here Ignorant, that the Bonds of Matrimony continue no longer than Life, and then the Knot is untied. But how untied, (said the Lady?) 'Tis true, the Obligation of the Oath is of no effect any more; but a good Husband, would always preserve the Obligation of Love; he had soon laid aside his Mourning, who could not have Patience, till Death had put a period to her Life.

By this time they were well forward on their Journey, and the Gentleman told them, he could relate to them a Story which was contrary to this, wherein the Woman was very Diligent to create a Kindness from him. After they had all return'd their thanks, they earnestly intreated him to furnish them with what he was pleas'd to relate: whereupon he proceeded as followeth.

In

In short, there liv'd an Apothecary, whose Name I shall conceal, who had espoused a Virtuous Woman, a good House-wife, and beautiful enough to give him content. But as he tasted of divers Druggs, so he did of divers Women, the better to please himself to Discourse of all Complexions. Whereat his Wife was so much concerned, that she lost all Patience; for he had slight of her, and lov'd her not so well as she expected. One day this Apothecary being in the Shop, and his Wife near at hand, where she consulted her self, she began to listen to his Discourse; there came so by one of his Gossips, a Woman of the City, and troubled with the same Disease his Wife was, and sighing to the Apothecary, O dear Sir! she said, I am the most fortunate Woman in the World: For I Love my Husband as well as I love my self, and perform whatever Obedience, or Duty binds me to him; but all my Labour is but lost, for he loves the most wicked, the most deformed, and the most nasty Slut in all the Town, better than he Loves me! I would therefore intreat you, good Neighbour, if you have in your Shop, any Drug that may serve to change his Complexion, that you would let me have it; for I am not well used by him; and I assure you,

...shall cost
...which ; but blue
...The Apothecary having a great desire
...Blasphem his Customer, said to her, that
...had a Powder, which if she put it in
...either boiled or roasted, and
...to her Husband, it would make
...the best and fullest Content-
...the World; the Woman being ve-
...that Miracly desired to
...it was, he represented to her
...only the Powder of Cantha-
...of which he had great store in his
...and before she went away, she
...him to prepare and weigh out
...that Powder for her, and she took
...as he knew would serve
...for which she afterwards
...and gave him many hearty
...being a strong
...and not taking too much of
...it, felt no great Alteration in himself, but
...the good effects of it
...The Wife of the Apothecary under-
...this Discourse, did think
...that she stood together
...as her Compani-
...the place where her
...the
...the
...to make
use

lost off it her self, the first opportunity she
 could find; which within three or four
 days after, she did; but her Husband de-
 sired her to make him some good Pottage,
 (for he was troubled with a great cold in
 his Stomach) She told him that something
 better would do better, and be more pro-
 fitable, wherefore he commanded her to
 go presently to the Market, and to buy
 some Mustard root, and to take Cinnamon
 and Sugar out of the Shop, and put in the
 Sauce, which she did accordingly, and
 did not forget the rest of the Powder,
 which he had given before part of it to
 her Companion; she put it in, without
 regard either of Weight or Measure. Her
 Husband eat heartily of the Meat she had
 prepared, and lik'd it very well, and not
 long afterwards found the Heat and Effects
 of it, which he thought to qualify with
 his Wife, which was impossible for him to
 do, for the Heat within him, and the Insti-
 gation, was so extraordinary, that he did
 not know how to turn him.
 When upon he perswaded his Wife she had
 poisoned him, and was very importunate
 to know of her what she had mixed with
 his Meat; she confessed the truth unto him,
 and withal assur'd him, that she had as
 much Occasion of that Receipt, as the
 Wa-

Woman, whom he prescrib'd it to for her Husband.

The poor Apothecary could not use any rigour to her, for the wrong she had done him, being at that time in so great an Extremity, but commanded her to go out of his sight, and send for his Brother Apothecary, in the same City, to desire him to take that Trouble upon him to give him a Visit, who administr'd to him all the cooling things that were effectual for his Recovery. In a short time he was well amended, and his Brother Apothecary did reprehend him very sharply for his rashness, that he should be guilty of so much folly, as to advise another to take those Drugs, which he would not make use of himself; and that the good Woman his Wife, had done no more, than what she ought to do, to procure to her self that Love from him, which she so much desir'd. At length, the poor Man was forced to overcome his folly with Patience, and to acknowledge it was but just to make that Ridiculous Experiment fall upon himself which he had prepared for another.

Now Madam, (said the Gentleman) in my opinion the Love of this Woman, was as indiscreet as it was great. Do you call that

that Love, Sir, to her Husband (reply'd the Lady) to make him suffer so much torment, in a fond hope that she might receive some pleasure from him? I do believe Madam, (said the Gentleman) that she had no other intention than to recover her Husband's love, which she conceived, it not to be altogether lost, yet certainly to be gone astray; for to obtain so great a blessing, a Woman ought to leave nothing undone to accomplish it; the Lady told him she thought it her Judgment, that no Woman ought to give her Husband any thing either to eat or drink, without advice from others or her own Experience, whether it may prove hurtful; but ignorance ought to be excus'd, in regard it was a Woman, that was blinded with the passion of Love, and are allowed to be weaker Vessels; they all laugh'd heartily at the Repartees between 'em, and returned the Gentleman many thanks for his diverting of them; and now being arriv'd at their Journeys end, for that Stage, they allighted, and call'd for a Dinner, where we will now leave 'em, and return to *Almeria*.

Osorio had no resentments of what had pass betwixt himself and *Almeria* but appear'd very Jocund and Merry, while she
in

in the interim led a sedentary Life in the House of her Parents, with all possible retiredness, not permitting any person to visit her, least any discovery should be made of her misfortunes; in this Solitariness within a few Months, she perceived, that she was oblig'd to confine her self, and to be obscure from all Eyes, except those which were continually with her. She saw it was convenient to live Cloystered up, finding to her sorrow, her unhappy condition, in having an Infant, without any Husband, a misfortune which occasion'd those many Tears, which were before a little mitigated, but now sprung forth a fresh like running Fountains; those Sighs which for a while remain'd calm and quiet, rise again like fierce and tempestuous winds that blow against each other; her Mother us'd all the diligence, that her Maternal care could furnish her with to allay the violence of her passion, but all her gentle persuasions could not afford her sorrows any relief.

Time fled away with a swift Wing, and the time of her Delivery was come; which was carry'd with that Secrecy that she would not intrust any Midwife; but her Mother taking that Office upon her, soon performed it, and brought into the World, a little young

young Son, one of the loveliest and beautifullest Babes that Nature could produce; which as it was born with wariness and secrecy, so it was conveyed with the like Circumspection to a Country Village, where he continued four years; at the end whereof under the denomination of Nephew, his Grand-father brought him home to his own house, where he was bred up very well in that which his Minority render'd him capable of; *Nicola* (for so was the Child call'd) was of a fair Complexion, a delightful Countenance, and a sweet disposition together with a quick Wit, that in all those Actions which he performed, in that tender age, he gave apparent demonstrations, that his Extraction was of noble parentage; so that his Wit, Beauty, and pretty Behaviour, Created To great an affection in his Grand-father and Grand-mother, that they esteem'd their Daughters misfortune, to be a happiness; she having furnished them with such a Grand-child. As he went through the Streets, some praised his Beauty, others bled the Mother that bare him, some the Father that begat, and others those that had brought him up, and had bestowed upon him such good Education. With this applause of those that knew him and

of

of those which were Strangers, the Child grew to be seven years of Age; in which time he had learn'd to read *Spanish* and *Latin*, and to write a very good hand; and made so great improvement at his years, that he was the admiration of all his instructours.

Now it happen'd one day that the Child was sent to visit a Kinswoman of his Grand-mothers, and it was his chance to pass through a Street where some Gentlemen were running Careers with their Horses, which the Child staying to look upon, and for his better conveniency of seeing them, ran cross the Street, from one side to the other, just in such an ill Con-juncture of time, that he could not avoid a Horses running over him; whose rider with all the strength he had, was not able to stop in the Fury of his Career, so that he left him sprawling on the Ground for dead, much Blood issuing out of his Mouth.

This sad mischance had scarce happened, when an Ancient Gentleman, who was beholding the Career, with extraordinary agility leapt from his Horse, and taking the Child out of the Arms of him that held him, into his own, neither considering his own Grey hairs, nor regarding his Authority, which was great, he hastned home

to

to his own House, and sent his Servants immediately for a Chirurgion; many Gentlemen followed him, grieving and lamenting at the sad accident that had befallen so sweet and fair a Child. The ill news presently was dispersed abroad, that the Child which had received the harm, was *Nicola*, the Nephew of such a Gentleman; naming his Grand-father; this report went from one to another till it reached at last the Ears of his Grand-father and Grand-mother, and his disconsolate retired Mother *Abneria*; who being fully and truly inform'd of this unhappy Accident, ran immediately out of Doors, in great distraction, to see what was become of their only Darling.

They quickly understood, the Gentleman that took care of him, was well known to be a person of great Quality in the City; therefore flying thither in a hurry betwixt love and fear, they arrived at the Gentlemans house, just at that instant when the Child was under the Chirurgion's hands. The Gentleman and his Wife, who were the owners of the House, entreated those whom they supposed to be the Childs Parents, not to weep, which would do the Child no good but prejudice. They began to be a little chearful when the Chirurgion,

on, who was one Famous for his skill, having dressed him, inform'd 'em that the wound was not so Mortal, as at first he imagin'd it to have been.

When *Nicola* was dress'd and laid to sleep, his Grand-father began to give the Master of the house thanks, for the great Care and Charity he had extended towards his Nephew ; to which the Gentleman reply'd that he had no occasion to thank him ; intimating to him that when the child fell, he perceived so much of his Son's Physiognomy in the Face of the Child, that it mov'd him to pity and Compassion, to take care for that which represented one that he lov'd so tenderly ; moreover he told him he should be kindly entertain'd in his House till the Chirurgeon had fully compleated the Cure, and that he should not want whatever his house could afford him, that was needful and necessary for him ; his Wife, who was a fine, noble and well accomplish'd Lady, repeated many words to the same effect, somewhat more enlarging and endearing her promises.

The Grand-father and Grand-mother of the Child did much admire at this their wonderful Charity and Love, but the Mother much more, for her mournful Spirit being in some measure Comforted by the Chirur-

Chirurgian, observing words, the diligent
 ly observed the Lodging where the Son
 lay, and by manifest signs and tokens
 clearly perceiv'd that it was the Room,
 which was appointed to her Honour, and
 beginning to give misfortune. And this
 it were too long to tell. And when
 it was, she was remembered the Figure and
 Form of the window, the Windows which
 were strongly fortified, which looked into
 the Garden, but which was the
 greatest curiosity she observ'd, was the
 Bed; which gave her that assurance, that it
 was the Room which provided a Tomb for her
 Virginity, and moreover that the same
 Cabinets wherein; by the Table Book
 which she carried away with her, remain-
 ed still in the place where she
 left it; which by the number of the Sheets
 certified that to be in the right by reason
 she had retained the account of them in
 her Memory ever since she was led blind
 folded out of that House into the Street.
 When she returned home, she gave a
 large account to her Mother of these pa-
 sages. And this discreet Woman, inform-
 ed her father, whether this Gentleman where
 her Nephew lay, had a Son, or no?
 And she said that her Son, whom the Story
 calls Othello, was in London, and at that time
 in

in *Italy*; and so summing up the time, that he had bin absent from *Spain*, they saw that it agreed with the age of the Child; the Grand-mother gave notice of all this to her Husband, and betwixt them two and *Almeria* their Daughter, they agreed to wait with Expectation, to see how the divine powers would be pleased to dispose of the Child, who within Fifteen days was out of danger of his received hurt, and at the end of thirty, was upon his Feet, and of ability to walk up and down the Chamber; in all which time, he was visited by his Mother and Grand-mother, and was as indulgently made much of by the Gentleman and his Wife, the owners of the House, as if he had been their one Child.

Moreover, *Dona Traciana* (for so was the Gentleman's Wife call'd) Discour-sing with *Almeria*, told her this Child so much resembled a Son of her's who was in *Italy*, that she never looked upon him, but he put her in mind continually of him, that he was always harbour'd in her Thoughts; from which Words of hers, *Almeria* taking upon Occasion an opportunity, when she was alone, which in a little time after offer'd it self; Madam (said she) the day that my Parents heard of that sad Disaster their Nephew receiv'd, their credu-
lity

they advanc'd to that pitch, they verily imagin'd that the Divinity had wholly excluded them, and that all the orbicular Crosses had attended them; they conceiv'd that they had lost the light of their Eyes, whom they lov'd so dearly, and in such an extraordinary Passion of Love that by many degrees it exceeds that which Parents commonly bear to their own Children; but (as we usual say) that when Heaven decrees the Wound, it likewise prescribes for it a remedy. This Child has now tryed that Experiment, and hath found the Expedient in this House; and I my self can recollect my Memory, to inform me of some Transactions which I shall never cease to forget the longest day I have to live, and the last hour that I retain my Senses. I must now acquaint you, (Dear Madam) I am not of Ignoble Extraction, by reason my Parentage proves it to the contrary, and so have been all my Ancestors, whose Progeny with a meaner benevolence of Fortune have still happily supported their Honour and Reputation wheresoever they inhabit, being our selves, though fallen from their pristine Glory.

Dona Traciana was stricken both with wonder and suspence at *Almeria's* discourse, considering how feelingly her words came

from her, and could not give Credit, though she was witness of it, that so much discretion could be Comprehended in so few years, not judging her to be above Twenty years of Age ; so that without replying so much as one word, she stood expecting to hear what she would further express herself in, which was at length sufficient enough, to inform her of her Sons Lasciviousness, and Wantonness, and of her own dishonour, in the violation of her Virginity, of his hurrying of her away by force and violence, of his tying a handkerchief over her eyes, and of his bringing her to that very room wherein she now was, and giving her many demonstrations, and signal tokens, whereby she certainly knew that it was the same Chamber, which so strongly confirm'd her suspicion ; and furthermore, the better to confirm what she had related for truth, she pull'd out of her Pocket the Silver Table Book, which she had taken from off the top of the Cabinet : then she proceeded in this manner.

Madam, I hope the divine Powers, who were Eye-witnesses of the wrong which was offered to me, will in their due time revenge my cause, and afford me that relief and reparation of my Honour, as in due satisfaction and right I may claim that interest,
from

from the top of that Cabinet I took this Table Book, to reserve as a Mirror only to put me in mind of the injury I received, but not to imprecate a revenge for my misfortunes ; only Madam, I beg of you to exercise your Charity towards me, by assisting me with your comfortable and prudent Council, whereby I may the better be enabled to bear this my injured innocence with strength and patience, this Child (Madam) on whom you have extended the utmost of your Charity, may without any imposturous design claim an alliance to you, it being the off-spring of your own Son ; and for the disaster which befell it, it was Heaven's decree it should be so ordered, that by his being received into your House, his Mother might hope to find some redress in this her Calamity, if not the Remedy, which is most Convenient for the Curing of her misfortunes, yet at least the means in some measure to support and refresh her fainting Spirits.

Having said this, she fainted away in *Dona Traciana's* Arms, who like a noble Lady, in whom compassion and pity, flowed like a mighty stream, had scarce perceiv'd *Almeria* to faint, but she joyn'd her Cheeks to hers, bestowing so many Tears upon 'em, that there was no occasion

of springling any Water on her Face to revive her; while they both thus remain'd in this kind of ecstasie, it was *Dona Traciana's* Husbands Fortune to enter into the Room, leading *Nicola* in his Hand, who beholding *Traciana* Weep and *Almeria*, lying in a Swoun by her, he was amazed, and with great earnestness hastily enquired into the occasion of such a Scene of astonishment. The Child *Nicola* imbraced his Mother, as his Cozen, and his Grand-mother, as his Benefactress; and he likewise asked the occasion of their Weeping. Great and Strange Transactions I have to relate to you, reply'd *Traciana* to her Husband; the ultimate of it is, I can assure you, this Lady, which remains in this ecstasie, is your Daughter, and this loving Boy, your Grand-Child; this truth which I inform you of, was related to me by this young Lady, and the Physiognomy of this young-Child confirms it; having often both of us beheld in his Countenance the Lineaments of our own Son: If you give me intelligence of no more than this, Wife, (reply'd her Husband) I do not understand your meaning.

By this time *Almeria* had recovered her self, she lift up her Head, holding fast the Silver Table Book in her Hand, and seem-

ed

ed to be like *Niobe* turn'd into a Sea of Tears, all which put the Gentleman into a greater Confusion and Amazement than he was before, till *Traciana* had freed him from his surprize, by informing him what *Almeria* had imparted to her; so that at length he was as fully convinced, as if the whole had been proved, and attested by many substantial and credible witnesses; there-upon he comforted and imbraced *Almeria*, and kissed his Grand-child *Nicola*; and the same day dispatch'd a Post to *Italy*, requiring the immediate return of his Son home with all speed, intimating to him that he had concluded a Marriage for him, one that was Rich, Fair, and Beautiful; and such a Lady as was most proper and convenient for him, and very agreeable and suitable to his Condition, Person, and Quality; nor would they by any means permit *Almeria*, or consent, that either she or ~~her~~ Child should return back to her Fathers house, who were indeed beyond measure satisfied with the News of this good Success of their Daughter and only Child *Almeria*. They return'd very often infinite thanks to the divine Powers of granting them this opportunity in receiving so seasonable and happy a redress.

Nor was it long ere the Post hasted speedily from *Naples*, and *Ottavio* out of an eager, and fervent desire to enjoy so fair a Wife, with all those Accomplishments as his Father had represented to him; within two days after the receipt of his Father's Letters, occasion of passage being offer'd unto him for his return into *Spain*, taking hold of that opportunity he embark'd himself, with two of his *Libertinian* Companions, who had never left him; and with a prosperous Gale of Wind, in twelve days he safely arriv'd at *Barcelona*, and from thence (furnishing himself with good Post-Horses) in seven more he came to *Toledo*, and entred into his Father's House in such a brave, and gallant Equipage as did exceed many in that Country; his Parents rejoiced in great Measure to see him, after so long an Absence, and he was no less glad to find 'em in good health, after so long and tedious a Voyage and Journey.

Almeria, who kept herself in Obscurity, yet from a private Window had a full view, and prospect of him, that she might not transgress the Directions dictated to her by *Traciana*; she entred into a great Consternation with her self, being dubious what Effects this business would produce. *Ottavio's* fellow *Libertines* were very

ry willing, and desirous to return presently home to their respective Houses; but *Traciana* would by no means permit 'em, they being in some measure to be instrumental in effecting of her design. The Evening was near approaching when *Ottavio* arriv'd, and in the Interim of time that Supper was a providing, *Traciana* watch'd an opportunity, to discourse with her Sons two Companions, alone by her self; for it entred into her thoughts, that these must needs be two of those three, whom *Almeria* inform'd her of, which accompanied her Son *Ottavio* that Night when he carry'd her away; and with great, and earnest Intreaties she besought them to oblige her so far, and to give her that intelligence, Whether they did not remember, that her Son on such a Night, so many Years since, had carry'd away (by Violence) such a Virgin? For to be certain of the Verity of that Nights Transaction, so much concerned her, that upon it depended the Honour and Peace, not only of his Parents, but the whole Affinity of Kindred.

This she requir'd with so many Endearments, engaging her self solemnly to them, that the Discovery of it should be no ways prejudicial, but should remain in her Breast as great a Secret, as though it never had
been

been reveal'd. They were not a little surpriz'd at her Words, and acquainted her that it was not customary for Associates to declare each others Proceedings, or make any Discovery likewise of their Frolicks : But seeing she was so urgent, and they ignorant of the Emergency of the occasion, they thought fit to declare what their Memory could recollect; and were it not in so weighty a Cause, as she is pleas'd to express her self, they were liable to be branded for Betrayers of Secrets.

Then they acquainted her, that what she desir'd to be inform'd of, was of a certain truth, that them two, and another of *Osavio's* Friends were upon the Ramble one Night, in the Summer time, with a Resolution to Debauch some young Virgin, the next that opportunely offer'd for their purpose; and they did not know but that it might be the same Night, which she had nominated to them: At last they met with their Prize, which was a Young Lady, walking to take the Pleasure of the Evening, accompanied by her Father, Mother, and Attendants; her they Assaulted, and *Osavio* took her up in his Arms, and posted away with her, whilst the other three detained the rest of the Company, that they might not obstruct his Enterprize,
nor

nor any ways rescue her from his intended Proceedings. The next day following, *Octavio* inform'd them, that he convey'd her to his Lodging: What farther Progress he made, they were not acquainted with, neither were they so inquisitive, as to press him to any other Confession, more than what his own Voluntary Inclination prompted him to. This being all which they could relate, they hoped, if it gave her satisfaction, they had discharg'd their Duty, in Obedience to her Commands.

This Confession of theirs, was the Key which unlock'd the Door to all the Doubts and Scruples, which in such Cases offer themselves: And therefore, she put on that Resolution, to go on with the Design she had contriv'd, and to bring the Issue of it to a happy Conclusion: To effect it the better, a little before they went to Supper, *Octavio's* Mother went apart with her Son into another Chamber, and pulling a small Picture out of her Pocket very well drawn by a Curious Artist, put it into his Hands, saying withal, Son *Octavio*, I intend this Night to make you very welcome, and your Friends, with a very good Supper, and to entertain you with a very Pleasant, and Savory Dish, and for your Diversion, to propose to you a Bride; this is her true
Effigies;

Effigies; but withal, I must tell you, that you may consider the better upon it, what Nature, by her Defects, has been wanting to her Beauty, is superabundantly supplied to her in Vertues and Graces. She is Noble, Discreet, Worthy, and indifferently Rich; and since your Father, and my self have made choice of her for you, I hope you will place the greater esteem on her, and not be guilty of disobedience by your Refusal; for I can assure you, she is such an one, as is most proper, and worthy my Recommendation.

Octavio beheld the Picture with a searching, and judicious Eye; and after he had done viewing of it, If Painter's (said he) who commonly are us'd to be prodigal of their bestowing Beauty on those Faces which they deleneate, have been busie with Flattery in this Copy, I dare be confident to say, and may very well give Credit to it, that the Original must of necessity be made when Nature was in haste; and instead of perfection, has made use of nothing but surprizing Deformity. In truth, Madam, it is but just, that Children should obey their Parents in all their lawful Commands; but withal, it is likewise requisite, and necessary, that Parents should in some measure condescend to what is most agreeable, and suitable to their Childrens Dispositions;
for

for since the Bonds of Matrimony are not to be loosed, but by each other's departure from this Life; nor the Cord, which, like the *Gordian* Knot, be untied, but by the cold Hand of Death; it were convenient, and much to be desired of every Person, to have Wove in this Knot, where there is Nobleness, Vertue, Discretion, and Riches, to mix Beauty with it in stead of Deformity, which would make a compleat Composure, and make a more pleasant Mansion for Love to seat it self. Indeed, Madam, in obedience to my Father's Commands, and yours, I can perform my Duty by my Acceptance; and should all those Gifts, and Graces, which you are pleas'd to mention, meet in a happy Union; yet if the Physiognomy is not attractive, it will rather extinguish the flame of Love, than kindle the Affections.

For if Beauty, and good Features be wanting, Matrimony will soon halt, and become lame, and contradict Love which is its second Intention: Therefore, Dear Madam, as you are my Mother, by the Decrees of Heaven, I humbly beseech and beg of you, that you would not let your Maternal care be wanting, in granting me an Object that may create an Affection, and not smother it; for Married Lives are often accompanied with many Misfortunes,
and

and Inconveniencies which may usurp, and disturb their Quiet; and should Deformity then appear, all the little Pleasure, and Delight, which Mankind would enjoy, must immediately Vanish. If this Lady be Noble, Discreet, and Rich, she cannot want a Husband, that may happily be of a far more different temper than my self, and more suitable to her Humour, and Disposition; for some seek after Honour, others Riches, others Wisdom, and some for Beauty, of which last property I am one of that number: As for Honour, and Riches, thanks to the Gods, my Ancestors, and Parents, have furnish'd me with a good Competency of them, and it is only Beauty that can compleat my Felicity; one of a good Aspect, Brown Complexion, and well featured, and one on whom Nature has bestow'd some Pains, and Care in the Task she undertook: Such a one (Madam) I could freelier enjoy without Honour, or Wealth, than espouse those two chief Idols, which the World adores, than to let Beauty, and an entire Affection be wanting.

His Mother was very well satisfied with his earnest Motives, and strong convincing Arguments, which indeed carried on her Designs the better, and told him, since he was so much averse to the Match she had pro-

proposed, she would endeavour to procure such a Marriage for him, as should be answerable to his Desire, and desir'd that what she had said might not prove a torment to him, it being so easie to find out a Remedy, and disanul the former Contract and Agreement. *Ossavio* rendred her many thanks for her Care, and the hour of Supper being come, they immediately prepared to sit down; at what time the Father and Mother, *Ossavio*, and his two Friends, being already set at the Table, *Traciana*, after a Careless manner, as if her Memory had failed her, Bless me, quoth she! sure my mind is intoxicated, to place my self before all my Guests are seated? and one of my own Sex wanting, to whom I ought to be more obliging! go immediately, and desire *Almeria* to come and honour my Table, and to lay aside all Excuses, for here are none but Friends with me; thus far was her Designs carried on, and *Almeria* had receiv'd before of her, Instructions; a little space after, *Almeria*, with her Son in her Hand entred the Room, presenting on a suddain in her Person, all the Splendor and Beauty, that either Art or Nature could Contribute; she was very Rich attired, adorn'd with Pearls and Diamonds, on her Head a Coronet of Ribbands, Tufts
of

of Feathers intermixed with Rubies, and other precious Stones which were interwoven, with them. They cast so great a Lustre that she dazl'd the Eyes of all that beheld her.

Almeria was of a Facetious Disposition, an affable Temper, and of a quick and lively Apprehension ; two Maid Servants led the way, with two Wax Tapers in Silver Candlesticks ; when they beheld so rare a Master-piece of Nature, the more they look'd the more they were astonish'd, and all rose up to pay their Obedience, as if she had been some Deity sent from above.

Almeria, with a pleasant Deportment, and a serene Carriage, Gracefully saluted, with Modesty, the whole Company, and *Traciana* taking her by the Hand, placed her by her ; the Youth *Nicola*, was seated by his Grand-father. *Ottavio* was strangely surpriz'd at her transcendent Beauty, that he was even charm'd into a kind of Rapture ; which gave Admittance to *Almeria's* Perfections, to take Possession of his Soul ; he often contemplated with himself, that had that been a fair Copy, which his Mother shewed him, of so blest an Original as *Almeria* produced, he had been the most happy Man in the World. Nor did *Almeria's* Eyes, less discover her Passion than

Ottavio

Octavia's her Heart was so inflam'd, with Loves powerful Darts, perceiving him so near, who had conquer'd her Affections, that she was even ravish'd at his presence. Sometimes she would re-call to mind what had formerly pass'd between her and *Octavia*, and then those hopes began to vanish which his Mother had given her of his being her Husband; being Timorous that the narrowness of her Fortune, would not be efficient to his Mothers Promises. She ponderously consider'd with her self, how near she was of being happy, or unhappy forever. And so intense was this Consideration, and such the Violence and Strength of her Conceptions and Imaginations, that it infused such Perturbations upon her Heart, and on all her Vital Spirits, that she began to change her Complexion, and to look pale and wan in an Instant; and presently fainted away, and in this Trance she fell into *Traciara's* Arms.

Upon this, they all rose from the Table, being so surpriz'd and astonish'd with this so sudden Passion. They immediately Address'd themselves to procure means for her Recovery out of this languishing Condition. But he who gave most Demonstrations of his Grief, was *Octavia*, who being in so extraordinary a Passion himself,

fell, for meer haste received two falls upon the ground; but neither the cutting her Laces of her Gown, nor sprinkling Water in her Face availed any thing, to bring her again to her Senses; but the Rising and Palpitation of her Breast, and the faint beating of her Pulse, discovered great Symptoms of her approaching Death. So that all were in great Consternation, and over-whelm'd with Grief, that they were even fit for nothing but to entertain Despair. The Servants of the House more passionate than prudent, made loud and dolorous cries that Death had seiz'd her, and that she was a dead Woman. They were altogether in so much Disorder, and Amazement, that they knew not what Methods to take, or Remedies to apply. Orlando rag'd and roared like one that was Lunatick, till his Mother *Tristana* endeavour'd to cheer up his Spirits, by telling him, (what indeed she was not certain of) there was hope of Life.

This sorrowful News, attended with such woful Lamentations, arriv'd, and soon gave the Alarm to the Ears of *Almeria's* Parents; whom for a more pleasing Occasional Scene, *Tristana* had kept close and Secret; till she found a fit opportunity, to make publick this her private Design.

Now

Now without Orders being given them by *Innocent*, *Almeria's* Parents hastily rush'd into the Room, where they were; but whereas they imagin'd to have found but one in a *Swoon*, contrary to their Expectation, they perceiv'd two. For *Octavio* was become a Sympathizer, in the same Condition with *Almeria*, his Face leaning on *Almeria's* Breast, with a Countenance equalizing Death it self. His Mother not presently perceiving his Complexion, as she did the posture he was in, permitted him that Liberty, and was very willing he should be so near her, she being the just and only proper Object of his Love; but when she beheld her Son was likewise Motionless, and lay prostrate for Dead, she fell in a manner bereaved of her Senses, and had been overcome with Passion, had she not immediately perceived him Breath; *Octavio* having recovered himself, was not much out of Countenance, for having been seen in such an Extasie, since it proceeded from such a sudden Passion, as commonly the Effects of Love produces.

But his Mother, as one that propheticall-ly knew her Sons Thoughts, address'd her self to him after this manner, Dear *Octavio* - I find that let these transports trouble thee, for they are Natural, and it is

usual for Lovers to be inclin'd to them; I am sorry I have concealed that from thee so long, but it was only out of a Design of a better opportunity; my Intention is now to put thee out of all suspense, and to declare to you the true purport of this Affair. You must know, dear *Octavio*, that this young Lady which lies there intran'd, your Father and my Self have made choice of for your Wife; and that Picture which I shewed you, was only a Counterfeit; I hope you will have no Cause to repent of this our Care, but thank Heaven and us, for so happy a Union.

Octavio, at his Mothers Words, was transported with his Amorous Passion, and inflam'd Desire, and the Name of Husband remov'd all those Obstacles, which the Respect and Decency of the place, seem'd to oppose to his Affection; he instantly ran to *Almeria*, and laying his Face close to hers, remain'd as one expecting his Soul should breath its last, and either to bring hers back again, or leave his with hers for ever.

But at length, when all their Expectations were almost at a period, and that their Cries and Lamentations had almost wearied Grief it self, *Almeria* came again to her

her self; and with her returning to Life, return'd that pleasing Joy and Content, which for a time had absented it self from the Hearts of those that were about her. Opening her Eyes, she found her self fast in *Octavio's* Embraces, from whence by a Modest force, she sought to unloose her self. But he unwilling to let her go, told her it was not requisite she should depart his Arms, who held her already so fast in his Soul. With which kind Words, *Almeria* perfectly recovering her Strength, *Traciana* order'd the Priest forthwith to make an end of the Matrimonial Ceremony.

Which being now fully concluded, I leave it to some choicer Pen, to sum up the general rejoicing of all that were present; the Embraces and Congratulation which *Almeria's* Parents gave *Octavio*, the thanks which they return'd Heaven, and to his Parents; the Admiration and Wonder of *Octavio's* Friends and Companions, who so unexpectedly were Eye-Witnesses the same Night of their Arrival, of beholding so fair a Match concluded; and their greater wonder, when they knew by *Traciana's* Discourse, that *Almeria* was the Virgin, which her Son had violently carried away, that Night when they were in his Company.

Osorio, not being willing to remain in Suspence, but for his better Certification, he entreated *Almeria*, that she would acquaint him with some Proceedings, whereby he might render himself, the more capable of an Acknowledgment of his Crime, since he was no ways dubious of the verity of it, because his Parents had so well approved of his choice. Whereunto *Almeria* reply'd, when I returned (Sir) out of that fainting fit I was in, I found my self in your Arms, bereaved of my Honour; but I think it now well bestow'd, since in this my latter Recovery, I find my self in the same Arms I did then, but with much more Honour and Reputation: and if this signal token be not proof sufficient, let the Table Book be an Evidence, which none could take from you but my self, which you could not chose but miss next Morning; and if that be the very same which your Mother hath now in her Custody, you are the Image of my Soul which I highly Esteem and Adore, and you shall ever remain still nearest and dearest to me, as long as Heaven shall permit us to live together. Then embracing her anew, iterating their Kisses over and over, they saluted all the Company there with them; they having now a little respite of time,

Osorio

Osorio's Father enquired of him concerning his Travels, how he had improved his time, and what Diversion he had met withal.

Whereupon, *Osorio* reply'd, he was very well received, and met with very facetious Company; and that in the return of his Journey, they were much diverted with pleasant Stories. Supper being not yet ready, *Osorio* desir'd his Friend *Gregorio* to furnish the Company with one of them, *Gregorio* willing to oblige them, told them any service they were pleas'd to command him, he was very ready to obey; whereupon he began:

There was a Gentleman in *Italy*, (whose Name I shall conceal,) and name *Galligani*, who afterwards for rare Endowments was preferred to Honour, and was highly esteem'd by most Persons; he was often invited to Banquets where several Ladies met. One day being in a Mask, he led in the Dance one of the most Brave and Beautiful Ladies that was in that City; when the Musick ceased, he always entertain'd her with a Discourse of Love, which was his chief Delight, but she would return him no answer; but oftentimes to interrupt his Discourse, and to give a stop to his Desires, she would assure him, that she neither did,

nor ever would Love any but her Husband, and would by no means seem to Countenance him. At this answer, the refused Gentleman would not desist, but vigorously prosecuted his Suit for some time.

But for all his Endeavours, he found her stedfast in her Resolutions, neither to love him, nor any else, which he could hardly believe, seeing the hard Favour, and course Deportment of her Husband, and the Excellent Beauty of her self; he determin'd therefore with himself, since she used Disimulation, to practise the same Art himself, and from that hour did forbear his Courtship, and so narrowly enquired after her Conversation, that he found at last she lov'd a Gentleman in the same City, who was Young, Handsome, and well Educated. Gallipus by Degrees, acquainted himself with this Gentleman, with such cunning and sweetness, that he mistrusted not in the least the Occasion; and the Gentleman loved him so entirely, that next to his Mistress, who was this Lady, there was none in the World that he tendred more affectionately. Gallipus to pluck his Secret from his Heart, did Counterfeit to tell him all his own, and amongst other Affairs acquainted him, that he loved such a Lady, when indeed he scarce ever thought of her, and de-

desired him to keep it private, as he was not dubious at all of it, by Reason he plac'd in him so great a Confidence. The poor Gentleman to shew him a Reciprocal Love, did declare unto him very often the Affection which he had for that Lady, on whose disdain, *Gallipus* would revenge himself; once a day they met together, to acquaint one another with the Fortunes which on that day they incountred, which the Gentleman did in Reality, and the other in Dissimulation.

The Gentleman confessed to him, that he had loved this Lady three years, without receiving any thing but good Words from her, and an assurance to be beloved. *Gallipus* did Counsel and Instruct him in all the ways that possibly he could, by which he might arrive to the Fruition of his Desires, which the Gentleman found so Effectual, that in a few days she consented to all he desired, and there remain'd nothing but to find out the opportunity, which by the means of *Gallipus* was brought about. One day a little before Supper, the Gentleman said to him, I am more obliged to you, than to all the Gentlemen in the World; for by your good Directions, I hope to enjoy that this Night, which so many years I have desired. 'Pray Sir, (said Gal-

Gallius) acquaint me with the manner of your Enterprize, to see if there be any Deceit or Danger in it, that I may assist, and serve you, according to the Obligations of our Friendship.

Whereupon, the Gentleman did particularly relate to him, that the Lady had got the opportunity to have the great Gate of her House left open, in pretense of an infirmity which one of her Brothers had, by reason whereof, every hour in the Night they must send into the City, to help him with some Remedy in his Necessity: She informed him that he might safely come into the Court, but advised him to have a Care how he went up the Stairs, and that he might more safely pass another way, and on less Stairs, which were on the right hand; and that being come into the first Gallery, where were the Chambers of her Father-in-Law, and her Brother-in-Law, he should come to the third Chamber, next the little Stairs, and (knocking at the Door gently) if he should find it to be locked, that then he should begon, for he might assure himself, her Husband was come home, but if he found the Door open, that he should softly come in, and lock the Door fast, being confident that there was none in the Chamber but her self; and above all things, that

that he should not forget to come to her with Shoes made of Felt, for fear of making a noise; and withal, that he should have a great Care, that he came not till two of the Clock after Midnight, because her Brothers-in-Law, who were much given to play, did seldom go to Bed till after One.

The Gods protect thee, and Guard thee from all Inconveniences, (said *Gallipus*,) and if my Company may do you any Service, it shall not be wanting. The Gentleman thanked him very heartily, and told him, that in such an Affair he could not be too secure, and that he would go to prepare himself. But *Gallipus* would not hear of that Ear; and seeing it was the only time to revenge himself on that cruel Lady, he retir'd to his own Lodging betimes, and had his Beard cut, after the same size of the Gentleman's, and his Hair cut after the same Fashion, that by her feeling she might not find any Difference. He remembered likewise the Shooes of Felt, and did put on such Cloths as the Gentleman was accustomed to wear, when he appeared most Gallant, and because he was very well beloved by the Father-in-Law of the Lady, he fear'd not to go thither before the appointed hour; conceiving
with

with himself, that if he was perceiv'd, he would go directly to his Chamber, with whom he had some Business.

About twelve of the Clock he entered the House, where he found many Servants, and some others coming and going, amongst whom he pass'd without being known, and came into the Gallery. And thrusting against the two first Doors, he found them shut, but the third not, having softly knock'd at it, he went in, and having lock'd the Door, he found all the Chamber hung in White, and a Bed of Needle Work excellently well wrought, all in White, that it was impossible to have it better, and the Lady alone within it, having on very rich Linen, Point of *Venice*, and Jewels, which he perceived through a corner of the Curtain, being not as yet seen by her, for there was burning in the Chamber a great Candle of White Wax, which made the Chamber as bright as Day. And for fear he should be known by her, he first of all put out the Light which was burning in the Chamber, afterwards he put off his Cloths and came into the Bed to her, who thinking it was he whom so long she lov'd, did receive him with all the love that possible she could.

But

But he who knew well enough, that it was in the Name of another, did not speak one Word, and thought on nothing but throughly to put his Revenge in Execution, which was to deprive her of her Honour, and Chastity against her Consent; but the Lady was so well taken with that Revenge, that she thought she had recompensed him for his long Sufferings. The Clock had now struck One, which was the time to bid her farewell; and speaking to her as softly as he could, he asked her, If she were as well pleased with him as he was with her? She thinking that it was her Friend, made answer, that she was not only pleased, but also marvel'd at the Greatness of his Love, which had held him a whole hour without speaking to her. At that he began to laugh out right, and said to her, now Madam will you refuse me another time, as you have been accustomed to do, until this present? She knowing him too late, both by his Laughter, and his Voice, was struck into an Amazement with the Shame she had brought upon her self, and called him a thousand times wicked Traytor and Imposture, and would have thrown her self out of the Bed, to have sought for a Knife to have killed her self, because she was so unfortunate to have lost her Honour, with
one

one whom she loved not, and who, to be revenged of her, might divulge her shame throughout the World.

But he held her in his Arms, and by sweet words did assure her, that he loved her with a far greater passion, than the Gentleman whom she loved, and that he would conceal that which touched her Honour, that she should never receive the least discredit: Which the poor Lady believed, and understanding the invention which he contriv'd to obtain her, and the difficulties he went through to accomplish it, she did protest unto him, that she did love him better than the other, who knew not how to conceal a Secret. [v] But she did heartily intreat him, that for a time he would forbear to appear at any Feast or Meeting where she was, unless it were a Mask only, for she knew well enough that she should have so many Blushes in her Cheeks, that her Countenance would declare it to all the World: This he promised to perform, and also intreated her, that when his Friend should come about two hours hence, that she would make him welcom and by degrees withdraw her self from him; of which she made a great difficulty, but because it was his desire, she at last consented to it; and taking his leave

well

well of her, he did leave her so satisfied, that she could have been well contented to have had him to have stayed longer. After that he had rose, and dress'd himself, he made hast out of the Chamber and left the Door half shut and half open, as he found it; and because it was almost two of the Clock after midnight, he entertain'd a fear that he should find the Gentleman in the way: he retir'd himself a little into a private corner on the top of the Stairs, where not long afterwards he observ'd the Gentleman to pass by, and to enter into the Lady's Chamber; whereupon he himself repair'd directly to his own Lodging, to take some repose after his Nights Travels, which he accordingly did, and did not till Nine of the Clock, at what time the Gentleman came to him; who never fail'd to give him an account of his proceedings, which was not now so good as he hoped it would have proved; for he told him, that when he came into the Lady's Chamber, contrary to his expectation, he found her out of Bed, and in her Night Gown, having a great Fever upon her, her Pulse beating very violently, her Face all on Fire, and a great sweat running down her Cheeks; wherefore she did immediately entreat him

to

to return from whence he came, for fear she should be enforced to call unto her Maids to come to her Assistance, so violent was her Distemper, insomuch that she said that she had more need to think of Death, than Love, and so discourse rather of Heaven, than of Cupid.

However she was very sorry, for the hazard into which he had put himself for the Love of her, because she had no power to make him in this World any requital for his true Love, being ready to be gone into another, as this he was so sad, and so astonished, that his Fire and his Joy were converted into Ice and Sorrow, and so immediately he departed. In the Morning, on the break of day, he sent to be more fully inform'd of her Health, and found for certain, that she was in an extream Indisposition, and Multiplying his Complaints for her, he went so abundantly, that it seemed as if his Soul was coming out with his Tears; Gallias who had as great a desire to laugh, as the other had to weep, did comfort him the best that possibly he could, and told him, that things of a long Continuance, did always meet with an untoward beginning, and that love did a little draw back, but to come on with

the greater force, and to make the delight more grateful; and upon these words they departed.

The Lady for a certain time kept her Bed, and upon the recovery of her Health, bid adieu to her first Servant, and grounded it on the fear she had of Death, and the remorse of her Conscience, and continued her Familiarities with *Gallipus*, the continuation of whose Love, (according to the old Custom) was as the Beauty of Flowers in the Feilds.

Gregorius having ended his Story, Supper not being yet ready, he inform'd the Company that he had one more, if it would not tire their Patience, which was transacted when he was upon his Travels into *France*; the Company desiring much to hear it, intreated him very earnestly to relate it; whereupon he began as followeth:

In the Port of *Cumloen*, hard by *Niort*, there was a Ferry-mans Wife Indifferently handsome, who Night and Day did nothing but Ferry over passengers; it fell out that two Students of *Niort* passed the River with her alone; and because it is one of the longest passages in all *France* (to keep themselves in Action) they Courted the Woman in the way of Love; she return'd them a very good answer, though not suit-

able to their question ; but they who were not tired with the Journey they had taken to the River side, nor cold by any Distemper of the Water, nor asham'd at the Denial of the Woman, they both resolved to take her by force, and if she offer'd to cry out, they threatned to throw her into the River ; the Woman being as Wise and Cunning as they were Foolish and Malicious, said to 'em, Gentlemen, I would not have you to think me so hard hearted as I have express'd my self, all I desire of you is, only to grant me two things, and you shall then understand that I have a greater desire to obey you than you have to entreat me. The Students Swore Solemnly to her, that she should not ask that thing of 'em, which they would not grant, provided she would perform what they so much desired.

Whereupon, she told 'em in the first place, that she required both of 'em to promise and swear, not to declare to any person in the World, the kindness they should receive from her ; to which they both very willingly consented. Secondly (said she) I require that but one at a time shall caress with me, for I am not a Woman of that Impudence to have any Witness that may behold my Frolicks ; therefore
make

make your request which of you will engage first; they found this request very just, and reasonable, and the youngest of 'em gave consent to the Senior the privilege of exercising first; so drawing near to a small Island, she said to the youngest stay here, and have a little Patience, until I have carried your Friend into yonder Island; if at his return, he recommends me to you, we will leave him here, and then you and I will go together.

Whereupon the youngest of the Students leaped into the Island where he attended the return of his Companion, whom the Ferry-woman was rowing to another Island; when she came to it, she made a pretence to fasten her Boat, least the Stream should drive it away; then she applyed her self to him and said, Sir pray find out the privatest place you possible can; whereupon the Senior Student entered upon the Island to find out some convenient corner fit for their purpose; as soon as she saw him landed, with one of her Feet against a Tree she thrust back the Boat, which presently return'd into the River, and left both the Students in the two Deserts, and then cry'd out as loud, as she could to 'em, Sirs, pray wait there till I come to you, which I don't intend shall

shall be this day, nor the next week. The two poor distressed Students finding the deceit, fell both on their knees upon the Banks of the River, begging and entreating her, not to put them to that open disgrace, and assured her, that if she would take 'em again into her Boat, and waft them to the place where they intended to Land, they would use no farther importunity with her.

But she minded her rowing, and cry'd out, Who'll be the Fool then ! I am glad I have escaped a scowring and got so well rid of you ; so returning to the Village, she called her Husband and many others to behold this Comical Scene, who attended her with a numerous train, that neither little nor great would stay behind, but would all be participators of this sight ; the poor Students beholding so great a Company coming, went and hid themselves, but they were soon found out after some diligent search, and were forced to receive the Scoffs of the Multitude. Every one had their saying, especially the Waterman; who jeeringly said to 'em, What ! did you want a fresh bit, Neighbour ? Indeed I don't like you should have such an Extraordinary kindness for my Bed-fellow, but I'll pass it by this time provided you won't do

do so no more : the poor Students could not tell what to do or say, they were so out of Countenance at their Scoffs and Scorns; but they at last happen'd upon another Ferry-boat, and so made their escape from the multitude ; at last these Transactions reached their Governours ears, who severely reprov'd 'em for it; but ever afterwards they were free from those absurdities.

Having ended his Story, Supper immediately came in, and the Musicians were come which were before-hand provided for this purpose. *Ottavio* beheld himself in the Mirror of his Son's Countenance; the Kindred on both sides wept for joy; nor was there any Corner in all the whole House which was not visited with rejoyceing; and although time flew away with its nimble Wings, yet it seem'd to *Ottavio* not to fly, but to walk with Crutches ; so earnest was his desire to be imbrac'd in the Arms of his dear *Almeria*. At last came that so much expected hour, they all of them went to Bed to take their rest, and the whole House remained buried in Silence.

THE
Virgin Captive:

A
NOVEL.

AT what time the Queen of the Northern Island, won, and ransack'd the City of *Cadiz, Prospero*, Admiral of one of her Squadrons of Ships, upon his return home, carried along with him to *Mundolin*, the chief City of the Northern Isle, a young Virgin about seven Years of Age, contrary to the knowledge of the General, who contenting himself with the spoil of their Goods, left the Inhabitants free in their Persons: And therefore upon the complaint of her Parents, he commanded diligent search to be made for the Child, to the end she might be restor'd to her Father, and Mother. It seems,

seems, she was one of the most lovely Children in all *Cadix*; and therefore, notwithstanding all the General's Proclamations, and Threats, *Prospero* had her kept close, and would by no means obey the General's Command.

In short, her Parents were forc'd to sit down by the loss, afflicted, and disconsolate; and *Prospero* went away not a little satisfied with his Prize: Being arriv'd at *Mundolin*, he presented the fair young Virgin, as a rich Jewel to his Wife; but as her kind Stars did direct her, all they of *Prospero's* Household were Christians, though indeed outwardly they seem'd to profess the Religion of the Country. This *Prospero* at the same time had a Son call'd *Philocles*, about twelve Years of Age, well Educated by his Parents; and *Sabina*, the Wife of *Prospero*, a Noble, and Prudent Lady, had such a great Love, and Affection for *Aurelia*, that had she been her own Daughter, she could not have been more careful of her Breeding; and the Child was so well Endowed with Natural Abilities, that she easily apprehended, and learn'd, whatever they taught her. So that what with time, and the kind usage she received, she at length forgot the Caresses of her true Parents,

She handled her Needle to Perfection, that few excell'd her, and play'd to a Miracle upon all those Instruments of Musick, which became the Decency of her Sex. All these acquir'd Graces, besides those that were natural to her, by degrees kindled the flames of Love in *Philocles's* Heart; to whom, as being her Master's Son, she carried her self with all fair respect, and Modesty. At first, Love prompted him on, with only a kind of liking, and Complacency, in beholding the matchless Beauty of *Aurelia*, and Contemplating upon her infinite Vertues, wherewith she was adorn'd; and then, within the Bounds of Modesty, he only lov'd her as a Sister: But when *Aurelia* began to grow towards Woman's Estate, his former Affection, and Pleasantness, chang'd themselves into most Ardent Desires, yet Vertuous, and Honourable, all Expectations else were in vain from the vertuous *Aurelia*, nor would the nobleness of his own Quality, nor the high esteem he had for so much Vertue, give place to any other Cogitations.

Many times he determin'd with himself to discover to his Parents, the affection he had for her; and then as oft did he retract his Determination, being assur'd they had design'd him for a higher Fortune; and there-

therefore being much perplex'd, and pensive, is ignorant what course to steer. To attain the end of his happy wishes, he led such a Melancholy kind of life, as had almost brought him to the point of losing it. All the whole Family was very much troubled for *Philocles* Sickness, but his Father and Mother more especially, considering he was their only Child, and had acquired to himself those great perfections that all persons did admire him. All this time the Physicians upon their result could give no report of his Disease, and he being timerous would not discover his Malady: But in the end, being fully resolv'd to break through these Difficulties, one day amongst the rest, that *Aurelia* gave her attendance to him, seeing her alone, with a low Voice, but fainting utterance, express'd himself:

Fair *Aurelia*, thy great Vertue, and excellling Beauty, not to be parallel'd by any, hath reduc'd me to this Extremity, wherein I languish: And therefore, since my Life is in thy Power, oblige me so far as to preserve it by complying with my Vertuous Desires; and to receive me into thy Chast Embraces: My Designs are truly noble, and of no other ends, but what portend to Conjugality; but conceal this from my Parents, least they deny me that happiness
which

which so much concerns me. Speak, dear *Aurelia*, am I that happy object that may seem worthy of thy Love, and be entertain'd thy affectionate admirer? and tho I should never arrive to that felicity of enjoyment, yet at the least approve of this my passion, since my Life depends upon it; for assure your self, dear *Aurelia*, never Breast did entertain a purer Flame than mine, or Lover prove more constant.

To this, with a modest and sober look, Sir, said *Aurelia*, since the rigour or clemency of Heaven, has depriv'd me of my Parents, and wholly dispos'd of me unto yours, I have put on that resolution, that I will ever obey their Will and Pleasure; so that the inestimable Favour, which you are so much willing to confer upon me, without their approbation, will rather prove my Misery than happy Fortune; and if in reality you have given me so large an Empire over you, if they, being made acquainted with it, and shall deem me worthy to deserve you, I shall wholly resign that Will and Consent which they shall impower me; in the mean time your dependence may so far rely upon this, I shall remain yours, in wishing you all the happiness which Heaven can give you,

Thus

Thus these two modest Lovers took their leaves; he with Tears and she with Admiration, she being astonish'd, to see that *Philocles* should surrender up his Affection to hers. Being now raised from his Bed, (to his Parents seeming by a Miracle) he was resolv'd now no longer to conceal his thoughts, and therefore one day he discover'd them to his Mother, acquainting her in the end of his discourse, that to deny him *Aurelia*, and to give him his Death's wound, would prove alike in the experiment; his Mother was not Ignorant of *Aurelia's* Vertues, and well perceiving the reality of her Son's affection, put him first in hopes and then repeating to her Husband, all the particulars of her Sons desires and intentions, easily mov'd him to give way to what *Philocles* so earnestly required, to put off the other match, which was in a manner already concluded.

At that time was *Aurelia* Fourteen years of Age, and *Philocles* twenty. They were indeed the Miracle of their Age, being endued with so much prudence and discretion; and now there were but four days wanting to come before the Nuptials were to be Celebrated; his Parents esteeming more the Dowry of *Aurelia's* Virtues, than the vast Wealth which was offer'd with the

the other Match. The Wedding Cloths were already prepar'd, their Kindred and Friends invited ; so that there was nothing wanting, but the Queen's Consent, which among those of Noble Blood, is requisite to make the Nuptials effectual. But when all things were brought to this Fortunate Period, one evening gave disturbance to all this their Joy ; a Servant of the Queens brought a Message to *Prospero*, with an express Command from her Majesty, that the next Morning he should bring to Court his Virgin Captive. *Prospero* being surprized at the news, made no delay, but dispatched the Messenger with an Answer that her Majesties Will and Pleasure should most willingly be obeyed.

After the Messengers departure, the whole House was in great disorder of Passion, at this unexpected news ; which was the overcasting of their Joy, they hoped was so near. The Lady *Sabina* expressed her fear, least it should come to the Queens knowledge, that they were Christians, and had bred her up to the same profession, but arguing backwards and forwards, they did at last conjecture, that they did believe, that if the Queen had known, that they were Christians, she would not have sent them so mild a Message,

sage, from whence they might infer, that she was only desirous to see *Aurelia*, whose unequal Beauty and Vertues had come to her Ears, and those of the Court; but *Prospero* was fearful he had offended the Queen, by reason he had not presented his Prisoner to her Majesty, before she sent for her; but that offence they intended to excuse by declaring, that from the very moment he took possession of her, she was design'd for his Son *Philocles*; but in this too, they likewise found themselves amiss, for contracting such a Match without her Majesty's leave and approbation; however well understanding the utmost punishment of such an error, *Prospero* and *Sabina* agreed amongst themselves, that *Aurelia* should go to Court in that Equipage Equivolent to his Son's Quality.

Being thus resolv'd, the next day they invested *Aurelia* very rich after the *Spanish* Mode, in a Garment of Green Sattin cut upon Cloth of Gold, embroider'd with Esses of Pearls, round her Neck a Neck-lace of Orient Pearls, her Head adorn'd with a Lustre of Diamonds and other precious Stones, being compleatly drest to attract her beholders; this being done in a fair Caroach he conducted her to Court, and so into
the

the presence Chamber where the Queen was; *Anrelia* being entred into the Room; But, oh Gods! with so much Majesty and Humility together, that it was admir'd how two such distant Graces could meet in one Subject; her Eyes had antipathy to the Liberties of our Sex, destroying all those that beheld them; her shape and motion had peculiar Charms, and she had a certain Air, and Vivacity in her Countenance, that might assure all her beholders, that her Wit was not inferiour to her Beauty, and might with great ease be perceiv'd, that time which is the ruin of all other Faces, would but improve hers, she being not then above Fourteen years old. She advance'd towards the Chair of State, and with a graceful Humility falling on her Knees before the Queen, besought her Majesty, that she might obtain the Honor of kissing her Royal Hand.

The Queen continued looking upon her a good while, not expecting so great a prospect to entertain her sight, (as afterwards she told one of her most Familiar Ladies) that she beheld some new Miracle of Beauty, that she had never seen in all her Court before, neither can be parallel'd: Some of the Ladies envy'd her Beauty, some admir'd her, but all confess'd her
the

the Compleatest piece of Natures Workmanship, that ever they beheld. After some time, the Queen commanded *Aurelia* to rise, and turning towards *Prospero*, said to him, *Prospero*, you have done us wrong, to keep so Rich a Treasure so long conceal'd from us; but I cannot blame your Covetousness in this particular; however you are bound to restore it us, for by right it is ours, and properly belongs to us. Madam (replyed *Prospero*, with a great submission) what your Majesty has now Commanded, I am bound in Duty to obey; I confess my offence if it be one to have concealed this Treasure, that I might preserve it in that perfection, as was fitting to appear in your Majesties presence; I must humbly confess, I thought to have much improv'd it, by craving your Majesties leave in granting a contract between *Philocles* and *Aurelia*, and so to have presented to your Majesty, at once, in these two, all that I am able to bequeath you in this World.

Her very Name gives us good content (reply'd the Queen) there could nothing have taken off from that perfection which is in her, but the want of that very name. But why! without our leave *Prospero*, have you propos'd the Marriage of your Son?

Son? May it please your Majesty, (answer'd *Prospero*) I cannot deny but that I have made a Contract, but it was upon the Confidence that the many and noble Services which my self and my Ancestors have done this Crown, might obtain of your Majesty other more difficult Favours, and the rather for that my Son is not yet Married to her. Neither shall he (said the Queen) marry *Aurelia*, till he in his own proper person shall deserve her; our meaning is, that neither your own, or your Ancestors Services shall any way excuse him in this particular; but that he in his own person shall merit for himself, and acquire by his own Valour, this sweet pledge, whom we esteem, as if she were our own Daughter.

Aurelia had scarce heard this last word delivered, when humbling herself on her Knees before the Queen; Madam (said she) since your Majesty has been pleas'd to Honor me with the name of Daughter; upon so great a Favour, what ill Fate can attend me? Or what good Fortune may I not hope to find, since your Majesty has received me under your gracious protection?

Now

Now whatever *Aurelia* utter'd, came from her so gracefully, and so winningly, that the Queen was extreemly affected with her; and commanded that she should remain at Court in her Service; recommending her to the care of one of the chiefest Ladies of her Bed-chamber; the Enamour'd *Philocles* fearing to be bereft of what he loved more passionately than his Life, was almost overcome with grief; but recollecting himself, and falling upon his Knees before the Queen, Madam (said he) to incite me to serve your Majesty, there needs no other reward than that which always attends on Loyalty: And therefore since it is your Majesty's Royal Will and Pleasure, that I should serve you more particularly, I most humbly beg that I may know in what capacity I may tender my Obediënce to your Commands.

The Queen answer'd that she was then putting out to Sea Four Ships of her Navy Royal, of which she intended to make the Baron of *Lansac* Admiral, and him Vice-Admiral, assuring her self, that the Noble Blood which ran in his Veins, would supply the defect of his years. She bid him consider the Favour which she did him in giving him an opportunity to serve her, for which he should receive the greatest

est reward his heart could wish or desire; and then told him, that she her self would be *Aurelia's* Guard, till his return. *Philocles* kissed the Queens hand, and having returned her his most humble thanks, for the Favour she had done him, presently went from her to *Aurelia*, to whom he would feign have spoke, but could not; for Love and Grief had so tyed up his Tongue, that had his Life depended on it, he could not utter one word. However the Tears stood in his Eyes, and were so brim full, that they began to run over, which he endeavour'd to conceal as much as in him lay; but could not hide them from the Queens observance, who thereupon took an occasion, and said to him;

Think it no contemptable sight, *Philocles*, to weep, nor value your self the less, for having given at this your farewell such tender demonstrations of your Affections; for there is difference, betwixt encountering with the Enemy, and of taking your leave as a passionate Lover; then proceeding, *Aurelia* (said she) embrace your *Philocles*, and give him your best wishes, for his generous kindness well deserves them. *Aurelia* who stood amaz'd and astonish'd, to see *Philocles's* tender affection, and with what

what reality he grieved for her sake, whom she loved as dearly as her self, minded not what the Queen had commanded her, but melted into Tears, and stood as motionless as if she had been a mere Statue. Which wonderful mutual Affection of these two, did not a little move the Compassion of the beholders; and so *Philocles* without speaking a word to *Aurelia*, or she to him they turned away one from the other, and so *Prospero* and his Friends, having made their obeysance to the Queen, departed her presence, variously distracted in their Thoughts and Imaginations.

Thus *Aurelia* now remain'd at Court, and within two days after *Philocles* put forth to Sea, resolv'd to do some extraordinary piece of Service, to win him the Title of *Aurelia's* Deserver. Six days this Navy sail'd with a prosperous Gale of Wind, shaping their course for the *Tercera* Islands; a place where never are wanting, either Ships of *Portugal*, from the *East-Indies*, or others that come thither from the *West-Indies*. At six days end there arose such a cross wind full in their Teeth, which continued so long and so violent, that not being able to reach the Islands, they were enforced to make for *Spain*; near unto whose Coast, at the Mouth of the Strait

of *Gibraltar*, they discry'd three Ships; one a very tall and goodly Vessel, the other two much less. *Philocles* made up to the Admiral for orders what to do; and at last coming so near he understood that the Admiral died suddenly the Night before of an Appoplexy.

Philocles by Vertue of the Queens Commission, being now Commander in chief, went aboard the Admirals Ship; and now being at his own Liberty, he resolv'd to speak with those Vessels, which they had so lately discovered; and which after a short chase they found to be *Turkish* Gallies; 'twas *Philocles's* Policy at that time to carry *Spanish* Colours, so that the Pyrates believing they had been *Spanish* Vessels, spent and worn with a long tedious Voyage, came up briskly; which *Philocles* observing, suffer'd them to come nearer and nearer, till he had them close within the Command of his Guns, and then letting fly a whole broad-side, discharg'd with so much Fury, Shot one of the Gallies thorough and thorough; upon which the other Galley endeavour'd to fly, but *Philocles* soon fetch'd her up, then Boarded her, and put all the *Turks* to the Sword, and by that means set at liberty a great number of *Christians*.

Having

Having thus mastered both the Gallies, he made up to the great Vessel, which proved to be a *Portuguese* Prize, which the *Turks* had taken two days before, very richly laden, from the *East-Indies*; immediately, *Philocles* sent fifty Sea-Men on Board to take Possession of her; and for more security, put into her six great Guns out of his own Vessels. As for the *Christian* Captives who were most of them *Spaniards*, he gave them one of the Gallies, with Provision and Money to carry them on Shore: but before they were discharged, *Philocles* resolved to go on Board the *Portuguese* Prize himself, to see what Condition she was in, and to take Care for the safety of the Goods, and partly out of Curiosity to view the *Christian* Slaves, and to have the Honour of disposing of his own Liberality. Of all which, when he had taken sufficient notice, the *Christians* were all put a-Board the Galley, with Provisions necessary for their Sustainance, and Money in their Pockets, saving only one, a Person somewhat Aged, and of a comely Aspect, who Addressed himself to *Philocles* in this manner:

Valiant Sir, (said he) I should Esteem it a Happiness for me, amidst my many Misfortunes, that you would rather carry

me along with you to *Mundolin*, than send me into *Spain*: For though it is my Native Country, and not above six days since I left it, yet can I find nothing there, but what is Instrumental to the reviving my former Sorrows and Afflictions. For know most (Noble Sir) that in the loss of *Cadix*, which is now some Fifteen years since, I lost a Daughter, which some of the Conquerors carried away into their own Country; and with her, I lost the comfort of my Old Age, and the Light of my Eyes: And since that no Object yet, could be ever pleasing to them, she being gone, together with my Wealth, which was all at the same time taken from me; my self, and my Wife (which is that sorrowful Woman which sits there) resolved to go for the *Indies*, the common Refuge for decay'd Persons; to which purpose, having embark'd ourselves but six days since in a Ship of Advice, we had no sooner put out of *Cadiz*, but those *Pyrates* took our Vessel, and we became their Slaves, whereupon our Misery was renew'd, and our Misfortune confirm'd.

Here *Philocles* interrupting him, ask'd what his Daughter's Name was? he answered, *Aurelia*; this confirm'd *Philocles* in what before he suspected; that he who
told

told him the Story, was his belov'd *Aurelia's* Father; and so without giving him any Tidings of her, he told him, that very willingly he would carry him and his Wife to *Mundolin*, where happily they might hear some News of what they so much desired; and having so said, he presently convey'd them aboard his own Ship, and with a fair Gale of Wind, within nine days they came within sight of *Mundolin*, being entred the River, and being Land-
ed, great Multitudes of People attended him; he went directly to the Court, where the Queen being in a Gallery, stood expecting the News of her Ships. There was, besides many other Ladies with the Queen, the Fair *Aurelia*, who seeing *Philocles*, began to change Colour, and look pale and wan; fear and hope of bad and good Success, distracting her Mind with various Thoughts.

Being come into the Queen's Presence, he fell upon his Knees, and having kiss'd her Majesty's Hand, he gave her an account of the General's Death, of his Engagement with the *Turks*, of his releasing so many *Christian* Slaves, to whom he had given one of the Gallies in her Majesties Name to carry them home, only that he had brought one Man and a Woman along with
T 4 him,

him, who chose rather to be conveyed into her Territories, that they might see the Grandeur of her Majesty's Court. And lastly, he gave her an Estimate of the Prize which he had taken, valued at a Million of Gold. Which done, he put her Majesty in mind of her Promise, in Reference to *Aurelia*.

Rise, *Philocles*, (reply'd the Queen) I will give her you, not only because of my Promise, but by Reason, she is worthy of you, and you of her; and as you have preserved this Rich Prize, you have taken, for me, so I have likewise kept this Jewel for you; *Aurelia*, is yours, and when you please your self may take Possession of her; and I dare say, you may have her Consent, for she is Prudent, and knows well how to value the Friendship which you have shewn her; to Morrow wait upon us, and I will more particularly hear you relate unto us what you did in this Voyage, and how Valourously you behaved your self; and bring those two Persons with you, who as you inform us, were so willing to come and behold our Court, that we may return them our Thanks for their Visiting us.

Philocles (reply'd) We have not yet seen *Aurelia*.

Philocles in most humble manner return'd her Majesty his hearty thanks for all the Favours she had bestowed upon him. The Queen retir'd; and then after he had stay'd a while, to satisfy the Curiosity of some of the Court Ladies, went home to his Father's House, whither he had sent *Aurelia's* Father and Mother before, with a Desire to *Prospero*, not to discover any thing to *Aurelia*, till he should disclose it himself. The next day after, *Philocles* went to Court, carrying with him the Father and Mother of *Aurelia*, both of them newly Apparell'd after the Fashion of *Mundolin*; they appear'd all, where the Queen was sitting in the midst of her Ladies, expecting *Philocles*, whom she was willing to Grace and Favour, by placing *Aurelia* next to her, having on the same Attire, and Ornaments, which she wore, when she came first to the Court, appearing no less Beautiful now, than she did then. The Parents of *Aurelia*, were stricken with Wonder and Admiration, to behold so much Greatness and Splendour met together; but their Eyes were chiefly fix'd upon *Aurelia*, though they knew her not: However, their Hearts, (as Presagers of some good Fortune, being near at hand) began to leap in their Bosoms; not out of
any

any sudden Passion, but of some Inspiration of Pleasure and Contentment, which they could not rightly be Apprehensive of.

And now it was, that the Queen to divert the Company, commanded *Philocles* to relate the particulars of his Adventure, and the manner of his Engagement with the *Turkish* Pyrates; which he did with that Prudence, that he gave to every one that had signaliz'd themselves in that Service, their particular due, to the end, the Queen might take particular notice of their Duty and Services. But when he began to speak of the Liberty, which in her Majesty's Name, he had given the *Christians*; Madam, (said he) those two Persons, a Gentleman and his Wife, which stand there (pointing to *Aurelia's* Parents) whom Yesterday I mention'd to your Majesty; who out of the great Desire which they had, to see the Greatness and Magnificence of your Court, did so earnestly intreat me, to bring them along with me. They are of *Cadiz*, and by their own Information, and my Observation of them, I know they are Persons of no ordinary Extraction, but of Worth and Quality.

The

The Queen then commanded them to approach nearer to her; at what time, *Aurelia* lifted up her Eyes to take a view of those Persons; who were reported to be *Spaniards*, and more particularly of *Cadiz*; out of a Desire she had to learn if happily they knew her Parents; which *Aurelia* had no sooner done, but her Mother look'd stedfastly upon her, and diligently observed her Countenance: On the other side, *Aurelia* began to consider that certainly she had formerly known that Gentlewoman which stood before her. Her Father was also in the like Confusion, yet durst not give Credit to the Truth, which his Eyes represented to him.

Philocles was very attentive to observe the Motions of all three, whom he saw strangely perplex'd, yet not able to disintigue their Understandings. Nor was the Queen insensible of their Behaviour, Natural to Persons in such an Astonishment. *Aurelia* thus confus'd, desired nothing more than to hear the Gentlewoman speak, whom she imagined to be her Mother, hoping that her Ears would put her out of doubt, of what her Eyes suspected; which fell out according to her wish, the Queen commanding *Aurelia* to speak to the ancient Lady in her own Language, and
to

to ask them the Occasion, that mov'd them to refuse the Liberty, which *Philocles* had offer'd them? All which, no sooner *Aurelia* had demanded, but her Mother on a suddain, and ready to stumble for haste, without any regard to Place or Person, with her hand lifted up *Aurelia's* right Ear, and having there discover'd a black Mole; the Mark that confirm'd her Suspicion, and plainly perceiving that it was her Daughter *Aurelia*, she could no longer contain her self, but embracing her, cry'd out abruptly, Daughter! Daughter! and not being able to utter a word more, her Speech failing, fell into a Swoon in *Aurelia's* Arms.

Her Father no less Prudent than tender, gave manifest Signs how sensible he was of the Discovery; but with no other Demonstrations, than a silent shedding some few Tears, which were observed to trickle down his Cheeks, while *Aurelia*, who being busie in attending on her Mother, supporting her from falling, turning her Eyes towards him, gave him such an Affectionate Look, that thereby he might easily understand the Pleasure and Contentment her Soul took in seeing her Parents so near her. The Queen wondring at so rare and strange an Accident; this was some Con-
tri-

trivance of your laying, (said she) turning to *Philocles*: But I must tell you, I don't know whether it was so well done as you may imagine: For we find by Experience, that a suddain transport of Joy, as soon kills, as an overwhelming Grief. Soon after *Aurelia's* Mother coming to her self, besought her Majesty's Pardon for committing so much Rudeness in her Presence, but had not a suddain Passion of Excessive Joy arrested her Vitals, she had not appeared Guilty of so great an Offence; to whom the Queen made Answer, that such Accidents as these none could withstand, neither would extraordinary Transports of that Nature admit of any Ceremonies; but withal, she was very glad to see her recovered out of that Extasie.

And thus it was that *Aurelia* came to the Knowledge of her Parents, and her Parents of her; whom the Queen commanded to reside in the Court, for the better Satisfaction of each other; wherewith *Philocles* was wonderful well pleased: and now *Philocles* laden with the Queen's Favours, wanted nothing but the Enjoyment of his *Aurelia*, to which purpose he humbly put the Queen once more in mind of her Promise; who being satisfied, that there needed

ed

ed no new Proofs of his Valour, told him, that after the Expiration of four days, she would deliver *Aurelia* to him, and confer upon them all the Honour, and Rewards she possibly could. Upon which, *Philocles* took his leave, being the most joyful Person in the World; for now he thought he had his *Aurelia* in his Power, without any fear of losing her, which is the last and utmost Desire of Lovers.

But when Love and Fortune are at Variance, the Craftiness of Fortune is too hard for Loves Innocency; as now it happened to *Philocles's* Sorrow; for it so fell out at that time, that a great Court Lady, and Favorite to the Queen, to whose Charge *Aurelia* was committed, had a Son of the Age of two and twenty years called *Endymion*, being of an Arrogant, Haughty, and Extravagant Disposition; this *Endymion* then was enamoured of *Aurelia*, and so vehemently, that his very Soul parch'd within him; and though in *Philocles's* Absence, he had by some Signs discover'd his Desires; yet he received the least Encouragement from *Aurelia*, which disdain of hers the more encreast *Endymion's* Flame: in this Agony of Love he discovered his violent Affection to his Mother, acquainting her withal, that unless he enjoyed *Aurelia*,

relia, she must not expect long to enjoy her Son. The Mother admired and wondred to hear such Expressions fall from her Son; on the other side, well knowing the Obstinate Nature, and Eagerness of his Passion, she feared that Love once disappointed might produce some unhappy Accident; yet notwithstanding, as an Indulgent Mother, not willing to cross his Intentions, promised him to speak to the Queen about it; though not with any hopes of obtaining such an impossibility.

In the mean time, the Morning appointed for solemnizing the Nuptials, being come, the Ladies were not a little busie in attiring *Aurelia* at Court, and *Philocles* no less Diligently employed to Adorn himself at home; when *Endymion's* Mother coming hastily into the Queen's Presence, and falling upon her knees, besought her to suspend the Ceremony for two days longer; the Queen wondring at the reason of her demand; whereupon the Lady declared to her Majesty, her Son's Affections for *Aurelia*, adding with the Fears she had, that if he did not obtain her, he would either grow desperate, or commit some unworthy Action to his own Destruction: The Queen made her this Answer, that she would neither break her Promise made to *Aurelia*,
nor

nor defraud *Philocles* of his, for all the Interest in the World. The Lady immediately went and acquainted her Son, with the Queen's Answer, and positive Resolution; *Endymion* flew instantly from his Mother, and in a fury heightned by Love and Jealousie, ran to *Philocles's* House, and there drest up as he was in all his Wedding Gallantry and Bravery, challeng'd him the Field, as one that neither did, nor could deserve so fair a Lady, as he was going to Marry. *Philocles* preferring his Honour before his Love, accepted of the Challenge, very freely; and told him he had thought he would not have pass'd so harsh a Sentence upon him, as either to call his Affection or Courage in Question. Then he desired him to name his Place, (the time he supposed was present,) and he would readily attend him, with all the haste imaginable; so soon as he could privately withdraw himself from the Company.

○ But the noise of this Challenge soon flew to Court; which so highly incensed the Queen, that she presently commanded the Captain of her Guard to go instantly and apprehend *Endymion*, who being brought into her Presence, she order'd his Sword to be taken from him, and to be confin'd close Prisoner to his Chamber during Pleasure.

sure. All these things tormented the Heart of *Aurelia*, and very much perplexed her Parents, who so suddainly saw the Sea of their quietness troubled: However this hurly burly occasion'd the Nuptials to be deferr'd till the next day; which being but a short time, *Endymion's* Mother resolv'd to improve it to the best Advantage; and thereupon advis'd the Queen, that to remove the Quarrel betwixt her House, and that of *Philocles's*, the only Remedy was to take away the Cause; which was *Aurelia*, by sending her into *Spain*, and so the Effects would cease; which now it was to be feared would not be easily suppress'd. To which the Queen answered, that for the sending of her into *Spain*, she would hear no more of it, as being a Person in whom she took so much Delight; and that Doubtless, if not that very day, the next following, without all fail she would Marry her to *Philocles* according to the promise she had made him.

With this Resolution of the Queens, *Endymion's* Mother was so disheartned, that she return'd not so much as one Word in Answer; and therefore concluding there was no other way nor means left in the World to mollifie that rigorous Condition of her Son, nor reduce *Philocles* to terms

of Peace, but by taking away *Aurelia*, she determined to put in Practice one of the greatest Cruelties, that could ever enter into the thoughts of any Noble Lady, and especially so Principal a one as she was; which was to make away *Aurelia* by Poison. And because it is commonly the Condition, and Natural Inclination of Women to be speedy, and resolute in what they intend to go about; she made so quick a dispatch, that the same Evening she gave the Innocent Lady her Dose, in a certain Conserve, forcing her in a manner to take it, telling her it was Excellent good against those Passions of the Heart, where-with she seemed to be troubled.

Within a little while after *Aurelia* had taken this Hellish Electuary; her Tongue, and her Throat began to swell, and her Lips to grow black, her Voice hoarse, her Eyes troubled, and her Stomach and Bowels, tormented with Gripings, all manifest Symptoms that she was Poison'd. Presently the Ladies came to the Queen, and acquainted her Majesty, with *Aurelia's* Misfortune, and certified her that *Endymion's* Mother, was the Actress in this Scene of Cruelty. There did not need much pressing Arguments to induce the Queen to believe the verity of it, and therefore she
went

went immediately to see *Aurelia*, who was almost breathing her last. The Queen commanded her Physicians should be sent for in all hast, and in the mean while, before they came, she caused a quantity of *Unicornus-Horn* to be given her, and some other Preservatives against Poison, which Great Princes have always ready at hand, upon the like Cases of Necessity. The Physicians came and applied their best Remedies, and Antidotes, but withal, besought her Majesty, that she would be pleased to command the Lady to be examin'd, of what Nature the Poyson was she had given her; whereupon, she discovered her Infernal Secret, and the Physicians accordingly applied those Remedies pertinent to the Contagiousness of her Condition, that in few days there was hopes of Life left in her Recovery.

She also commanded this Lady, *Endymions* Mother to be apprehended, and confined to a Chamber in her Court, with an Intention to punish her, according to the Nature and Quality of her Crime. This sad News being brought to *Philocles*, made him almost in such a distracted Condition, that, he was ready to offer Violence to himself. In Conclusion, *Aurelia* did not lose her Life, yet such was the force

of the Poison, that she lost the Hair of her Head, and her Eye-Brows; her Face was strangely puffed up; the Grain of her Skin spoiled, her Complexion ruined, her whole Body mightily swell'd, and her Eyes Distilling, ran with Water: In a word, she was grown so foul and ill favoured; that she who till then seemed a Miracle of Beauty, now seemed to be a Monster of Deformity. And they who knew her before held it the greater Misfortune of the two, that she remained in this unfortunate Condition, than if she had dyed of the Poison. Notwithstanding *Philocles* made a new Address to the Queen, and besought her Majesty, that he might obtain leave to convey *Aurelia* safe to his own House, supporting himself with this, that though *Aurelia* had lost her Beauty, yet could she not lose her infinite Vertues.

Thou Judgest right, (replied the Queen,) your Request shall be granted, *Philocles*; and still make that Favourable Construction, that thou hast in thy Possession a Rich Diamond unpolish'd; I would freely have resign'd her up as Beautiful to thee, as thou deliver'dst her to me; but since it is impossible, and cannot be retrieved; what was wanting by me in Favour to you, in being overseen by dis-
tering

being it so long, I will make up in Justice
Happily the Punishment I shall inflict upon
the Criminals, may in part satisfy thy De-
sire of Revenge; *Philocles* did very often
endeavour to entereed with her Majesty
to be graciously pleased to pardon *Endymi-
on's* Mother, since the Reasons she alledg'd
were sufficient Motives to embrace her Cle-
mency; In Conclusion, *Aurelia* and her
Parents, the Queen recommended to his
Care, and *Philocles* immediately conducted
them home to his Fathers House; many
rich Presents the Queen sent along with
Aurelia of Jewels and Diamonds, which
manifested her great Affection, and Love
she had for her; she remained for the space
of two Months, without being of ability
to be restor'd to her former Beauty. But
time flying away, her Skin began to fall
and to peel of, and a smooth Grain appear-
ed, and discovered it self.

In this interval, *Philocles's* Parents, pre-
suming it was not possible, that *Aurelia*
should become the same Woman, which
heretofore she was; resolved to send for
that Northern Lady, with whom *Philocles*,
by Agreement was to marry, before they
knew of his Affection to *Aurelia*, and this
resolve they put in Execution, without
acquainting him with their Design; not

doubting but that the present Beauty of this new Bride, would withdraw his Affection from *Aurelia*, whom they purposed, with her Father and Mother to send into *Spain*, and to gratifie with such store of Wealth, as should fully recompense their former losses which they had received, and sustain'd.

There passed not above six Weeks, when without *Philocles's* Knowledge, the new Bride arrived at his Father's House, with great Attendance, which accompanied her in her Journey; she was indeed a fair, and Beautiful Person, that next to *Aurelia*, when she was in her primitive Perfection; there was not her equal in all *Mandolin*. *Philocles* was infinitely amaz'd at the unexpected sight of the Lady, and so much fear immediately seiz'd upon his Spirits, lest the suddenness of her coming, should surprize *Aurelia*, and create in her some violent Passion, and put a period to her Life; and therefore to remove this Obstacle of Fear by a timely Prevention, he went to the Bed-side, where *Aurelia* lay; and finding only his Father and Mother in the Room, he sat down by her, and taking her by the hand.

Aurelia

Aurelio (said he) my visit to thee at this time is, to inform thee of a very prerty passage, which indeed has created in me a Wonder and an Admiration, and by Reason I would not have you surpriz'd, I come at this time to acquaint you with the pleasantness of the Intrigue; my Parents out of their great Love and tender Affection towards me, remaining as yet without full Satisfaction of being inform'd, of that extraordinary Passion of Love, which I ever had, and ever continue for thee, have brought a Lady hither, with whom they Design I shall Marry, not in the least asking my Consent, or enquiring into my Resolutions, nor having that Patience to expect thy Recovery; but I am apt to think, that their Conceptions are such, they believe, the great Beauty of this Lady, will induce me to relinquish you in this present Condition. But know, dear *Aurelia*, that your Perfections are so deeply imprinted in my Mind, that none but the Iron Teeth of time, with putting a period to my Life, can ever raze them out; from the first time I beheld thee, I admir'd and lov'd thee, and with so pure a flame, and free from all ends of sensuality, that I could have out-vied *Plato*, to enjoy thy Friendship. Though thy Beautilous Aspect

did Captivate my Senses, yet thy infinite Vertues took my Soul Prisoner: So that being Beautiful I lov'd thee, now thou art Deformed I adore thee; and for a farther Testimony of this my real Affection, by this, and this, and this, (imprinting several Kisses on her Lips) I for ever vow my self yours, from this very hour, and nothing shall be wanting to compleat our Happiness.

Aurelia remained in some suspence upon these Words of *Philocles*; and knew not well what to say or do, but often kiss'd his Hand; till at last trembling, she told him with many Tears that she freely accepted of his Affection, and wholly resign'd her self up to his Disposal. Her Parents were amaz'd and astonish'd at the passionate Expressions of these two Lovers, that they could not refrain from Weeping; *Philocles* desired them not to put on Grief, but told them withal, that he had never any Inclinations to the Northern Lady, neither would he withdraw his Affections from their Daughter, and if his Parents according to their Design should desire *Aurelia's* and their departure to *Spain*, that he would not have them decline it, but by all means accept of their proffer, and take the Voyage; and that they should certainly expect him

him within two years afterwards either at *Cadiz* or *Sevil*; assuring them upon the Word of a Gentleman, that e're that time was expir'd, he would not fail to be with them if Heaven permitted him so long Life; but if the time perfixed should be preterlaps'd, they should then rest assur'd that some great Misfortune or Death which was the more certain, had cross'd his intended Journey.

Aurelia told him, she would not only wait two years for him, but as long as she lived, till she heard the sorrowful News of his Death; and when-ever that harsh Note should reach her Ears, it would prove Instrumental to finish her Days; with these kind Expressions fresh Tears sprung from the Fountains of all their Eyes; and *Philocles* went immediately to his Parents and inform'd them, that he could entertain no such thoughts as to accept of their Kindness, in Marrying the Northern Lady, till by a twelve months Travel, he had qualified himself fit for a Matrimonial Life, farther telling them, that considering the solidity which belongs to that State, he would willingly make these Preparations to it, that nothing hereafter might disturb his Happiness. He used such Arguments, and laid down so good Reasons for what he said,
to

to the Parents of *Livia*, (for that was the Lady's Name) that they were all very well satisfied, and *Livia* was contented to remain in her Father-in-Law's House, till *Philocles* return'd after a year's Travel.

This being thus concluded and agreed upon, *Prospero* told *Philocles* of his Resolution of sending *Aurelia* and her Parents to *Spain*, if the Queen would be pleased to grant him that Liberty to effect it, for (continued he) perhaps the Air of her own Country will hasten and facilitate her Health, which now she begins to recover. *Philocles* that he might not give the least Suspicion of his Design, answered (though but coldly) his Father, that he might use his own Discretion and Pleasure, only he besought him, not to take from *Aurelia* any of those Riches the Queen had bestowed upon her. *Prospero* did promise & engage to him, that he would not command any thing from her which was her own; the same day he went and waited upon the Queen, to ask her Majesties Consent, as well for the matching of his Son to *Livia*, as for the sending of *Aurelia*, with her Father and Mother into *Spain*.

The Queen was well pleased at both his Requests, and approved of *Prospero's* Determination; and the same day without calling *Endymion's* Mother in Question, she dismiss'd her from her place in her Bed-Chamber, and Fin'd her ten Thousand Crowns to be paid to *Aurelia*. As for *Endymion* she banished him for six years. Four days were scarce past and gone, but that *Endymion*, began to take Order for his Banishment, having already given Directions for the returning of his Money.

The Queen then sent and commanded a Rich Merchant that dwelt at *Mundolin*, to come to her, who had a very good Correspondency in *France, Italy, and Spain*; to whom she delivered ten thousand Crowns, and requir'd of him Bills of Exchange, for the returning of 'em to *Aurelia's* Father in *Sevil*, or any other part of *Spain*. The Merchant discounting his Interest and Profit, told the Queen that he would make certain and sure Payment of them in *Sevil*, by Bills of Exchange upon another *French* Merchant, his Correspondent, in this manner and form, *viz.* That he would write to *Paris*, to the end, that the Bills might be made there by another Correspondent of his, because they would accept and allow of those that came from *France*, but
not

not from this Island; by reason of the Prohibition, betwixt those two Kingdoms; and that a Letter of Advice from him should save turn, by a private mark that passed between them two; and that without any more ado, the Merchant of *Sevil*, should pay him the Money by the Letter of Advice he would receive from *Paris*.

In fine, the Queen took such good security of the Merchant, that she made no doubt of the true payment of it. And not contenting her self with this, she sent for the Master of a Flemish Ship that lay in the River, and was to put forth the day following for *France*, only to take Testimony thereof in some Port, that he might be the better able to pass into *Spain*, under the Title of coming from *France*, and not from the Island; whom she earnestly entreated to carry with him in his Vessel *Aurelia*, and her Parents, and that he should use them well and kindly, and Land them in *Spain*, at the very first place he should come at on that Coast. The Master who desired to give the Queen Content, told her Majesty that he would do it, and that he would Land them either in *Lisbon*, *Cadiz*, or *Sevil* having taken sufficient security of the Merchant, and assurance from the Master, the Queen by way of Message, sent

sent unto *Prospero* to forbid him the taking any thing away from *Aurelia* either of Jewels or Cloths which she had given her.

The next day *Aurelia* with her Father and Mother, went to Court to take their leaves of the Queen, who received them with a great deal of Love, and Favour: the Queen gave them the Merchants Letter, and many other Gifts, as well in Money, as other Curious things for their Voyage. *Aurelia* with so much Elegancy express'd her thankfulness to her Majesty, for all Honours, and Favours received from her, that she Created in the Queen, fresh Obligations from her, to continue her Favours still towards her. She took her leave likewise of the Ladies; who now that she was grown disfigured, was very sorry she should leave them, seeing themselves free from that envy they had against her Beauty, and would have been very well contented, to have enjoyed her Gifts of Wit and Discretion; the Queen embraced all three of them, and recommending them to their good Fortune, and to the Master of the Ship; and laid her commands upon *Aurelia* to Advertise her of her safe arrival in *Spain*, and from time to time, of her welfare by the way, of the

French

French Merchant; she took her leave of *Aurelia*, and her Parents, who that very Evening imbarqued themselves; *Prospero* and his Wife, with the whole Family shed many Tears, extreamly troubled at her unfortunateness and departure.

At this their taking their leaves *Philocles* was not present, but procured some Friends to go abroad with him that day a Hunting; the better to divert him from expressing his Grief, and giving demonstrations of his Sorrow; the Gifts which the Lady *Sabina* gave *Aurelia* at her Voyage were many, her Embraces infinite, and her Tears plenty; her earnest entreaties that she would often write to her were numerous; and the thanks render'd by *Aurelia* and her Parents where answerable thereunto; so that though weeping, they left each other very well satisfied.

That night the Ship hoisted Sail, and having with a prosperous Gale of Wind touched upon the Coast of *France*; and there taking in such fresh provisions as were necessary for their Voyage into *Spain*: within thirty days after they entred into the Barr of *Cadiz* where *Aurelia* and her Parents disimbarqued themselves; and being known by all those of the City, they received them with Expressions of much joy; likewise

wife they received a thousand praises, and thanksgivings which was invocated to Heaven for the finding out of their Daughter *Aurelia* and of their Liberty which they had obtain'd, being first Captivated by the *Moors*, and afterwards by the Northern Islanders; having been made acquainted with all the Transactions of their Affairs, by those Captives whom the liberality of *Philocrates* had set free.

And now *Aurelia* in the mean time began to give great hopes of returning to a speedy recovery of her former Beauty; however they remained but a little more than a Month in *Cadiz* to refresh themselves of their weariness after their long and tedious Voyage; but went from thence to *Sevil*, for to see whether the payment would prove good of the ten thousand Crowns, which were to be placed to the Accompt of the *French* Merchant, who had undertaken for to see it disbursed. Two days after their arrival at *Sevil*, they enquired after him, and found him out, and gave him the *French* Merchants Letter, upon which he excepted of the Bill; but told them, that until he had received Letters from *Paris*, and a Letter of Advice, he could not pay them the Money, out with-

withal he expected every moment to receive Advertisment of it.

Aurelia's Parents had hired a very fair House, over against *Santa Paula* for the Conveniency of being near a Kinswoman of theirs, which was a *Nun* in that Monastery; and by reason *Aurelia* had inform'd *Philocles*, that if he made any enquiry after her, he should find her in *Sevil*; and that her Kinswoman a *Nun* of *Sancta Paula* would direct him to her House; and that for his better Information, and Knowledge; he needed give himself no farther trouble, than to enquire for that *Nun* which had the best voice in the Monastery; this being a very good token, and not easily to be forgotten; for indeed she had the rarest and sweetest Voice in all *Spain*.

It was forty days, before Letters of Advice came from *Paris*, and within two days after they were come, the *French* Merchant payed the Ten thousand Crowns to *Aurelia*, and she delivered them to her Parents; and with them and some other which they had got together, with some of *Aurelia's* Jewels which they sold; her Father began again to follow his Trade of Merchandise, not without the admiration of those who knew his great losses. In short, within

within a few Months *Aurelia's* Father repaid his lost Credit, and *Aurelia's* Beauty returned to it's former perfection: Inſomuch, that when any diſcourſe ariſe concerning fair Women, all of them gave the Laurel to the Northern Spaniard, who was as well known by this Name, as ſhe was for her Beauty throughout the whole City.

By the French Merchant of *Sevil's* Order, *Aurelia* and her Parents Writ Letters to the Queen of the Northern Iſle, of their ſafe Arrival in *Spain*; but pen'd with ſuch humble acknowledgements and ſubmiſſions, as the many Favors receiv'd from her Maſteſty, did require; they likewiſe writ to *Proſpero* and his Lady *Sabina*, *Aurelia* Complementing them with the Title of Father and Mother; and her Parents Stile- ing them their deareſt and beſt Friends: From the Queen they received no Answer, but from *Proſpero* and his Lady *Sabina*, they had a return, wherein they Congra- tulated their ſafe Arrival, certifying them, that their Son *Philoctes*, the next day after their departure went for *France*, with an intention to viſit ſome other parts of Chri- ſtendom, being requiſite and neceſſary for him to go, the better to eaſe his mind, which he confeſt to them was ſo much di-
X iturb'd;

sturb'd ; adding to these other discourses and Complements of much Love, and Affection, besides many other fair and Friendly protestations ; to which Letters of theirs they returned another in answer no less Courteous and Loving than Thankful.

Aurelia presently imagined, that *Philocles* leaving his Country, was upon his Voyage into *Spain*, to find her out, and flattering her self with this fond hope, she began to lead the most contented Life in the World, and studied to live in such a serious manner, that when *Philocles* should come to *Sevil* he might soon hear the good report that went of her Vertues, then come to the knowledge of her House. Seldom or never did she go out of Doors, unless it were to the Monastery, but spent all her whole time in retiredness, and good desires waiting with Expectation the welcom news of the Arrival of *Philocles*.

This her great retiredness did set on Fire and inflam'd the Hearts and desires not only of the young Gallants of that Street where she dwelt, but of all those who but once had a sight of her ; in the Night she was disturb'd often with Musick, serenading at her Window, and in the day careering with their Jennets, and from this her not suffering her self to be seen, and
from

from others much desiring to see her en-
 courag'd, their finding out of cunning Bawds
 which were Mistresses in their Art, and
 promised no less to shew themselves so, in
 soliciting *Aurelia*; and there were not some
 wanting, who endeavour'd to bring this
 their wicked purpose to pass, by Witch-
 craft, Charms, Sorceries, Philters, and the
 like lewd Courses; but against all these
Aurelia was like a Rock in the midst of the
 Sea, against which the Winds, and the
 Waves beat, and dash against it to no pur-
 pose.

A year and a half was now fully past
 when the approaching hope of those two
 years promised by *Philocles* began with
 more earnestness than hitherto it had done,
 to vex and grieve the Heart of *Aurelia*;
 but whilst she was Contemplating with
 her self, that *Philocles* was come, and that
 she had her desired object before her eyes,
 parleying with, and questioning him of
 the occasion of delaying his coming,
 and of his keeping so long from her, and
 then imagining to her self the just excuses
 which *Philocles* pleaded for his long ab-
 sence, and how willingly she believed and
 received them, and how lovingly and af-
 fectionately she embraced him in her Arms
 and hugg'd him in her Bosom, as being

part of her own Soul; then, even then when she was in the height of all her hopes, a Letter came to her Hands from the Lady Sabina, bearing date from Mundolin, some fifty days since, it was written in the Tongue of the Island, but she read it in Spanish as followeth.

Sabina to Aurelia.

DAUGHTER of my Soul, Bilonio, Philocles's Page, accompanied his Master in his Journey, and by a former Letter I advertized you, that Philocles made for France, the second day after your Departure, and from thence was to Travel farther; we have received no News from him this Sixteen Months, but yesterday Bilonio the Page, came home, and brought with him these sorrowful tydings, That Endymion had by Treachery killed Philocles in France; therefore (Daughter) Consider in what a Deplorable Condition, his Father, my Self, and Livia his Bride are upon the Arrival of this heavy Intelligence; the portent of it is such, that it has left no room for hope, but to entertain despair of ever overcomeing this our Misfortune. My earnest entreaties and best wishes are that you would still think of Philocles, who loved you with so real an Affection, and for the Sake of him, to invoke
the

Nov. V. *The Virgin Captive.* 309

*the Divine Powers to assist us in this Ex-
remity, and to grant us Patience, to our
lives end.*

Your disconsolate Mother,

SABINA.

By the Letter, Hand, and Seal, there was not any the least doubt left to *Aurelia* for not giving Credit to the Fatal News of the Death of her dear *Philocles*. She knew very well his Page *Bilonio* was a true and faithful Servant, and no way mendaciously given, and that he had no reason to forge this, as an Experiment to try her affection, and as little his Mother *Sabina*; being it would import them nothing in sending her news so sorrowful; in conclusion he could no ways divert her imaginations, or put out of her thoughts in the least, the contradiction of this unfortunate News. After she had read the Letter, without shedding a Tear, and without shewing any symptoms of Sorrow, with a Serene countenance, and to appearance a quiet and contented mind, she rose from the Couch where she sat, and kneeling down Devoutly, made a Solemn Vow to live a single Life all her days, since the God's had depriv'd her of her dear *Philocles*, and left her a Widow.

Her Parents dissimulated their dolorous Grief, and covered their Sorrows with their discretion, which this sad news had occasion'd in 'em, that they might be the better enabled to comfort their Daughter *Aurelia* in the anguish of her Affliction, who being now as it were fully satisfied of her Sorrow, moderating it with the resolution which she had put on, she fell to comforting of her Parents, to whom she discover'd her intent; but they advised her that she should not put it in Execution, but to stay till the two years were overpast which *Philoctes* had limited for his coming; for thereupon much depended, the Confirmation of the verity of *Philoctes*'s death, and she might then with more safety and security change this her Estate and Condition.

Aurelia followed their advice, and for the remaining Six Months she spent them in the exercises of a Religious Virgin; and for the better preparing and fitting of herself, for her entring into the Monastery, having made choice of that of *Santa Paula* where her Cousin resided; but now the term of the two years where expired, and the day approached wherein she was to take upon her the Religious Habit; the news whereof was soon spread throughout the

the whole City, not only amongst those who knew her by sight, but among those also that knew her only by report; now in regard the Monastery stood not far off from *Aurelia's* House, and her Father inviting his Friends, and Acquaintance, *Aurelia* had one of the noblest and most honourable Trains to accompany her thither, as upon such occasions was ever seen in *Sevil*.

Thus has the Story brought this poor distressed Lady to the very brink of the precipice; she that thought she had a loving Husband alive, being now deceived and frustrated of all her hopes, is now going to renounce the World, and dedicate her self to a retired Life remote from those pleasures which she thought to have enjoyed. Now in the manner of the Ceremony, there accompanied her the *Assistant*, the *Dean* of the Church, and the *Vicar-General* to the *Arch-Bishop*, with all the Ladies and Gentlemen of Title, and Quality, or Eminent Note that were in the City; so great was the desire which all of 'em had to behold the resplendent rayes of *Aurelia's* Beauty, which had so many Months suffer'd an Eclipse; and by reason it is the Custom, and fashion of those Virgins, which take upon 'em the religious Habit, to deck and adorn themselves,

selves, as bravely and as gallantly as they possibly can devise, who as one, that ever after, from that instant, sets up her rest, and takes her leave and farwel of all bravery, and wholly discards it. *Aurelia* was willing (that she might not break so Ancient a Custom) to attire and set forth her self in the best and most curious manner, that possibly she could invent; and therefore she arrayed her self in the same Gown and Girdle, and those rich dressings which she had on when she went to Court, with all those other ornaments of Pearls and Diamonds which the Northern Queen bestowed upon her.

Aurelia went out of her House on Foot; for her being so near unto the Monastery excus'd Coaches, though they repented afterwards they did not take them; for the concourse of the People was so great, that they would scarce give them way to get to the Monastery. Some showered Blessings on her Parents, others thanked Heaven for enriching her with so much Beauty, some stood on tip-toe for to view her, others having had a Prospect of her, ran to get before that they might satisfy the curiosity of their Eyes to see her again; but he that shew'd himself most solicitous in this multitude, and in so extraordinary

a manner, that many took great notice of him; was a person clad in a Slaves Habit, which they commonly wear, when they are redeemed and return home from their Captivity; this Captive then at that very juncture of time that *Aurelia* had set one Foot within the porch of the Covent, as the *Prioresse* and the *Nuns* were come forth to receive her; with a loud Voice, he cry'd out, Stay, *Aurelia*, stay; for whilst I am a live thou canst not enter into any Religious Order; at the hearing of these words, *Aurelia* and her Parents looked back, and espied a Person forcing his way through the thickest of the throng; which was the Captive making towards them; in the croud his Furr Cap which he wore, was lost off his Head, which made a discovery of a confus'd and intangled skein of Golden wired Hairs, curling themselves into Rings, and a Countenance intermix'd with Snow and a Vermillion Colour, so pure Red and White was his Complexion, having withal a curious Aspect; all which gave them such assured signal demonstrations, that induced them to believe he was a Stranger.

In short by pressing through the people with such hast, he received many falls by the way; but having as nimbly recovered himself, he came at last where *Aurelia* was,

was, and taking her by the Hand, Dost thou not know me *Aurelia*, (said he?) Behold, and view me well! I am thy dear *Philoctes*. Yes I know thee (reply'd *Aurelia*) if thou art not a walking Spirit, or some false assumed Apparition, that is come to disturb my repose. With that *Philoctes* with Tears in his Eyes, besought her that the strangeness of that Garb, wherein she now beheld him; might not prove any barr or hinderance to her better knowledge of him, and that this his mean and dejected Condition might not be any stop to the fulfilling of those Vows and faithful Promises, which they had so solemnly given to each other. Her Parents drew by degrees nearer to him, and viewing him very narrowly, in conclusion came certainly to know him: *Aurelia* notwithstanding the news of his death, chose rather to give more Credit to her Eyes, by the object which she had present before her, than to trouble her self to make any further needless enquiry, and therefore kindly Embracing the Captive; You are doubtless (said she) the person who can only hinder my determination, as being really my Husband, and can be no less than the better part of my Soul; and though thou hast been absent from thy *Aurelia* so long, yet I have

have thee Imprinted in my Memory, and have fix'd thee so firm in my Heart, by so true an Affection, that no Object in this World can undermine it. Turn therefore, dear *Philocles*, to my Fathers House, which is wholly at your Command, and there take possession, of your faithful *Aurelia*.

At the hearing whereof the standers by, where all of 'em struck with admiration, and stood amaz'd as people astonish'd; and nothing would serve them but a present satisfaction of their Curiosities, by hearing a relation of the whole Transactions: Whereupon *Aurelia's* Father told them, that the History required another place, and more time, to unfold it in, than opportunity at that present offer'd it self; and therefore besought them, since they were so willing and eager to understand it, that they would be pleas'd to return back with him to his House, and there he would give them a true and perfect Account, to their full satisfaction. This was no sooner said, to appease the People, but a blunt Fellow among the Croud cry'd out, Gentlemen this man is a great Pyrate, for I know him well enough, though he it may be thinks I don't; this is he whom some two yeats since, and somewhat more; took
from

from the Pyrates of *Argiers*, a *Portugal* Ship, which came from the *Indies* : Ye need not doubt, but that this is the same Man, for I confidently tell you that I know him ; for he gave me my Liberty, and Money to bring me home to *Spain* ; therefore Neighbours I tell you, I know him : And at that time, he did not only free me, but three hundred Captives more besides, furnishing them with Victuals, and Money. With these Words the Vulgar were in an uproar, and the desire afresh revived, which all of them were possess'd of, to know, and see such Intricate Riddles as these to be clearly Explained.

In short, the Persons of more especial Rank, and Quality, returned back to accompany *Aurelia* to her House, leaving the Nuns sorrowful, and weeping, that they had lost so fair a Sister, and Companion, as *Aurelia* ; who arriving at home, she brought the Gentlemen into a spacious large Hall, and entreated them to sit down ; and although *Philocles* was willing enough to take upon him to give the Relation, yet notwithstanding, he chose rather to trust *Aurelia's* Tongue, and Discretion with it, than his own : All that were present were in a still silence, and having their Ears, and Hearts ready prepared to be *Aurelia's* Auditors,

tors, she began to relate the Story, which I abbreviate to this: She deliver'd an account of all that had happen'd from the very day that *Prospero*, by Stealth, carried her away from *Cadiz*, till her return thither again; not omitting the Battel which *Philocles* fought with the *Turks*, and the Liberality, and Bounty which he had used towards the *Christians*; and the Solemn Vows which both of them had engaged each to other, to be Husband and Wife; the Promise of two Years, the News which she had received of his Death, and that so certain, as she apparently thought, that as a Motive it induced her to that Estate which so lately they had seen her, of professing her self a Nun: She likewise acquainted them with the Northern Queens Bounty towards her; also of *Philocles*, and his Parents Affection towards her: So ending her Relation, she desired *Philocles* that he would relate what had befallen him from the time that he left *Mundolin*, until this very present.

Which done, *Philocles* likewise made a short Relation of what had happened to him since *Aurelia's* Voyage for *Spain*, telling them how he had been pursued by his Rival *Endymion*; who with four others, set upon him, and Shot him into the Body
with

with four Pistols, leaving him for dead; and that his Servant, awakened with the Noise, out of fear, leap'd down from a Window, and hid him out of the Inn with such fear, and haste, that he did not so much as look back, or make any stay till he came to *Mandolin*; so that he might well bring the News of his Death; and that it was two Months, and better, before he was able to Travel; at the end of which he came to *Genoa*, where he found no other Passage, save two small Boats, which he, and two other principal *Spaniards* hired; that as they were coming for *Spain*, they were taken by the *Turks*, and stript of all that they had, even to their naked Skins; and that the *Turks* carried him to *Algiers*, where he found the Fathers of the Order of the Blessed Trinity, treating about the redeeming of Christian Captives, with whom he discours'd; and that they, mov'd out of Charity, though he was a Stranger to them, redeemed him for three hundred Ducats.

In conclusion, (said he) I came to *Spain*, with fifty redeemed Captives: In *Valencia*, we made a general Procession, and from thence, every one went his own way which he liked best, with these Ensigns, and Tokens of their Liberty, which are these poor
kind

kind of Habits. This day I entred this City, with so great, and earnest a desire to see my Dear *Aurelia*, to whom I was engaged; that without any other things detaining me, I enquir'd for this Monastery, where I was to receive intelligence of her; for further Confirmation of what *Philocles* had already said, Heaven had so ordained it, that a *Florentine* Merchant was present at all this, who was to pay him ten thousand Ducats, upon a Bill of Exchange, which escaped the *Turks* Hands, which he presently shewed, to the Admiration, and Amazement of them all.

Supper time being not yet come, *Philocles* told *Aurelia*, that he had heard a Story, coming home from his Captivity, which made him Weep, and think of his poor *Aurelia*, calling often to remembrance her languishing at his Fathers House in that Deplorable Condition, the Poyson had brought her to. *Aurelia* desired him to relate it; but *Philocles* being somewhat weary, desired *Brisac*, his Companion which came with him, to relate the Story of the *Platonick* Lover, whereupon, the Company being all silent, he began.

In *Florence*, there lived a Gentleman more rich in Vertue, Beauty, and in Courtesie, than in the Goods of Fortune, who most

most intirely loved a Young Gentlewoman, whose Name I will not rehearse, in respect unto her Kindred, who are descended of good, and great Families; but you may assure your selves, that the Story is most true; and because he was not descended of as great a House as she was, he durst not discover his Affection to her; for the extreme Love he had for her, was so absolute, and perfect, that he chose rather to imbrace Death, than the Entertainments of any thing that might prejudice her Honour; and seeing himself in so low a Condition, in comparison of her, he could not entertain the least hopes to espouse her; wherefore his Love was grounded on no other end, but only with all his power, to love her as perfectly as possibly he could, of which at last she received some Intelligence; and seeing the honest Affection, which he had for her, was so full of Vertue, and Civility, she thought her self happy to be esteemed, and beloved by so worthy a Person, and made so much of him, that he who could not have wished for more, was greatly contented at it.

But Malice, the Enemy to all quiet, could not long suffer the continuance of a Life so happy, for some Informers whisper'd in the Mother's Ear, that they much wondered,

dred, that this Gentleman was of such pow-
 er in her House; and that they suspected,
 the Beauty of her Daughter to be the only
 occasion of it, with whom they oftentimes
 observed him to be very Conversant. The
 Mother, who no ways doubted the Ho-
 nesty of the Gentleman, but assum'd to her
 self as much assurance of him, as she did of
 any of her own Children, was very sorry
 that there was spread abroad such an un-
 charitable Opinion of him; but fearing
 that some Scandal might arise, by the ma-
 lice of bad Tongues, she intreated him at
 last, that for a certain time he would not
 come so frequently to her House, as he was
 accustomed to do. This was hard of di-
 gestion to him, knowing that the civil Dis-
 course which he had always with her
 Daughter, did not deserve that restraint.
 Nevertheless, to stop the Report of all ill
 Tongues, he retir'd for a time, until that
 Report was silenc'd, and afterwards re-
 turned, as he had been accustomed to do.

His Absence had no ways diminished his
 Affection; being in the House, he under-
 stood the young Lady was to be Married
 to a Gentleman, who in his Opinion was
 not of that great Estate, but that his own
 Service might be as well entertained, and
 be as acceptable as his: He therefore be-

gan to reassume Courage, and imploy his Friends to speak on his behalf, supposing that if the Choice were offered to the young Lady, that she would prefer him before the other. Nevertheless, her Mother, and her Kindred, did make choice of the other Person, because he was far more rich; whereat the Gentleman was extreemly melancholy, knowing that his Mistress would lose in that Enterprize as much Contentment as himself. Whereupon, by degrees, without any other Sickness, he began to consume away, and in a short time, was so much changed, that it had clouded the Beauty of his Countenance, with the shadow of Death, to which, day succeeding day, and hour following hour, he did joyfully repair.

In this Extremity he could not forbear, sometimes for speaking to her whom he lov'd so entirely: But at last his Strength failed him, and he was reduced to keep his Bed, of which he would not advise her whom he loved so entirely, because he was unwilling, that she should partake in his Affliction: And suffering himself to sink into despair, he at last could neither Eat, Drink, Sleep, or take any rest; insomuch, that it was impossible to know him, by reason of his Leanness, and the strange, and sharp

sharp Countenance which he had. Some there were who advertised the Mother of his Mistress, of it, who was a Woman full of Pity, and loved the Gentleman so well, that if all her Kindred, and Confidents had been of the same Opinion as her self was, and her Daughter, they had preferr'd his Vertue, and fair Deportment, above all the others Wealth, and Riches; but the Kindred, who were on the Father's side, would not adhere to it: Nevertheless, she resorted with her Daughter to visit the poor Gentleman, whom they found rather dead, than alive; and perceiving the end of his Life did approach, he endeavoured to put himself in a posture to bid adieu to the World, thinking to have died without seeing any one.

But being ready to obey Deaths Summons, and descend into his last Sleep, unexpectedly beholding her, who was both his Life and Resurrection, he found himself so fortified, that he arise up in his Bed, and directed himself unto the old Lady; Madam (said he) some Occasion I presume hath brought you hither, to give a visit unto him who hath already one Foot in his Grave, and of whose Death you are the Occasion. The Lady made answer, how can that possible be; that he whom we

love so well can receive his Death by our neglect? Pray, inform me, Sir, upon what grounds of Reason you pronounce so hard a Sentence? Madam, (said he) although as much as it was possible for me, I have concealed that Love which I most faithfully have born unto *Mademoiselle* your Daughter, until my Friends (have motion'd the Marriage between her and my self) have been more Zealous upon it than I desired, perceiving thereby I have receiv'd the Misfortune of having all my hopes frustrated; neither doth it so much afflict me for my own particular, but my prophetick Spirit tells me with an assurance, she can never be so well respected by any other, nor will be so well beloved as by me. The Observation which I make, that she shall lose the best, and most affectionate Friend and Servant that she hath in the World, doth more afflict me than the loss of my own Life, which only for her alone I would preserve; but because I find it cannot be serviceable any ways to her, it is an Advantage to me to lose it.

The Mother and the Daughter hearing these Words, did do the best they could to comfort him; Sir, said the Mother to him, take Courage I beseech you, and
I

I here solemnly promise to you, that if the Divine Powers restore you to your former Health, my Daughter shall have no other Husband but your self. She is now here present before you, and I command her upon the Obligation of her Duty to make the same promise to you. Her Daughter melting into Tears, did the best that she could to give him an assurance of that which her Mother had promised; but he apprehending, that if he were recovered he should not enjoy his Mistress, and that the good Words that were given him were only by Degrees to restore him unto his lost Health, did say to them, That if these Words had been spoken to him but three Months ago, he had been the most Healthful, and the most Happy Man in the World, but this relief came so late to him, that it could neither be believ'd, nor hoped. And when he observed that, they did endeavour to inforce a belief into him of what they promised, he said to them since so faithfully you have promised that great Happiness which can never arrive unto me, (though now you both consent to it) by reason of the great weakness which is upon me, I shall crave a far less Favour, which as yet I have not had the boldness to demand. Immediately, they

both solemnly made Protestations, that it should be perform'd, and desired him with Confidence to demand it; whereupon, he said unto the young Lady's Mother, I earnestly beseech you that you would place her in my Arms, whom you promise shall be my Wife, and that you command her to imbrace and kiss me.

The young Lady, who was not accustomed to such familiarities, made some difficulty of it, but her Mother expressly did command her, seeing that he had lost both the understanding and force of a living Man. On that command the Daughter did advance her self upon the Bed of the poor sick Gentleman, and said to him, Sir, pray be Amorous; the poor Gentleman, languishing in his extream weakness, stretch'd forth his Arms, which were only Skin and Bones, and withal the force of his Body embrac'd the Cause of his Death, and kissing her with his pale and cold Lips, held her close to him as long as possible he could, and said to her, the Love which I have ever had for you hath been so great and vertuous, that Marriage excepted, I never desired of you any other Happiness than what I now enjoy, for the event whereof, and in this Possession of it, I with Joy shall entertain Death as the most welcome.

est Friend, after receiving so great a Satisfaction of having now my Desires in my Arms.

And having spoke those Words he took her again into his Arms, and with so much vehemence, that his weak Heart could not endure the strength of his Love, which was immediately abandoned of all the Faculties of Life, for his Joy was so much dilated, that the seat of the Soul failed, and although the poor Body continued a long time without Life, and therefore could no longer possess the rich Prize it so lately gain'd, yet the Love which the young Lady had till then concealed, did now so violently declare it self, that the Mother of the Living, and the Servants of the Dead had much to do to separate the Union, and were at last enforc'd, to pull the Living almost Dead, from him who was already Dead, whom they did honourably interr; but the greatest Triumph of his Obsequies, were the Tears, the Sighs, and the Complaints of this poor young Lady, who declared her self as much after his Death, as she concealed her self in his Life, and now as it were satisfied for the Injury she had done him. And since (as I have heard it reported) the Husband she was married to (to take off from himself thoughts

of Melancholy) could never be entertained with any true Joy or Comfort of Heart.

Brisac having ended his Story, Supper came in, and several sorts of Instruments played the while , several Healths went round, especially the Northern Queen's, *Philocles* and *Aurelia's*; they earnestly besought the *Assistent*, that he would honour their Wedding, which some eight Days hence they did purpose to Celebrate. The *Assistent* was very well pleased with the Motion; and within eight days after, accompanied with all the Highest and Principal Persons of the City, he waited on them to the Church. By these turnings and windings, and by these Circumstances, *Aurelia's* Parents recovered their Daughter, and were restored to their former Wealth; and she assisted by her many Vertues, in despite of so many Inconveniencies lighted on a Husband, of such especial Rank and Quality as *Philocles*, in whose Company she lived many years in great Amity and Splendour, leaving behind them Heirs to uphold the Names of *Philocles* and *Aurelia*.

T H E

Perfidious Mistress:

A

N O V E L.

V*Alentia*, one of the most Eminent Cities of *Spain*, the Nurse of so many Families, the Centre of Ingenious Spirits, and the sacred Receptacle of the Bodies of divers Saints, gave Birth unto *Don Principio*, a Person of Noble Extraction, Young, and Master of all those Excellent Qualities, for which Men are either lov'd or admired. Having left his Country about twelve years before in the Company of an Uncle of his, who had the Command of a Troop of Horse in *Flanders*, he behav'd himself with so much Gallantry in those Parts, that he was in a short time advanc'd to be Cornet, under his

his Uncle, who dying, he supply'd his place, and so continued twelve years in the Service of his Catholick Majesty, *Philip* the Third, against the revolted Provinces of the Low-Countries. He was at last in Compensation of his Services, Honoured with the Order of *St. James*, with the ordinary Allowances belonging thereto.

During that part of the year, which makes a kind of Cessation of Arms in those colder Countries, his abroad was in the City of *Antwerp*, where, by certain Letters from *Valentia*, he receiv'd the News of his Father's Death, which made him, being the Eldest, Heir of a very considerable Estate. He might indeed now have lived plentifully on his own, and pursued his Pleasures, as many other young Cavaliers did, who place all the Felicity of this Life in the Infamous Enjoyments thereof: But he, a Dutiful Son of Honour, chose rather to continue the Exercises of War, and serve his Country, than by a suddain Exchange of Enjoyments, blast his Reputation, and incur the Reproach of a Person impatient of hardship, and guilty of effeminacy. This Consideration discovers him to be much more stay'd than those young Gentlemen, who prefer whole Skins,
the

the shameful Blandishments of ease, and the warmth of their own Fires; before the Honour, which a Person truly deserving that Name should endeavour to purchase in the Service of his Prince.

But *Don Principio* considering withal, that he could not, upon this News of his Father's Death avoid taking a Journey to *Valentia*, to order the Disposal of his Estate, he desired leave to do it, of his most serene Highness the Arch-Duke *Albert*, who finding the just Occasion he had to go, easily condescended, proffering him, at his return, what Advancement he could reasonably expect; which obliged him to make the more earnest Promises to come back into *Flanders*, contrary to the Presumptions of many, who imagin'd that he had made an exit from the Military Stage, thence-forward to follow the more pleasant Divertisements of a Civil Life.

Being come to *Valentia*, where his Relations and Friends kindly entertain'd him, he began to order the Management of his Affairs, not trifling away his time in unprofitable Diversions, whereto young Men, are but too much addicted. For though he were a Soldier, yet was he no Lover of gaming, a Disposition for which he was
much

much to be commended, considering his Age and Quality : inasmuch as gaming Occasions a thousand Misfortunes, and unhappy Accidents, whereof there had happen'd not a few at *Valentia*. Nor was *Don Principio* as yet any way inclin'd to Love, though he could not want Occasions to express his Courtship, and how far he had studied the Mysteries of Love and Eloquence, since what added much to the Lustre of that City, was the great number of fair Ladies, shining in it like so many Stars; but his most ordinary Employment was the Exercising of his Horses. Of these he had four Excellent ones, extreamly well manag'd which he had bought in *Andaluzia*, and one which he rode a hunting the Bulls, according to the Custom of the Country, shewing himself, at that sport, more dextrous than all those, who were accounted the Bravo's of the City.

'Tis a Custom in *Valentia*, that in the beginning of the Spring, for the space of about fifteen days together, most of the Families of the City go about the Silk Husbandry, which they have in the adjacent Villages. One day, *Don Principio* rid abroad into the Country, through that Delightful plain, which is near a Garden not far from *Valentia*, known by the Name of
the

the Monastery of our *Lady of Hope*, and having spent the whole Afternoon about those pleasant Gardens, refreshing himself with the sweet scent of the Flowers of the Orange-Trees, whereof there is good store thereabouts, (the Sun being so far declin'd, that it seem'd to be equally divided between us and our Antipodes) he pass'd by a Country House, not far from the pleasant River of *Turia*, where he heard, at a small distance, one playing on a Lute, so well, that he thought he had not heard any Musick comparable to it before. He stopp'd his Horse, imagining the Person playing on that Instrument so excellently, might also sing to it. He expected a-while with much Impatience; but the Musicians putting the Instrument into several different Tunes, did not what he so much desir'd, which was, to hear her Voice. In the mean time Night came on, and *Don Principio* extreamly delighted with the place he was in, gave his Horse to his Lacquey, and commanding him a little distance off, he staid alone, under the green Balcony, whence the Musick came, to find out who made it. But he had not waited long, ere he could perceive, by the light of the Moon, that it was a Lady, who being got into that Balcony to take the Advantage of

a gentle Wind then blowing, began a-fresh her delightful Musick on the Lute, whereto she joined that of an admirable Voice, singing an Air, which made an absolute Conquest of that Heart, wherein all the hardships of War had not made the least breach. Whence we may deduce this Remark, that *Cupid* can do more in a Minute, than *Mars* in a *Troy*-Siege.

To say the same thing again in other Words, the Excellency of the Voice, and the transcendent Nimbleness of the Hand, the Compliance and Competition between them, so ravished our young Gallant, that he wish'd she might never give over, at least not till he were satiated with that Pleasure. But the Lady laid by her Instrument, and leaning her Breast on the Balcony, though 'twere Night, made a shift to see the young Gallant, whom her Musick had charm'd so long his Ears; who also perceiving her, would needs make his Advantage of so blest an opportunity. So that getting as near as he could, he broke forth into this Complement.

How infinitely happy must that absent Gentleman be, Madam, (for in the Verses she had sung, she bemoan'd the absence of a certain Person) who deserves so Excellent a Voice to bemoan his Absence. I should

should be extreamly glad of his Acquaintance, that I might give him that Account of this good News, that he is so obligingly bemoaned by so deserving a Lady as you seem to be. The Lady wondred to find her self surpriz'd, but recovering out of her Astonishment, though she knew not the Person who had spoken to her, yet she gave him this answer. As to the Song you heard, Sir, you are not to imagine it Sung out of any Tenderness I have for some Person now far from me, and therefore you may spare your self that trouble of making any enquiry who it is, and consequently of informing him how highly he is in my Favour, as you imagine. What Assurance can I have of that, (says *Principio*) knowing, by what I have heard from your own Mouth, the predominant Passion of your Soul? How, I pray Sir, may you be concern'd in that, (said she to him?) Very much, (reply'd he) for the Enchantment of your Voice hath been so powerful over him who hath heard it, that it is not without Reason he requires Assurances of what he asks you, to prevent the disquiet, which he must otherwise expect.

She

She could not forbear laughing at this Discourse of *Don Principio's*, and telling him withal, that Women do prudently, when they are flattered, not to believe any thing that Men say to them, in regard they never speak truth, representing things, not as they really are, but as they appear to their beguil'd Imaginations. Wherein, I beseech you, (says *Principio*) do you think, Madam, that I have told you any thing short of truth? Mistake me not, (reply'd she,) I don't charge you with a coming short, but going much beyond it, for you are so Prodigal of your Commendations of a Person you are very little acquainted with, nay, have not so much as well viewed, that you must either laugh at my simplicity, or think me a great admirer of my self, if I should credit what you say. To convince you of either your Error or palpable Flattery, of many, I need only give you this one Instance, that, when I my self, and others whose Judgements I dare trust, think I do not sing tolerably well, you would make me believe, that my Voice hath raised you into Extasies, when another would not have a Minutes Patience to hear me. Nay, Madam, (replies *Principio*) take heed your Reproaches rebound not upon your self, disparage not
your

your self so far, and slight not truth so much as to call her by any other Name than her own; you have an admirable Voice, and the Subject of the Words you sung must needs be such, since it is not to be imagin'd you sung them in vain; to make them perfect, there needs only the mixture of a little Jealousie, were it not that the happy Man, upon whose account those Words were made, knowing your Worth, cannot give you any.

Upon this, the Lady remov'd from the place where she was, that she might more commodiously proceed in her Discourse with *Dan Principio*, (though she knew him not) for she imagin'd he could not talk at that rate without some ground; which made her say to him, If you make any comparison between that Enchantment you speak of, and the suspicion you seem to have, I can assure you, that you are very well read in the Art of Flattery; and therefore, I beseech you, attribute not a Melancholy Humour, I am subject to, to any Regret occasion'd by the absence of any Person, for I was never yet troubled with any such thing, and I think, shall not as long as I live. I would give all I am worth in the World, (says he) conditionally, what you say were true. Would your ha-
Z
zard

zard be very great in that, (reply'd she)? Very little, (said he) considering the account upon which I proffer it; but I should say no less, were I possess'd of all the World, and think it well bestow'd. I am extreamly happy, (answers the Lady) to hear things so highly spoken to my advantage; but I should be transcendently vain, to imagine I should raise Love in any Person, before I am seen by him: Nay, I dare promise you, that if you had seen my Face, you would not, perhaps, be so resolute. My hearing cannot deceive me; (replies he) and I presume, that the Person, who is so excellent to satisfy that auricular part, may be the like in other Curiosities, which the envious Night permits me not a view of at present. And when you consider, that in the Discourse I have had with you, I have not talk'd of Beams, nor Splendour, nor us'd those Expressions, which they seem to have studied, who with affected Hyperboles, make it their business to flatter, and abuse Ladies, you should in some measure assure your self, that I begin to conceive an unfeigned Passion for you.

Well, to humour you a little, (says she) I have some Inclination to believe you, which will be much confirm'd, if you tell me who you are. I have a desire, (said he

Now VI The Perfidious Mistress. 339

to her) first to deserve it by my Services, that in case there may be any thing wanting in me, as to quality, those I hope to render you, may supply the Defect. Nay, then I am satisfied, (said she) that you are a Person of Quality, when you have such a distrust of your self. Pardon me, that I am forc'd to leave you, for I hear my self call'd to receive some Company newly come into the House, and if I should not immediately be gone, some would come and find me here : Do me the favour then (says *Principia*) to give me leave to wait on you here to Morrow at this time. I know not whether it may be in my power, (said she to him) however, do you not fail to come hither ; and though something may prevent my giving you the Meeting, yet shall I think my self very much oblig'd to you. I shall infallibly expect you, (re-
plys the Enamour'd Gallant) more fix'd in my Resolution, than the Stars, you see, are in the Firmament. Your last Words, (re-
ply'd she) if I cannot sleep to Night, will find my Thoughts a Diversion to deceive the dull Season ; but when you come next, I beseech you, be not so liberal of your Hyperboles, methinks they grate the Ear, and I think all that use them great Flatter-
ers, and consequently, no great Honourers

of truth ; especially considering, how meanly I deserve.

Having said thus, and given him a very obliging Salute, she got out of the Balcony, leaving *Principio* in a little disturbance, to see that she left him so soon, for he was extremely taken, as well with the Excellency of her Voice, as that of her Discourse: He had a great desire to know who she was, and she had the same Curiosity concerning him, for she immediately commanded a Servant to follow him, and not to return till he had discover'd who he was; which he did, without much trouble; inasmuch, as not far from thence, he saw him get up on Horse-back, and knew him, and presently return'd with News to his Mistress, who was over-joy'd to hear it was *Don Principio*; of whom she had heard such noble things, and seen behave himself so gallantly, at the Hunting of the Bulls.

Don Principio being come home, enquired of a Neighbour of his, who that Lady might be, to whom he had spoken and describing to him the place where she liv'd, he understood, her Name was *Donna Julietta*, (the Sir-name for some reason I shall omit) a Lady of great repute in the City, and of extraordinary Endowments, whose Understanding was equal to her Beauty,
Daughter

Nov. VI. *The Perfidious Mistress.* 341

Daughter to one *Don Speranza Lopez*, a Person of great Fame, for his long Services in the Wars; who having quitted the Military Life, and Married, well advanc'd in Years, had left that Fair Daughter, who was then Fatherless, and Motherless, with a very inconsiderable Fortune; in regard her Father's Estate consisted most in Pensions bestow'd on him by King *Philip the Second*, in requital of his Services. This Lady liv'd with an Aunt of hers, an Ancient Gentlewoman, who for the most part kept her Bed, and was then retir'd to that Country House, to look after her Silk Husbandry.

Thus was *Principio* fully inform'd of all he desir'd to know; though he had a particular account of the Perfections, which made the City of *Valentia* full of Discourses of her Beauty, and Wit, which was such, that she had the reputation of Writing good Verses, a Property very recommendable in a Person of her Sex, and Quality. *Principio* had never seen her, and understanding she liv'd at that Country-House, his desire was the more inflam'd; which made him ride abroad the oftner, hoping to be favour'd with such another Opportunity, as he had met with before; but he had not that Happiness a good while,

her Aunt being so sick, that she could not stir out of the Room where she lay. About fifteen days afterwards, the Old Gentlewoman being a little recover'd, she had the liberty to go and see the Procession of a Nun, at the Royal Monastery of *Zaida*, which was not far from the Country House; at which Ceremony all the Gallantry of *Valentia*, of both Sexes, was present. *Donna Julietta* came thither also, but having her Face covered with her Mantle, and attended only by one of her Women, she got into a little obscure Chappel.

Principio on the other side, who fail'd not to be there, hoping to meet her, on whom he had fasten'd his Affections, wonder'd very much that he found her not among the other Ladies; and suspecting she might be one of those who were retir'd into the Chappel, and had their Faces covered with their Mantles, he went in to them, with two other Friends, to whom he said, (presuming it was she as soon as he saw her) the new-made Nun is not much oblig'd to these Ladies, who retire to a place, where they cannot see those Ceremonies which all the rest are so desirous to behold: But I attribute this indifference to the little inclination they have to become Nuns. *Julietta* was not a little pleas'd to see *Principio*, whom

Nov. VI. *The Perfidious Mistrefs.* 143

whom she had before observ'd in the Church, and wish'd not so well attended as he then was. However, changing her Voice, she return'd him this Answer.

Being not invited to this Festival, we cannot expect the same welcome as those that are; and for the little Curiosity we discover to see the Ceremonies us'd, at the reception of a Nun, having seen the like several times before, we do not much mind this in regard the seeing of it but once, is enough to satisfy a person inclinable to be a Nun. Nay, then I see, (says one of *Principio's* Friends) you are not one of their number, who have a desire to enter into that Profession. I have no answer to make to you as to that, (reply'd she) only to give you my Sentiments; that a Person cannot enter into this State of Life, unless they are qualified for it; a Favour I do not yet find in my self to be worthy of. We may then (replies *Principio*) infer from this Discourse of yours, that you are not Married, but desirous to be so: What my Inclinations are, as to Marriage, (said she) I am not oblig'd to give you an account, who are very far from being related to me so nearly, as that I should acquaint you with my Resolution in a business of that Concernment: However, you may satisfy

us so far, Madam, (says *Principio*) as to let us know, which condition of Life you would rather choose. Which, I pray, Sir, would you advise me to, (said she to him?) That of Matrimony, (says *Principio*.) What, Whether I have the Accommodations requisite to enter into that State, or not, (reply'd she)? If all be wanting, (says he to her) you must endeavour to forget your self, for she who is not born to be a Nun, and cannot be Married, must remain Neuter, as being incapable of both. I could very well follow that advice, (said she.) But if you please, Madam, (says *Principio*) to discover what your Mantle permits us not to see, I will give you better Advice.

Coming up nearer to her, as if he were confident of that favour, she met his desires, and purposely gave him a full view of one of her fair Eyes, which *Principio's* two Friends also took notice of; if the advice you intend to give me, (said she) should prove to my disadvantage, 'twere better, I should still continue undiscover'd, though to hear your advice, I should not think it much to answer your Expectation. That can do you no prejudice, (says *Principio* to her) in regard we have observ'd some things which assure us, that you ought to choose the State of Matrimony, in which
you

Nov. VI. *The Perfidious Mistress.* 345

you would make the Person you should think worthy your Enjoyments, the happiest man in the World: Nay, ere I know any more of you than I do already, I wish my self the Person, for whom that Felicity is reserv'd. His two Friends affirm'd the same thing on their own behalf, being extremely satisfied with her Wit, and the little they had seen of her Face. Can there be any happiness comparable to mine, (said she) who have three such handsome Persons at my Devotion, of whom it is in my power to make one the happiest Man in the World? Well, Gentlemen, since you cannot expect I should make a sudden choice in a business of this concern, you will give me leave to examine your several Perfections, that I may pitch upon him, who, in my Judgment, may pretend to most.

Upon that every one began to celebrate his own worth, and undervalue his Competitors: They pass'd away some time in that pleasant Discourse, without any offence taken, though the place they were in should have minded them, that some other Conversation would have been more suitable: But the Lady having had the Patience to hear what every one had to say on his own behalf; she answered them all together, thus: I am fully inform'd of the Qualities,

Qualities, and Deserts of Persons every way so excellent : I am now to advise with my Pillow, which of the three I should prefer ; though, to tell you the truth, I have, in a manner resolv'd upon my choice already, finding in my self a stronger inclination for one of the three, than for either of the other two. The Person I mean, hath many excellent Qualities, but the particular inducement I have to think him worthy my Approbation, is, that I know him to be a very great Wit ; all I have to object against him, is, that he fears I am already engag'd to some other, whence I infer he is Jealous, and consequently of an ill Nature,

Principio immediately apprehended the spoke of him, reflecting on what had past in their Discourse the first time he had seen her. The time being come for people to go out of the Church, the three Lovers out-vy'd one the other, to find out passionate Complements to take leave of the Lady : *Principio* purposely staying to be the last, only to whisper these Words to her. 'Tis too great a Tyranny, Madam, towards a Servant so passionately yours, in so long a time, not to vouchsafe him a full sight of you. I beseech you, be more kind to him hereafter, least your further disdain
may

Nov. VI. The Perfidious Mistress. 147

may have some fatal effects on him ; the indisposition of an Aunt, (reply'd she) whom I must constantly attend, I hope, you will think an allowable excuse ; and what I tell you is much more true, than the Expressions you make to me of your Love ; but I will endeavour your satisfaction, and put a Period to your complaints, when, possibly, you least expect it ; *Principio* had not the time to return her any answer, and so he parted from her, leaving her deeply in Love, and extremely desirous to discourse with him more at Leisure.

Some few days after Fortune favour'd her with an opportunity to her own wishes, at the same Balcony where he had spoken to her the first time ; as soon as she perceiv'd *Principio*, she came down, and they discours'd a long time together, without any Interruption. The Effect of this interview and long Conference, upon *Principio*, was, that his Love, which before was little better than kindled, now broke forth into a Flame. *Julietta* came not much behind him, yet had that command of her Passion, as not to grant him the greatest kindness that can happen between persons of different Sexes, though it were out of this only reflection, that to have done it, at the first interview, would have
argu'd

348 *The Perfidious Mistress.* Nov. VI.

argu'd such a Compliance and easiness of Nature as no violence of affection should ever be able to excuse.

Principio, being now fully satisfyed that *Julietta* was both a great Wit and a great Beauty, writ several Love Letters to her, and the better to Express his Passion, he also sent her some Verses of his own Composure. *Julietta* knew, that *Principio* among so many other qualities he had acquir'd, was also skillful in Poetry, and consequently was the more surpriz'd and satisfy'd therewith: Some of his missives she very modestly answer'd in these terms.

The Letter.

THose Commendations which transcend the Merit of the person on whom they are bestow'd, do rather injure than oblige, and disparage the Judgment of the giver, inasmuch as the receiver, thinking her self unworthy the Honour, justly takes the Elogy for a Satyr. I am not so much a stranger to my self but that I can distinguish between flattery and truth; nor am I so poorly conceited of my self, but that I think I deserve somewhat of the Praises you give me. I shall think it an Obligation, if you abate some part of what you tell me, and find out a mean between
exces-

Nov. VI. The Perfidious Mistress. 349

excessive Praise and Contempt, for the former my own imperfections advise me to look on as an abuse: I have no great Experience of your disposition, and therefore think it not strange, if I give not the Credit you expect to your Poetry, because it is the Language of fiction; nor yet to your prose, because it proceeds from the same Author, who, 'tis very likely hath read Romances. Whether they were the Dictates of a sincere Affection, or an Obliging Complement, it is only in the power of time to discover, and withal to assure me, whether I am to acknowledge your Civilities, or resent the injuries you have done me.

The Fair Julietta found out an expedient to convey this Letter into the Hands of Don Principio, her newly caught Gallant, who, desirous to set himself right in the opinion of his Mistress, and assure her of the Fluency of his Style in things of this kind, caus'd the Messenger to stay, and take along with him this Answer.

The Answer.

I See then, Madam, so that you procure your own satisfaction, you care not what inconveniencies I may run into; since that to be more moderate in your praises (as you seem to desire)

150 The Perfidious Mistress. Nov. VI.

desire) cannot be without so much the greater prejudice to my reputation, in that I think myself far short of transcendency, in that particular, and I am forc'd to bring in the excess of my Love, to supply the defects of my Poetry; that I may therefore be no more guilty of such a Crime, I will henceforth express my self in Prose, and in some measure do what you Command me in your Letter; you will find it no great difficulty to believe me, if you were sensible what I feel; nay though out of modestly you pretend to be Ignorant of it, I desire you to do it; unless withal you resolve never to Consult your Glass any more. Well, Madam, it may be the time of your Conversion is not yet come; when it shall, your Eyes will be opened, and you shall find, that of all the Hearts, subdu'd by the Charms of your Beauty, mine perhaps may be the least, but withal the most passionate Captive. Time, which gives all things their Birth, Perfection, and Period, shall be the Touchstone to try whether this be truth or a fiction; nay I leave it to the same old Gentleman to assure you of a thing, you yet pretend to be ignorant of, which is, That, while I live, you shall be sole Sovereign Mistress and Directress of my Inclinations; and then perhaps good Nature, Gratitude, and Generosity will rather advise you to acknowledgements of the Love I bear you, than a re-
sent-

Nov. VI. *The Perfidious Mistress.* 351

sentment of the injuries you charge me withal.

This Letter gave *Julietta* that satisfaction concerning her new Gallant, which she expected; the frequent Visits where continued on *Principio's* side, and the Epistolary Correspondence on both sides: so that the inclinations they had one to another were, by these degrees heightned into a noble Flame of Mutual Love; his Mistress commanded him above all things to keep his pretensions to her, very Secret, which he inviolably promis'd to do; nay she was so scrupulous, as to that perticular, that if in the Church, or some other publick place, her Gallant did so much as cast his Eye on her, in the Company of some Friend, she immediately imagin'd, that he acquainted him with his Passi^on; and as if she had heard all their discourse, she fail'd not to send him a Letter concerning it, if she could not see him time enough, that he might receive her reproaches himself. *Principio* clear'd himself the best he could, still assuring her of the contrary; and inflam'd with Love and Indignation, all he could do was to dispel that diffidence, which troubled him extreamly; but the same Love, which is wont to reconcile the lesser differences and dissatisfactions, that happen between Lovers, helps them also out of the greatest and most difficult;

cult; 'twas *Principio's* design to marry this Lady, though her Fortunes were very low: but he delay'd the doing of it, till he had affected a business he was then engag'd to prosecute. His Uncle and himself had done the King very considerable Services in *Flanders*, for many years together, and he was then making his applications to his Majesty for some Command in Compensation thereof; and the obstructions and delays he met with in that affair contributed more to his after-happiness, than the Expedition could have done, as will appear anon.

Julietta had taken order that he should not be seen in the Street where she liv'd, much less look up to her Window to be seen by her, and it was punctually observ'd by *Principio*, who was not known to have given her a meeting any where; but she herself was the first that forgot what she had enjoyn'd; it happen'd thus: During the time of the Carnival, which in *Valentia*, is Celebrated with Masquerades, Balls, Tiltings and Disguises, *Principio* had in some of these met with his Mistress, yet without discovery of more than ordinary kindness between them, though they had talk'd, and danc'd together; one Evening after the Ball, there was to be a meeting of certain Ladies, at the House of a Friend of

Julietta's

Julietta's, to which she with some others had been invited: *Principio* and some other Friends of his were to be there, not in order to any Ball, but only to discourse; *Julietta* came there betimes before any of the rest, and soon after her a Woman, very sumptuously attir'd, attended by two Gentlemen Ushers of her own retinue, whom her Mother had order'd to wait on her to that Neighbour's House, who was very much her Friend. *Principio* coming into the Room, was very kindly receiv'd by the Ladies then present, whom he endeavour'd to entertain the most lovingly he could, till the rest of the Company were come in.

The Lady who came in last rose from her Seat to go and look upon a piece of Tapstry, that was in the Room, wherein there were represented lighted Torches; the Admiration she express'd at the Excellency of the Work-man-ship, oblig'd *Principio* to come also to see it; there was Pen, Ink, and Paper upon the Table; *Lucretia* (so was the Lady called) took the Pen in her Hand, and drew several strokes upon the Paper; *Principio* took occasion to commend all she did with such high Complements, that his Mistress, who was already possess'd with a Jealousie, to see him so near her, was almost ready to burst with indignation to hear them; he minding

only his own diversion in all he did, took no notice of it ; nay on the contrary, being acquainted with *Lucretia*, through her Brother's means, whom he often visited, and a person of much Freedom in his Behaviour, he continu'd his Gamesome Humour, and snatch'd out of her Hand a Pen she was making to Write withal ; after which having dash'd a little Ink upon her Hand, he jestingly told her, that the blackness of the Ink never appear'd less than it did then ; she pretending to be displeas'd at that Freedom, gave him a clap upon his Shoulder with her Hand, to get off the Ink ; but perceiving he laugh'd at the revenge she had taken, she gave him another harder than the former. *Julietta* who minded their Jestings more than what was said to her by the Mistress of the House, (with whom she was then discoursing) starts like a Fury from her seat, and not considering what she was doing, gave *Principio* such a blow over the Face that his Nose bled ; the poor Gentleman was extremely Startled at it, and all he could do was to take a Handkerchief out of his Pocket, to receive the Blood ; telling his Mistress, very Coldly, Well, Madam you see I have kept the Secret Committed to my trust ; you have first reveal'd it and transgress'd the Law you have made your self ; concluding this

this reproach with a low Congy, he quitted the Room, and went home.

Julietta had no sooner given the blow, but she was infinitely troubled at it, not so much out of the respect she bore to the Mistress of the House, who was her intimate Friend, as for her, who had occasion'd her Jealousie; in this interval, her Sisters, upon whose account this meeting had been appointed, coming into the House, *Julietta* had the opportunity to retire with her Friends into another Room.

Being got together, only they two, my dearest *Julietta*, (says her Friend to her) What do you think of? How are you grown another Person than what I have ever known you? I have hitherto admir'd your Modesty and Reserv'dness; how you should now be Guilty of such a miscarriage in Behaviour, is the Matter of my Astonishment; the Action you have done, assures me, without your speaking, what, in many Words, you should hardly have perswaded me to. I was ignorant of this Affection of yours, because you ever kept it secret; and since I know it by this discovery, I am more oblig'd to your Jealousie, than your Friendship. *Principio* is a person of Worth and Quality; I am very glad he is your Servant, you may henceforward publickly own him, for it is to no purpose to dissemble.

Julietta was at such a loss, that she knew not what to answer; but having a little recover'd herself, I must acknowledge, dear Madam, (reply'd she) since this Eruption of my Jealousie and Indignation hath betray'd me, that *Principio* is my humble Servant; my inconsiderate Passion, hath, to my Shame, discovered what I kept not only from your knowledge, but that of all others. I must acknowledge, I say, that *Principio* serves me with a violent Passion, which yet exceeds not the Affection I have for him. I never saw him so indifferent, as he discovered himself in this last Action; his familiarity with *Lucretia* touch'd me to the quick. That short fury, which we commonly call Jealousie, forced me to that extravagant discovery of my Love. Since what is past cannot be recall'd, (said her Friend to her) let us find out some Remedy, to alleviate the Inconvenience, for it is not fit we should be depriv'd of *Principio's* good Company, nor he of the Pleasure of this meeting. Besides, we should not give *Lucretia* the time to make any Reflection on this Accident, or conceive Apprehensions which would prove Disadvantageous to you. What is to be done in this Conjunction, (reply'd the Jealous Lady:) The only way I can think of, (says her Friend) is, immediately to write to him. She followed her Advice, and sent him these Lines,

The

The Letter.

JJealousies, when they are really the Effects of Love, though expressed with some harshness, are rather to be accounted Favours than Affronts, by a Lover, whose Soul exhales a sincere Passion towards his Mistress. The Injury I have done my self in wounding my Reservedness, is greater than the Violence you will do your self in passing by what is now past. It much concerns my Reputation, that you immediately return to the meeting. But if you persist in your Resentment, you will have farther Occasion, if the loss of my Favour may give you any.

A Messenger was immediately sent with this Letter to *Principio*, who exprest much gladness at the Receipt of it; and, without any Recollection, obey'd his Mistress, as being satisfied in Mind, that nothing discovers a real Passion, more than Jealousie. He comes very gayly into the Room where the Ladies were, which *Lucretia* perceiving was not a little troubled, for she doubted not of his being in Love with *Julietta*, though she thought so well of him as to wish he had rather address'd his Affections to her self.

Principio finding himself in the presence of *Julietta*, thought it not requisite to speak to any other; ere he had first assur'd her of his Compliance with her Desires. Approaching her with a Graceful Smile, he made her this Complement, Madam, I have consider'd this Room with as much Respect as if it had been a Temple, and your Person no less; since it not only kept me from profaning the one, and offering any violence to the other, but also from revenging by that kind of Du-el, which the Law permits between Gallants and their Mistresses. (*Julietta* reply'd) being so much, as I am, a Servant to Madam *Lucretia*, I have taken upon my Account the Affront you have done her, when she would have shown you a Kindness, never thinking of any Law that permits a Man to revenge himself of a Lady by way of duelling.

Lucretia knowing that that indiscreet Action of *Julietta's* proceeded meerly from her Jealousie, would not be engaged in her excuses, so that she very confidently made answer thus. There was never so great a Familiarity between us, Madam, as might oblige you to take my part with so much Passion, in an Occasion wherein I should not have wanted Confidence to revenge my self. But not knowing any thing that should oblige me to Jealousie, and thinking not the affront done

done to me so great as you would perswade me it were, my Precipitation was not accordingly so great as yours. I am very glad you make me the Riddle of your Interpretations; let them be thought such by whom you please, but for my part, I have already given them an easie Solution, such as none in the Company can be ignorant of. *Julietta*, not a little mov'd at the freedom of that Discourse, would have reply'd; but the Gentlewoman of the House unwilling the Difference should go any further, interrupted them, and obliged them to sit down, for several other Ladies were coming into the Room.

Principio was, that Night, not only very sumptuous in his Apparel, but also full of Excellent Discourses, insomuch that there were few Ladies in the Company, who were not much taken with him, among whom *Lucretia* was the most concern'd of any. Her thoughts were full of what had happen'd between her and *Julietta*, and she was now resolv'd to use all the Artifices she could, to get away that Gallant from her; wherein at last she had her Desire, as the Story hereafter mentions.

All the Favours which *Principio* receiv'd of his Mistress, were pay'd by her with extraordinary Demonstrations of Affection; for in-

deed the Lady had a greater Kindness for him than any other, though at that very time she lov'd another absent Gentleman, whom she had granted more particular Favours than ever she had *Principio's*. For the Gallant then absent had receiv'd of her by way of Kindness, what in Matrimony is called due Benevolence, and consequently had she not been lost to all Modesty, she would have kept the promise she had made him, since the breaking of that and her own Reputation were not distinct Actions.

This Gallant of hers, whose Name was *Don Frederick Dorella*, had made a Journey to *Madrid*, to prosecute a Suit at Law against the Count of *Boceyna*, his Uncle, for a considerable Estate in Lands, which at last was decided in a Sovereign Council of *Arragon*. He was return'd to *Valentia*, with a Decree to put him into Possession of the said Estate which amounted to two Thousand Crowns *per Annum*. *Julietta* was extreamly put to her Shifts, not knowing how she should keep in with both these Gallants, and satisfy them at the same time. She considered that her Honour was engag'd with *Don Frederick*, and her Love with *Principio*: Her Affections being so much the more heightned towards the latter in requital of his assiduous Attendances, as it was remitted towards the former,

Nov. VI. *The Perfidious Mistress.* 361

er, by Reason of his Absence. So that it is as much a Miracle to see some Women forget their Engagements, (when they to whom they are made, are once out of their sight) and mind only the present Enjoyments, as to see Geese go barefoot.

But as drowning Persons will catch at any thing, and the distress'd are commonly glad of any Advice, this Lady whom we represented before, one of the greatest Wits of her Nation, reduc'd to this extremity, must needs advise with a Maid, whose Fidelity and Secrecy she had great Assurances of, resolving in her self to find out some Expedient, whereby she might make sure of the one and not lose the other. She receiv'd *Don Frederick* into the House, in the Night, thinking she could not civilly deny him the Reiteration of a Kindness she had once granted him: and she kept the other in hand with Love Letters, allowing him not to see her as often as he desired, as well to add fuel to his Love, as that the other, whom she was more oblig'd to favour, might have the freer Access. Her excuse to *Principio* was, that she wanted not Over-seers, that her Friends were very shie in point of Honour, that one of them watched her Day and Night, and that the greatest Pleasure he could do her, was, to forbear passing through the Street where she liv'd,

liv'd, till she had assured him that the Coast was clear. *Principio* who had really lov'd her, and suspected nothing of the Imposture, easily credited all she said and punctually obeyed her.

Don Frederick was willing to requite the Kindness he had receiv'd from her, by marrying her; but having a Mother alive, who would not have been well pleased with that Marriage, he took Occasion to put it off, hoping it would not be long ere she were removed out of the way, as being very ancient. So that he passed away the time very jocundly with his Mistress, whilst she by her cunning Insinuation and Artifices, endeavour'd to bring *Principio* into a Fool's Paradise, and make him believe all proceeded from Affection.

There happened about this time a Difference between *Principio*, and another Gentleman, of the most eminent about the City, whose Name was *Don Renatus*, as they were playing at Tennis. Some Friends interposed between them, and 'twas conceiv'd they were made Friends; but the Reconciliation proved such as neither was satisfied. *Principio* was a Person of a Generous open Nature, grounding his Gallantry on the Employments he had in *Flanders*, and imagining that no Man, having any thing to say to him, would
do

Nov. VI. *The Perfidious Mistress.* 363

do it otherwise than by the ways of Honour. But his Adversary, conceiving he had more reason to be offended than the other, who had not expressed so much Resentment, smother'd his Malice, in hopes of an opportunity, wherein he might revenge himself with Advantage.

Don Frederick was gone to a certain place in the Country, where he staid three or four days. *Julietta* who had a great Kindness for *Principio*, sent him word to come to her House in the Night, but so secretly and with such Caution that none might perceive it, inasmuch as the freedom she gave him, concerned her Reputation in the highest Degree. The Amorous Cavalier obey'd her in this, as he had done in many other things she had commanded him, coming thither at such hours as it was not likely any should see him. Thus by his Credulity he promoted the Designs of this Deceitful Woman, who would craftily make the most of both her Gallants; so that, preventing their being Jealous of one another, nay, knowing that they were Rivals, she gull'd them both. Had she been free to make her own choice, no doubt she would have pitch'd upon *Principio* for her Husband. But *Frederick* being afore-hand with her, she could do no less, though 'twere only out of a fear to lose him, and prevent
the

the Reproaches he might make her, than keep him still in play, and expect the Performance of the Promise he had made to Marry her, as soon as his Mother were march'd off. But out of an Apprehension that even then he might possibly break his Word with her, she thought it Prudence to give *Principio* also a little more Line. Upon these Considerations, she suffered her self to be Court'd by both.

Principio being now more kindly entertain'd by his Mistress than he had been, began to conceive a hope to obtain of her, within a short time, the Grand Favour can be expected from a Woman. But he reckon'd without his Hostess; for it was her fear, that if she oblig'd him in what he so much desired, he might become absolute Master of those Inclinations, which she had so dexterously divided between them both. However, *Principio* pass'd away the time pleasantly enough, during the absence of *Frederick*; but as soon as he was return'd to *Valentia*, *Julietta* began to put on a greater Reservedness, and would not be so much as seen by *Principio*. She made him such plausible Excuses for it, that he, loving her as he did, believ'd all she said, though not without some Suspicion, that there might be something else in the Wind: Upon which account he oft-

en

en disguised himself, that he might, undiscovered, visit the Street where she liv'd, in the Night. But he never could meet with any Person, of whom, he might conceive any Jealousie; yet that Disguise did him a Courtesie; for by that means he escaped being discovered by the Cavalier who sought to be reveng'd of him. That he met not with *Frederick* in that Street, proceeded hence, that *Julietta*, fore-seeing all Inconveniences, had order'd, that *Frederick* should come to her House, through that of a She-Friends of hers, which was another Street, and had a back-Door, leading into a Garden joyning unto *Julietta's*, in whose Embraces she spent the whole Night.

It happen'd, one Night, that *Principio* being in the Street where his Mistress liv'd, his Adversary, *Don Renatus*, attended by two of his Servants, comes into it by another way, being not well assured it was he, they follow'd him at a Distance, being loth to do another that Mischief which they only intended him. *Principio* at last observ'd them, and finding himself unfurnished with Pistols, to deal with Persons who never went without them, as having only his Sword to defend himself, he besought him to make the Signal he was wont at *Julietta's* Door, who as good luck would have it, was come down
Stairs,

Stairs, after she had put *Frederick* into Bed. She looks out at the Window, to see what her second Gallant would have, who, as soon as he perceived her, desir'd her immediately to open the Door, otherwise he was a dead Man, in regard *Renatus* his Enemy followed him, and he was destitute of Weapons to defend himself. The Lady imagin'd that *Principio* would only have put a trick upon her, and only said so, that he might be the sooner admitted in: But *Principio*, with many Oaths, affirm'd he said nothing but the truth, and that *Renatus*, with two others, were coming upon him.

Julietta was extreemly troubled at his Discourse, and for answer, told him, that a certain Gentlewoman of her Acquaintance was come to see her, and to be her Bed-fellow that Night, and that she durst not open the Door, least she should see him. *Principio* pressed her the more to do it, aggravating the danger he was in, and charging her that she had little love for him, when she deny'd him entrance into her House in so great an Extremity, which the greatest Stranger in the World would not have deny'd him. *Julietta* told him again, that she could not do it without prejudice to her Reputation. That as to the love she bore him, he needed not doubt of it, since it could not be greater than

than it was, and call'd Heaven to Witness, that she was extremely perplexed, that she could not satisfy his Desires. *Principio* told her, that since her Friend was in a Room above-Stairs, she might without any scruple open the Door, and let him stay below, till such time as he might retire with safety.

Julietta seeing him so importunate, imagined it proceeded from some Suspicion he had conceiv'd of her, and that he had seen *Frederick* coming into the House. To be assured whether it were so or no, she look'd into the Street, and saw the three Men who pursued him, and whispering one to another, as being in some uncertainty whether it were the Person they looked for. These Circumstances fully satisfied her, that *Principio* was in very great danger; and to find some Expedient to give him entrance, she bid him expect a little with Patience, and she would see whether she could open the Door. She went up Stairs to see *Frederick*, who, wondering at her stay, ask'd her what occasion'd her going down. She told him her Aunt was not fall'n a Sleep, and that she could not come to Bed, till she were. Desiring him to have a little Patience.

Having

Having thus satisfied him, she went into another Room, to consider with her self what might be done in such an Extremity. On the one side she saw *Frederick* possess'd of her Bed, a Person of a Fantastick Humor, yet one whom she was engaged to, and had made Master of the most precious thing she had, and still humoured out of a hope to be one day his Wife; so that her Honour was on his part. On the other, the Love she bore *Principio* would have prevailed with her, not to suffer him to be assassinated by his Enemies, which he must run the hazard of, if she relieved him not, it being in her power to do it: So that she was strangely distracted, not knowing whether she should follow the Dictates of Honour, or those of Love. At last, after divers Considerations, that of Honour prevailed with her, and oblig'd her not to receive *Principio* into the House. For if she did, she reflected that her Reputation would be endanger'd two ways; one, that it could not be done without *Frederick's* hearing of it, who would thence take Occasion to break his Promise; another that if *Principio* were pursued by his Enemy, and that he should see him come into her House, he would be apt to make an ill Construction of it, and that might come to the Ears of *Frederick*, even though he saw him not.

Hav-

Having thus resolv'd to stick to the surer side, she went down stairs, and finding *Prin-*
tipio still at the Door, my dearest Love, (said
 he to him) Heaven's my Witness, how wil-
 ling I am to satisfy your Desires, by giving
 you Entrance, not only into my House, but
 even into my Heart, which is absolutely at
 your Disposal. I see you are pursu'd, as you
 told me, but it would be too great an Incon-
 venience to me, that you should be seen co-
 ming into my House at such an unseasonable
 hour, being a Person yet so unblemish'd in my
 Reputation as I am. I beseech you consider
 with your self what Discourses it might Oc-
 casion; besides my Friend, who is my Bed-
 fellow this Night, is awake, and, as Women
 are extreemly inquisitive, she will be desirous
 to know the Occasion of my stay, and who
 hath kept me so long from her, for there is a
 very great familiarity between us. Pardon
 me therefore, that I cannot grant your de-
 sire; it is the greatest Affliction imaginable
 to me, that I must leave you in such a dan-
 ger, but reflecting on that of my Reputa-
 tion, I know you would not have me to ha-
 zard it, since I doubt not but you are so ge-
 nerous, as to prefer my Honour before your
 own Life.

This unworthy Treatment of his Mistrefs, in so preſſing an Extremity, went to the very Heart of *Principio* ; nay he was ſo ſtartled to find himſelf thus deceived, that it would not have troubled him much if *Renatus* had ſet upon him, that he might be reveng'd of the affront done him by *Julietta*, by dying before her Eyes. I ſhould never have imagin'd, (ſaid he parting from her) that you could have been ſo Barbarous, as to put me off ſo poorly in ſo dangerous an Exigency, or ſo inexorable, upon the entreaties of ſo faithful a Servant. If you ever had any real Kindneſs for me, that Reputation you ſtand ſo nicely upon, would have run no hazard, either as to your Friend, or my Enemy, by your receiving me as a Husband, upon which account only I made my Addreſſes to you : upon which if you, ungrateful Woman, had entertained me, and not inſiſted on frivolous Reſpect grounded on ſuch Maxims as I cannot like, my Heart had at this time been abſolutely at your Diſpoſal. To make it deſervedly ſuch hath been the main end of all my Courtſhip and Services, but Heaven would not permit it ; and ſince I could find no Compaſſion in your Heart, I will go and try what I may expect from my Enemy, with a Reſolution never to forget a procedure I am ſo much aſtoniſh'd at.

Julieta would have made him some answer, and, extremely mov'd at his Discourse, was resolv'd to hazard all, to assure him of her Affection. But when she went to call him, he was got a great way down the Street, pursued by *Renatus*, who being assured he was the Person he look'd for, was going to set upon him. His Resentment of her Unkindness, considering the Imminency of the danger, seem'd just to her, and being extremely troubled therewith, after she had blam'd herself, she quarrell'd at Heaven, which in the mean time secur'd her Lover from Danger, and reserv'd him for happier Adventures. *Renatus* coming within Pistol-Shot of *Principio*, perceiv'd that he had met with his Friend *Don Alonzo*, who with his Servant, was going home to his Lodging, which prevented him from executing his Design. For *Renatus* being, in appearance, and that before several Persons, reconciled with him, all would have blam'd him, had he assaulted him upon the old account, especially at Advantage, and with Fire-arms. So that seeing he had lost such a fair opportunity to revenge himself, he slipp'd aside, to avoid being known, imagining he had not been discovered. *Principio* related the whole Story to his Friend, and how he had been pursued thither; which he much wondred at, seeing

Renatus so little minded the Engagement he had made before so many Persons of Quality, and that so slight a Business should stick so close to his Heart.

It was by this time very late, and as well for that Reason, as to be satisfied of what he suspected, *Principio* being near to *Don Alonzo's* Lodging, resolv'd to take part of it that Night, which his Friend was very glad of. They got in, and ere they lay down, they fell into Discourse about what had passed. *Principio* opened himself to *Don Alonzo*, and acquainted him how Affairs stood between him and *Julietta*. *Don Alonzo* had heard somewhat of the mutual Love there was between her and *Frederick*, and was vexed to see his Friend had so far mis-placed his Affections, and particularly at the Resolution he had made to marry her: whereupon he could not forbear telling him what he heard of her and *Frederick*; which *Principio* understanding, he immediately presum'd, that the reason why she opened not the Door, must needs be, that her former Gallant was with her. A thousand Passages came into his Mind, but he particularly reflected on the Prohibition which the crafty Gentlewoman had made him of speaking to her in the Night, and that it was only since *Frederick's* return from *Madrid* upon which communicating his Thoughts to

his Friend; they jointly concluded, that *Frederick* must needs be in the House with her. To be fully assured of it, they ordered a Servant of *Don Alonzo's* to examine the Business, and to continue in the Street, till it were day: and for further certainty, another Servant was appointed to stand Centry in the other Street, by which *Frederick* was wont to get in at a Back Door. With this Precaution they went to Bed together; but *Principio* was in such a Disturbance, that he could not sleep a wink. About half an hour before day, one of the Servants brought Intelligence that he had seen *Don Frederick* going out of the House belonging to *Julietta's* Friend, and that about the same time, he had seen *Julietta* in one of the Windows that looked into that Street, looking on him as he went out, and that he was sure it was no other than she herself. This Account satisfied *Principio* so fully, that all the Love he formerly bore that impudent Woman, immediately vanish'd. 'Twas not imaginable, that *Frederick* frequented that House upon the account of the Mistress of it, who being turn'd of fifty, could not be courted by any Gallants. Besides, she had the Reputation of being a very Charitable Person in Love-Affairs, and was wont to promote the Enjoyments of younger People, and to give Excellent Di-

274 *The Perfidious Mistress.* Nov. VI.
rections how they might most Cautiously accomplish their Desires.

The Night following, *Principio* would himself, from the House of a certain Friend of his, see *Frederick* getting into the Sanctuary of that Charitable Sollicitress; and for his further Assurance, he lay perdue upon the Roof, whence he discovered. That that favoured Gallant continued there, till word was brought him that he might make his Entrance into *Julietta's* that very Night. The disssembling Gossip, would needs endeavour to satisfy her Lover, as to the Dissatisfaction he might justly have conceiv'd of her: To leave nothing unattempted, and to keep in as near as might be withal, she sent *Principio* a Letter by her Servant-Maid in whom she reposed great Trust, and who was not a Stranger to the Loves of both the Gallants, and promoted the Design of her Mistress in abusing them, for the Advantage she reaped thereby. Hearing she staid to speak with him, he called her up, and receiv'd from her a Paper containing these Words.

Julietta to Principio.

I Should not think the Resentment you justly have against me so great as I do, were I able to express the Tronble I am in to have been the
Oc

Occasion of it. That I have not been so Compassionate, as the Exigency required, be pleased to attribute to the Tenderneſs I had for my own Honour, the Conſideration whereof made me inexorable. I love you beyond my own Life; but one of my Birth and Sex may be pardon'd, if ſhe Sacrifice all things to the ſecurity of her Reputation, rather than expoſe her ſelf to the Cenſures of ill Tongues. You may well imagine, when I denied you entrance into my Houſe, that my good Name muſt run a ſtrange hazard with that troubleſome Bed-Fellow, whom, to my unhappineſs, I was then forc'd to entertain. Notwithſtanding the Reſentment wherewith you left me, you could not but obſerve the Diſtraction I was in: whence you may infer, how thankfully I have ſince acknowledged the Indulgence of thoſe higher Powers, who reſcued you out of a Danger, which I thought unavoidable. You could not have loſt your Life in that Adventure, but mine muſt have run the ſame hazard, and I do not know any thing but Honour which I ſhould prefer before two things I account ſo pretious. Let me therefore Conjure you, to ſmother your Reſentment of it, and to appeaſe your Indignation: which if I may obtain of you, I ſhall think all the Devoirs your Love may require little enough to requite it. Your Compliance with my Deſires herein will inform me, what Tenderneſs you have for her Satisfaction and Life, who prays Heaven

376 *The Perfidious Mistress.* - Nov. VI.

to preserve yours, as she wishes it may her's, who loves you with all her Soul.

JULIETTA.

Principio was extreamly incens'd at this Letter, and though he did all he could to dissemble it, yet the Maid looking on him very earnestly during the perusal, sufficiently observ'd it in his Gestures. He intreated her to walk into the Garden, and stay for an answer; which was this.

To Julietta.

YOur Satisfactions, hitherto, have ever heightened my Love, but this last has wrought in me a quite contrary effect, for I know it to be as far from Truth, as I am from Dissimulation, I never thought my self a Person to be entertained only to pass away the tedious Interval of another Man's Absence, nor to act the ridiculous part you have put me upon, only to come upon the Stage, between the several Acts of your Secret Prostitutions. If it be any Satisfaction to you, know, I have disengaged all Resentments of your Hypocrisie, and shall never complain of the frivolous Elusions, wherein you suffered my Love to Languish: No, I am more obliged to your Denials, than ever I should have been to your Caresses. My Life indeed would
have

have been secured, if you had received me into your House; but my Honour would have been irrevocably lost, if, without my Discovery of it, you could have exercised your Charity on two several Persons, the same Night. 'Tis very probable you loved me beyond your own Life, when, being so closely engaged to another, you thought me the fittest Person in the World to make your Diversion. I am really obliged to those who intended to be my Murtherers, since by their means I came to discover your Imposture: Make sure of that Fortunate Gallant, whom your Charitable Neighbour was ushering to your Bed, while I was knocking at your Door. Make sure of him, perfidious Woman, and henceforth, keep all your Cares, and all your Caresses only for him. Live as happily with him as the Conscience of your inhumanity towards me will permit, and never think more of Principio, who for his part, disclaims all future thoughts of you.

It was not long ere this Letter came to the hands of *Julietta*, whom the Maid found in that Neighbour's House of hers, through which *Frederick* had access to her. She receiv'd it with some Disturbance; and asking the Maid, what Humour she found him in, she told her, that he had made her a very cold Reception, and that he express'd nothing of the Kindness he was wont to do at
other

other times. *Julietta* a little cast down at that Discourse, it seems then, (said she) I am not to promise my self any great Satisfaction from this Letter. Having opened and read it, she was like one put into a fright, not able to speak. Her Friend ask'd her what it contain'd? She thinking it too great a burthen, to acquaint her by Word of Mouth, gave her the Letter to peruse. The old Crouney no less disturbed than the young Mistress, found, that *Frederick's* Love was discover'd, to the great Disadvantage of her Reputation, inasmuch as it clearly express'd, that it was through her House, *Frederick* made his Approaches to her Friend, whereat she was extremely afflicted. *Julietta* was so troubled at the Contents of that Letter, that she curst the day and hour she had suffered *Principio* to Court her; the only Comfort she could raise to her self, was, that she knew him to be of so generous a Disposition, that, though he had a just Occasion to be incens'd against her, yet would he conceal her weakness, and not publish the Correspondence there had been between them.

But *Julietta's* Unhappiness was not come to its full height, and the Malice of her ill Fortune thought not this Affliction heavy enough. When the Wheel of that Vagabund-Goddess begins to turn, every Spoke of it brings anew
Mis-

Misfortune, one Disgrace coming still on the Neck of another. It happen'd then, that as the Maid was coming out of *Principio's* Lodging, to bring the Letter to her Mistress, *Frederick* saw her with it in her Hand, she having been careless to hide it, because she was dissatisfied with *Principio*, who had only that time omitted to make her some Present. *Frederick* immediately began to suspect somewhat, and, undiscovered, followed her to the House where *Julietta* was, and got into one of the upper Rooms, without any one's taking notice of it; the Maid by a second oversight, having left the Door open: He easily saw what pass'd, he heard the Letter read from one end to the other, and withal, their several Discourses and Comments upon it; the afflicted Lady bursting forth into Indignation at every Word, and not imagining she was over-heard, she sufficiently expressed her Resentment of so pressing a Misfortune.

The Gentleman in the next Room, who would have been glad of any Occasion to break the promise he had made to Marry her, (for a Lover once admitted to Enjoyment hath other-guise thoughts than he who is still kept in hope) hearing all these things, conceived them a very fair pretence to dis-engage himself. He therefore goes very confidently into the Room where they were, and addressing

sing himself to *Julietta*, who was most startled at his presence ; I expected, (said he) considering the mutual Obligations between us, that you would have corresponded thereto, with a sincerity suitable to my Desires, which aimed only at this, to see us one day united by Marriage, and to enjoy those Pleasures lawfully, and without any sting or remorse, which we have, upon hopes of the Accomplishment of that sacred tye, presum'd to anticipate. But since, ungrateful Creature, I find you lost to all Modesty, and have entertained new Gallants, I am free, to dispose of my self as I shall think most convenient, since it were neither just, nor rational I should be inseparably bound to a Person, destitute of all Conduct and Honour, and so live the rest of my days in perpetual Jealousies and Distrust. Having so said, he left the Room, a little troubled at the Distraction of the Woman ; but well satisfied in his own thoughts, that he had drawn his Neck out of the Collar, that is, shifted himself out of an Affair, which bred him a great deal of Trouble, since his Prosecution of it to that point had been with the dis-Approbation of his Mother.

'Tis not to be imagin'd, that the Constancy of any Woman, should be able to endure so great a shock of Misfortune. *Julietta* fell in.

into a Swoon between the Arms of her Friend, and continued in it a long time; but at last being come to her self again, she spoke such things as raised a great Compassion in her who heard them. She sought for Remedies to her Misery, and not finding any strong enough to re-engage *Principio*, who was acquainted with her former Engagement, nor yet to bring back *Frederick*, whom she knew she had offended, she was not able to smother the Grief she conceiv'd to find her self so justly slighted by both. She imputed all her Misfortune to her own Misgovernment of her self. Whereupon she fell a tearing of her Hair, and spoke what ever rage could inspire into a Woman exasperated in the highest Degree.

She passed away the rest of the Afternoon in continual disquiet, not finding any Comfort in either her Friends Discourses, or her own. In the Evening, she went to her own House, but her Distractions went along with her, so that it is not to be imagined but the Night prov'd as Restless, as the Day had been Unfortunate. Let us a while leave her in her Bed, formerly the Receptacle, but now the secret Remembrancer of her former Miscarriages, in the midst of her Troubles and Transportations, and give an Account what became of *Principio*.

As

As soon as he had dispatch'd away the Maid with his Letter to *Julietta*, he sat down a while to consider with himself what course he should take, for he saw there was nothing to be expected there, and that it was not for his reputation, to continue his visits any longer; he had always had a great inclination for the Fair *Lucretia*, ever since she had occasion'd *Julietta* to break forth into that extravagant discovery of her Jealousie; he consider'd she was a Gentlewoman well descended, and of a great Fortune; and thereupon he resolv'd to make his addresses publickly to her, by demanding her in Marriage of her Father and Brother, which they, upon the first motion, very willingly granted, even with great demonstrations of Gladness, inasmuch as *Principio* was a person generally belov'd in his Country, as being endu'd with those qualities, which deserv'd the respects and esteem of all: The Contract of Marriage was soon drawn up, and the business immediately spread over the whole City of *Valentia*.

But when this News came to the Ears of *Julietta*, imagine whether she were not extreamly troubled thereat; nay so much the more, in that he pitch'd on the Person, whom of all the World she had most reason to hate, ever since that fatal meeting, where-
in

in she had express'd so much indiscretion. She said a thousand things against her, and made many imprecations against him and her self, charging Heaven with injustice, and sometimes bemoaning her self, and sometimes Cursing her misfortune. But it was not only one she had to Curse ; for the very same day it was seconded by another, yet greater, inasmuch as *Fredrick* having had a plausible occasion to break the promise he had made to her, treated about a Marriage, with another Fair and Rich young Lady, whom his Mother had long before recommended to him ; the Contract was in a few days drawn up, and though done as secretly as could be, yet was it soon known all over the City, and it was not long ere the news came to the Ears of *Julietta*. She still retain'd a slender shadow of confidence in the Love of *Fredrick*, which made her imagine he would not break the promise he had made to her, conceiving she had sufficiently oblig'd him thereto by the highest Demonstrations of Love and Tenderness.

Thus she flatter'd her self, till the very day that she was clearly convinc'd of the contrary, by seeing his Marriage concluded, and her self absolutely forsaken ; but reflecting on the other side, what an unworthy breach of trust she was Guilty of, towards him, to
whom

whom she had devoted her Honour, how could she imagine he should not leave her in the lurch? How could she expect, if they Inter-married, he should be able to live with her in perpetual Disturbances and Alarms? The very day that certain News was brought her of this Gentleman's being Married, she fell into such extravagance, that she would be reveng'd of her beautiful Face; she gave her self several blows, tore her Hair, and did all the Actions, which could only proceed from Madness and Dispair; her fair Eyes became two Fountains, perpetually running; and when her Sighs and Grief gave her a little freedom of speech, Wretched Woman that I am, (would she say) of whom all good Fortune hath taken its last leave; how deserv'dly is thy ingratitude requited with ingratitude? How justly art thou punish'd, for having kept thy Faith to a base, treacherous, and perfidious Person, after thou hadst entrusted him with the disposal of the dearest thing thou hadst in the World? Thou seest, he denies the debt; thou see'st, he pays it with inconstancy and oblivion; let all easie-natur'd, and inconsiderate Women take example by me; let those, who, deluded by Flatteries and fair Caresses, are drawn in to lose what they shall never recover again, cast their eyes on my Misery, and then consider whether
there

Nov.VI. *The Perfidious Mistress.* 385

there be any other in the World, whose Affliction may be compar'd to mine. I wish for what all others abhor, Death; but it is deaf and inexorable, nay slights me, and will not come and put a Period to my Trouble.

Having thus bemoan'd her self into some Remission of her Grief, she went to see her Friend, through whose House *Frederick* came into her's; who though she endeavour'd all that lay in her power to comfort her, yet was her trouble so great, the cause of it so pressing, and so little hope of any Remedy, that all her Remonstrances prevail'd nothing; the only Expedient that seem'd then to offer it self, was, to forbid the Banes, since there was some ground to do it; but what proof could be made of so secret a Love, without any promise of Marriage in Writing, or any Testimony, but that of a Servant-maid, who belonging to her, would not have been so easily credited? The last and surest expedient this unfortunate Woman could pitch upon, was to become a Nun, upon which Account she was receiv'd into the Royal Monastery of *Zaida*, three days after the Marriage of *Frederick* had been fully concluded.

This sudden change occasion'd a great deal of noise and discourse in *Valentia*; all won-

dred at it, especially those who knew her to be one of the handsomest, and the most desirous to be Courted of any Lady in *Valentia*. It was indeed a kind of Miracle, to see a young Lady ; who spent her time so passionately at Balls, Plays, and other publick Meetings, exchange all those nobler enjoyments of Life, for the imaginary felicity of Mortification and Retir'dness ; this sudden resolution was attributed, at first, not to the true cause thereof, for things were carried so closely that very few knew it ; but to the secret inspirations of that Wind, which bloweth where it listeth, and is pleas'd to amuse mankind with the strange ways it takes, to transplant the affections of such as are ordain'd to Eternal bliss, from the transient Vanities of this World, to the Constant pursuance of the perpetual joys of a better.

Thus this Lady met with a kinder Spouse than she could have expected elsewhere, and spent the rest of her time with great Content, Blessing her former Afflictions and the crosses of her Love, which had brought her to the tranquillity she now enjoyed ; she frequently us'd this Expression, that in that House wherein there are many mansions, she hoped there was one for such penitent *Magdalens* as she, who by timely Repentance, expiate
th

Nov.VII. *The Perfidious Mistress.* 387

the follies of their greener years. Nor was this Acknowledgment of hers, unrewarded even in this Life; for she became the Oracle and Spiritual Directress of all those, whose Love-Misfortunes reduced them to any Extremity, especially those of her own Sex, of whom she so effectually convinc'd many, that, disgusting the World, they embrac'd a Religious Life. At *Valentia*, the Sanctity of her Life, and her Charitable Directions to such as had Occasion to Address themselves to her, were the Admiration of all, insomuch that she was reputed a Saint, even while she liv'd.

Frederick, had a Wife, but Heaven was pleased to punish his Perfidiousness with her Barrenness, for she bore him no Children; and instead of the great Fortunes he expected with her, he had many Baggs, full of Law-Sutes, Troubles, and Differences with other People, and not a few Discontents with his Wife. He wished, but too late that he had chose rather to have entred into a Monastery, than into Matrimony, the Inconveniences whereof sufficiently convinced him, that *Julietta* had made the better choice. He visited her often, and was obliged to her for her Prudent and Pious Admonitions.

On the contrary, *Principio* was the happiest Man in the World in his disposal of himself; his *Lucretia* brought him many fine Children, and, by the Death of some Friends, a far greater Fortune than he could have expected. They also visited their old Acquaintance *Julietta*, who receiv'd them kindly, and gave them Occasion to admire the strange Attractions of Divine Love in that Person, and the Esteem they had before for the Excellency of her Endowments, was now converted into a Reverence of her Sanctity, and an Admiration of her Conduct.

THE

T H E

Metamorphos'd Lover :

A

N O V E L.

DON Philip, a Gentleman of very high Quality, was Born at *Ville-franche*, an Ancient City upon the Confines of *Galicia* ; he was descended from a very Noble Family, and was brought up in his own Country, with his Elder Brother *Don Lodwick*, and a Sister called *Donna Cornelia* : But his Father and Mother leaving this World ere he was full fifteen Years of Age, he was forc'd into that Course of Life, which is commonly taken by the younger Brothers of Noble Houses, who have not much left them, and with the little Money he could get together, he went to Trail a Pike in *Flanders*. He behav'd himself so gallantly there upon several occasions,

C c 3

that

that he got the Colours of a Company of Foot, and after other successful Encounters against the *Dutch*, he was advanc'd to the Command of the same Company. Having afterwards, in that Charge, made yet greater Demonstrations of his Conduct, and Valour, he Atchieved at length, the Order of the Knights of *Alcantara*, with an assurance of the first Commandry, that should be void, belonging to that Order.

Having obtain'd that, he still continu'd his Military Employments, till such time as there was a Cessation of Arms made between the King and his Enemies of the Low-Countries, to last a Year and a Day. This Opportunity, together with the News he received out of *Spain*, of his Elder Brother's Death, oblig'd him to desire leave to make a Journey into his Country, where two Children his Brother had left, and his own Sister, stood in need of his presence; the former to be protected by him, the latter to be dispos'd of in Marriage. *Don Philip* arriv'd at *Ville-franche*, fifteen days after his Sisters departure to *Vil-ladolid*, where the Court was then, with an Aunt of his, a Widow, his Father's Sister, who would needs have her along with her; this old Lady, who had a great kindness for her, having resolv'd to leave her all she had at her Death, in hopes she might, with those

I. N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 391

those Advantages, meet with a better Match.

As soon as *Don Philip* was come into his Country, he took order about his Brother's Estate, and the Tuition of his Nephews, whom he left in the Custody of an Ancient Kinsman of his, whom having entrusted with the care of their Education and Maintenance, he resolv'd to go and Visit his Sister at *Villadolid*. As he was setting things in order for his Journey, passing through the broad place of *Ville-franche*, he saw abundance of people going towards an Inn, which was at the end of it, accompanying two Litters, in one whereof, there was an Old Gentleman; and in that which follow'd, a Young Lady, whose Transcendent Beauty, heightned by the sumptuousness of her Attire, ravish'd the Eyes, and Hearts of all that beheld her, but above all those of *Don Philip*; he was so inflam'd by that Transient Sight of her, that, covering with his Cloak the order he was of, he follow'd the Litter, so transported out of himself, that he reflected not on what those who observ'd him might say of his Demeanour. He saw her lighting at the Inn-Gate; and if he was before rais'd into a kind of Astonishment at the Beauty of her Face, he was now no less, at the handsomeness of her Body, the Magnificence of her Apparel, and the

the Sweetness of her Complexion. In a word, he was reduc'd to such an Extremity, by the Passion he immediately felt in himself for her, that he made enquiry, and set himself to find out, who that Miracle of Perfections might be, which had so of a sudden surpriz'd his Heart, and attain'd so absolute a disposal of his Liberty.

He was soon satisfi'd, as to that Particular; for, meeting with one of her Servants, going from the Inn towards the Market-place, he with much Civility ask'd him, who that Old Gentleman was, and whither he was then going? The other, who understood Civility well enough, return'd him this Answer: The Gentleman, whose Name you are so desirous to know, and who is my Master, is called the Marquess *Grimani*, a Person of the highest Rank next to Sovereign Princes, who comes into *Spain*, an ordinary Embassadour, from the Emperour of *Germany*, to his most Catholick Majesty: He brings along with him his Beautiful Daughter, the Lady *Eleanora*, to be Married to *Henricus*, his Excellency's Nephew, who is at the present at *Villadolid*, a Gentleman of extraordinary worth, who in the Flower of his Youth left *Germany* to go and see Foreign Countries. He has travell'd all over *Europe*, and is now resolv'd to make his Abode in *Spain*, having already

con-

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 393

continued some time at Court, with a very great Train, and is very highly in Favour with his Catholick Majesty, and well respected by all the Nobility about the Court; nay his Generosity and excellent Conversation have acquir'd him the Esteem of all the greatest Persons in this Country. This Marriage of *Signior Henrick* had been treated of in *Germany* with this Lady *Eleanora*, the only Daughter of my Master, who leaving his Country upon the being Honoured by the Emperor with the present Embassy, hath solicited the Business with greater earnestness; So that his Imperial Majesty seems Desirous that this Match should go forward. We came by Sea, but had such distress of Weather, that we were like to be cast away several times. While we were in that danger, my Master, a Gentleman much inclin'd to Devotion, made a vow that if he escaped, through the Intercession of the Glorious Patron of *Spain*, he would visit the place where his sacred Body lies buryed, so well known all over the World, for the great Miracles dayly done there. Being come to *Villadolid*, my Master continued there fifteen days, during which time, all things were agreed upon, in order to the Marriage. That great Affair being concluded, he would needs perform his Vow, and go to Saint *James's*. His Nephew
Henrick

Henrick is not come along with him, but stays at *Villadolid*, to send to *Rome* for the Dispensation, for the Lady *Eleanora*, and Signior *Henrick* are Cousin-Germans, thus Sir, I think I have satisfied your Desire, as to the Question you put to me.

Don Philip gave the Servant very great thanks for the accompt he had given him of his Master, and assur'd him he would requite his Kindness, if it lay in his Power, and so took leave. This Discourse happen'd after Night, as they walked over the Market-place, it being so dark as that the Marques's Servant could not take any particular notice of *Don Philip*, who did all he could to avoid being discovered. The account he had receiv'd, that the Beauty, which had stolen away his Heart at the first sight, was already engaged, and, within a short time to be Married, caused him to return home a much sadder Man than he had left it. This Affliction, with the Love which he already had for her, bereav'd him of all rest. That very Night, he would needs go and see the Marques and his Daughter at Supper, yet so as he might not be perceived by them. The Master of the House plac'd him so as that he might see all at his ease, yet not be seen himself; and this was to leap out of the Frying-Pan into the Fire. The next day, the Marques went thence, so as that

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 395

that *Don Philip* saw not the Lady *Eleanora* any more that time: Nor was he much troubled at it, for having in the Night advis'd with his Pillow, to find out some Remedy for his disquiet, he found it necessary, that he should not be seen, either by the Marquess, or his Daughter; or any one belonging to them, that he might the better compass a Design which only Love could inspire him withal.

The Kingdom of *Galicia* is very full of Mountains, and consequently the way to St. *James's* must be troublesome to Travel, so that the Marquess could make but short Journeys, whence *Don Philip* infer'd, that he could not be back in less than twenty days, presuming he would make some abode at *Compostella*, to do his Devotions, and refresh himself, ere he set out for his return. Accordingly, he dispos'd of his Affairs in order to the Design he had bethought himself of, and, taking leave of all his Acquaintance, he went to *Pont-Ferrada*, a Town which lay four Leagues further from the Court, than *Ville-Franche*. He took up his Quarters at an Inn, whence he stirr'd not in the day-time, but only took the Air a little in the Night, yet with such a Caution not to be known to any, he discovered himself to none of the Inhabitants; but only his Land-lord, whom he acquainted

quainted with his Quality, and the Design had brought him thither. He was attended only by one Servant, whose Fidelity and Courage he had many years Experienc'd; for he had serv'd him as a Soldier, and waited on him, from the time of his first departure from *Ville-Franche*. *Marco* (so was this faithful Servant nam'd) perceiving his Master more Melancholy than he had been wont to be, and that somewhat kept him from resting in the Night, for he heard him disquietly turning in his Bed, and sighing ever and anon, he imagin'd that the Cause of his Disturbance was not at *Pont-Ferrada*, inasmuch as if it had been, he would not have failed, Night or Day, to discover by his Visits, what could not be known by his Disquiets and Sighs. Thus this discreet Lover not discovering any thing of his secret Passion, *Marco*, could not guess at the Occasions which bred such a Distraction in his Mind: Nay, though he did all lay in his Power to pry into it, yet could he never meet with any Satisfaction. One day, finding his Master all alone, and not able to endure that Reserv'dness in him any longer, he thus spoke to him.

I should never have imagin'd, Sir, that you could be guilty of so great a closeness towards a Servant, whom you have ever found faithful, and to love you even beyond his own Life.

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 397

Life. You have heretofore thought me worthy the Knowledge of your most importunate Secrets; Pardon me, if I presume to tell you, that your silence now gives me just cause to conceive, that you have not the same thoughts of me, and that I must be guilty of some Crime, whereof I have not my self the least Apprehension; Wherein, I pray, Sir, have I offended you? You must needs harbour some ill thoughts of me, since you conceal from me the Disquiets which deprive you of all Appetite or Rest. Sure they proceed from Love, or I am mightily mistaken. You close not your Eyes all Night, and spend the day in Retirement, avoiding all Society, and giving your self up to perpetual Solitude, and Melancholy; which I am extreamly troubled to see. You have left your Country, telling your Friends that you were going to Court; whereas you continue in an obscure place, where you are afraid to be known! 'tis impossible for me to forbear grieving at it, as long as I am Ignorant of the Cause: Pardon my Curiosity, Sir, which however impertinent, is an Argument of my Fidelity, and Readiness to serve you. I know it is the Duty of a good and faithful Servant, punctually and implicitly to obey the Commands of his Master, without insinuating himself further into his Secrets, than he is
wil-

willing he should be acquainted therewith. I have hitherto kept my self within those bounds, and have so lived with you as that I fear not any reproach you can make me. But now at last, my ancient Fidelity gives me the boldness to ask you, what Business may have brought you to this place; what occasions your Disquiet, and what you intend to do in this obscure Inn, where you admit not of any Enjoyments? Have you a greater Confidence of the happy Master of this House, whom you have known but within this four days, than of an old Servant, of whose Zeal and Fidelity you have had so many Experiences? You have hitherto thought my Advice worth the asking, nay have follow'd it, in things, for ought I know, of as great importance as this.

Marco having thus ended his Complaint, his Master conceiv'd himself oblig'd to make him some answer, which was this: *Marco*, I must confess, I have look'd on thee, and that justly as my Friend; a Title I may well allow one who hath shar'd with me, in War the Dangers, in Peace the Enjoyments I have been engag'd in. It is a very hard thing, not to say impossible, that any man should, in the disposal of himself, take a Course contrary to that intended him by Heaven; though it be said, that a Wise Man shall have do-

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 399

dominion over the Stars : That is, (as Astrologers expound it) Humane Prudence shall elude the Decrees of Fate. I am born to love a Beauty, which surprizing my Heart, hath withal possess'd it self of all the Faculties of my Soul. I find my self no longer Master of my own Liberty, that I am not able to make the least disposal of my Will, and so it were a madness for me, to oppose the inclination, whereto the Sovereign Powers have made me subject. I suffer my self to be foolishly carried away by my Passion, though I know well enough that I attempt a thing absolutely impossible, and beyond my strength : This is the cause of my disquiet, musing, and melancholy, spending the Nights without rest, and the Day in Solitude, suffering a thousand Afflictions, which I cannot express; and loving where I am not to hope the least return of Love, by reason of an Invincible Obstacle that lies in my way. This is that which destroys my Enjoyments, and poisons all my Joy.

I have seen that Divine Beauty, that Mortal Angel, that Prodigy of Miracles, who pass'd through our Town with her Father the Marquess *Grimani* : The excellent Endowments she is Mistress of, and, which thou may'st have admir'd as well as my self, are all the Excuses I can alledge for the blindness of my

my Passion; but they feed it not with any hope. There is an Obstacle lies between me, and the possession of her, which I shall find it impossible to remove. This Transcendent Beauty is already made sure to a Gentleman of great Worth, who is her Cousin-German, named *Henrick*; and methinks, I see her ready to joyn Hands with him. I hear such high Commendations of his Excellent Parts, that I find the little hope I had, ready to leave me. I Love her, or to say better, I Adore her; and if I may judge by the present Agitations of my Heart, I may say, it will never be disingag'd from the Passion I have for her. I know it is madness in me to think of her, and that I cannot without Extravagance, ever hope she may be mine, to the disappointment of a young Lord, who, with the advantages of Blood, hath all those of Nature: Nay, I think it almost impossible, to find out some means to acquaint her with my Love, and to get a Letter convey'd to her. I know that the Houses, whence I derive my Extraction, are not inferiour to those of *Grimani* and *Henrick*; and consequently, that I am as Nobly descended as she is; that would not be the greatest Obstacle, if I could but make my self known at Court. I hear that she intends thither, when she returns from her Pilgrimage; I have but three
Months

N. VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover* 401

Months to carry on this Business, which is the
time requisite to get the Dispensation from
Rome.

I have a long time consider'd with my self
of the means, how I might get access to her ;
and that I conceive the most likely to take,
is to counterfeit, what indeed is but too re-
al, a certain distraction of Mind : By acting
the Mad Man's Part, I might so disguise my
Extravagances, as that the Father, pleas'd
with my Humour, may perhaps carry me a-
long with him to the Court. This certainly,
is a design Fantastick enough, and not only
contrary to my Quality, but absolutely op-
posite to the Opinion I should endeavour to
raise my self in the World. I have a great
confidence, that at Court I shall be known
to very few, because I have been a long
time out of *Spain*. Besides these Considera-
tions, the Habit I will put on, being altoge-
ther extravagant, I shall be so disguis'd, that
my nearest Friends and Relations will hardly
know me. If, by this means, I can get into
the Marquess's House, I shall hope the Plot
will take ; For I have heard this Lady is not
fully satisfied with the Marriage, having un-
derstood that her Cousin is a Person of a
Debauch'd Life, and inclin'd to Women ;
and that she admits of his Addresses only out
of obedience to her Father. I have commu-
D d nicated

nicated my design to the Master of the House, as being a discreet Person, who may serve me, and puts me in hopes to get me into the Marquess's Service, when he comes to give him an account of my pleasant Extravagances, as we have already agreed together. Thus my dear *Marco*, have I given thee a faithful Character of my self; thou know'st now as much as I do, as well of my Affliction, as my Love; mistrust not the Confidence I have of thee, and assist me with all thy Wit and Industry, or expect ere long to be a Witness of my departure out of this World.

Marco out of Compliance with his Master, approved of the Project, though he doubted much the success of it. He saw his Master was too far transported to receive any prudent Advice; so that he promis'd to assist him according to the Design he had laid to get access to his Mistress, and troubled not his thoughts with any thing but how to compass it. It was his Business therefore to get Cloths made for *Don Philip*, suitable to his Extravagance. He put him into a Caslock after the old Fashion, with puffs at the Sleeves of Green Sattin, and large Skirts, a Cloak somewhat like a Rocket, very short, and a *Milan* Cap, of green Plush. Being thus disguised, he changed his Quarters, and went to the Host's Brother's House, who al-

to most of necessity be acquainted with the Secret. All this could not be done without some yellow pieces, whereof he had brought good store out of *Flanders*, with some Jewels of value he had gotten by gaming, at which he was very fortunate.

About this time the Marquess, with the Beautiful Lady his Daughter, were upon their return from their Pilgrimage. Before they got to *Pont-Ferrada*, the Beams of his Litter broke, so that he was forc'd to come to the Town on Horse-back, and to stay there two days, while the Litter was mended. The Marquess took up the same Inn where *Don Philip* had lodged, as being the best in the Town. The Host being taught what he had to say to the Marquess, for the furtherance of *Don Philip's* Design, soon met with an opportunity to do it. For, as most Persons of Quality, when they Travel, are very inquisitive to know what is rare or Remarkable at the places through which they pass, the Marquess Desirous to hear what there might be at *Pont-Ferrada*, called for the Host. Having travell'd several times before into *Spain*, he spoke the Language very well, was a very sociable Person, and glad of Company.

The Host being come into the Room, he began to ask him concerning the Antiquities of the Town, the Illustrious Families that had liv'd in it, the Disposition of the Inhabitants, the Beauty of the Ladies, and such Particulars : Wherein the Host satisfied him, giving him a very exact account of all he knew. Among the Antiquities, and remarkable things of the Town, he came to speak of *Don Philip*, telling such Stories of him as might raise a desire in the Marquess to see him. There is come, (said he to him) within these fifteen days, a very rare Person to this Town, Fantastically clad in green Stuff; but there is a greater Extravagance in his Behaviour than there is in his Cloths, and yet in the height of his Distraction, there may be observ'd certain Shadows of Understanding and Staidness, which renders him excellent good Company. Being ask'd by some of our Inhabitants, who he was, I am (said he) Son to the *River Sill*, which passes by the Walls of this Town, and descended from one of the most Illustrious Families of *Galicia*. He expects to be Treated with your Honour, and your Lordship, in Discourse though he is known by the Title of *Knight of the Noble Order of Prim-roses*.

The Fooleries he tells to make good the Title he assumes, are so ridiculous, that they

forced

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 405

force Laughter from the most Melancholy. He seldom comes out of his Lodging, Feeds high, and we cannot imagine whence he should have means to live at that Rate. He hath a Servant to wait on him, who knows the length of his Foot, and complies with him in his Madness, either for his advantage, or else he has a soft place in his Head, as well as his Master; and I think 'em both very well worth your Observation. I wonder the Knight hath not been yet to wait on your Excellency, for he is mighty desirous to Converse with Strangers, and finds them out as soon as he hears of their Arrival.

The Marquess was much pleas'd with this Relation of the Host, and desir'd him to bring him acquainted with that Noble Knight. The Fair Lady *Eleanora* express'd also a desire to see him, for she had been present at the Host's Discourse. He gladly satisfi'd them, being overjoy'd the Prologue of the Design had taken so well. He went to his Brother's to fetch him, having before told the Ambassadour, that he must Treat him Honourably, if he expected to make any Sport with him; inasmuch, as being extreamly self-conceited in his Madness, he would be put out of all Humour, if he were entertained with any dis-respect, or indifference.

The Marquess, who was a Person naturally inclin'd to Mirth and Civility, promised him he would observe his Directions. Whereupon, the Host marches away for *Don Philip*, who came into the Room very humoreously in his Fools Coat, making wry Mouths, and some Fantastick Gestures, the Introduction to his future Extravagance. The Ambassadour, how serious soever he would appear, as being oblig'd by his Quality to dissemble, could not forbear Laughing, to see him in that Equipage, attended by *Marco*, who, on the other side, acted very well the Part that had been given him. He went to receive him at the Chamber door, with this Complement: Welcome to the Noblest piece of Gallantry that ever *Spain* saw: Welcome the Mirrour of all the brave Knights that ever were Celebrated for their Heroick Actions. The News your Excellency tells me, (replies *Don Philip*) deserves not the reward that may be expected for it. You are extremely mistaken, if you think your self the first of those who have admired *Natures* Prodigality towards me in Excellent Parts and Endowments. Give me the favour at least, (answers the Marquess) to be one of the most faithful Witnesses thereof, which no doubt I shall, if you please but to honour me a while with your sweet Company.

N. VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 407

pany. For, as a rich Diamond pleases all the World, so the Attractions of your Countenance, and the Transcendent Insinuation of your Behaviour forces the Admiration of all that see you.

Don Philip was by this time got near the fair Lady *Bleanora*, whereupon looking with a certain Astonishment on her Miraculous Beauty, my Lord Marquess, (said he to him) I beseech you forbear at present the praises you are pleased to give me, for it were to profane those which are due to this Excellent Creature. I pray let me know whether she be your Daughter, for if she be, you will be much concern'd in the Elogies I shall give this——this——this——(well) Miracle. Her coming into the World was to Embellish our Hemisphere, to supply *Cupid* with fresh Darts, to become the Load-stone of Hearts, the Delight of the Eyes, the Astonishment of the Universe, the Master-piece of Heaven, and the Miracle of Nature : By the Noble Order of Knighthood I am of, I swear, that the very Minute I first cast my Eye on this Accomplish'd Beauty, I found my Heart was grown rebellious, and no longer mine ; my will bereav'd of all freedom ; and my Soul become absolutely her Slave. In a Word, Sir, I think my self somewhat different from what I was before, and the more I feel my self,

D d 4

408 *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* N.VII.

self, the more I am astonish'd at the strange *Metamorphosis*.

The Commendations you give me renowned Knight, (replies the Lady) smell too much of flattery, I am confident you do not your self believe one half of what you have said, and therefore it will be hard for you to perswade me to it. You consider not that you act against your own sentiment, when you speak against your Conscience. I should never advise a Gallant, who would raise himself an esteem with the Ladies, to hazard his own disappointment by so ill a Prologue; for to give undeserved praises breeds a suspicion of imperfections; and to be forc'd to the belief of falsehood brings truth into question. The truth I tell you, (replies the Amorous Extravagant) is such, so pure, so clear, and so far from all suspicion of being otherwise, that you shall ever find it as plainly in my Mouth as in your own Looking-glass; be not so hasty, Honourable Knight, (says the Lady to him) be pleased to take a Chair, for we desire to discourse with you at leisure: were it Heavens pleasure, Madam, (says *Don Philip*, as soon as he was fate) that I might ever continue near you! But I see the Honour you are pleased to do me will be but short, and my Joy soon be over, for I understand, that
with-

II. N. VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 409

within two days you leave this place, and if you go without me, I shall dye out of pure Grief; in the mean time, give me leave to look on this Mansion as the Imperial Heaven, since so great a Deity hath Honour'd it with her presence. We forget all Civility, (says the Marquess) when we fall into other discourse, before you have first entertain'd us with your own noble adventures, that we may thereby know what respects we ought to pay your worth. There is not any due to me, Sir, (replies the disguis'd Cavalier) but that the service I have vow'd you, may be the better receiv'd, I will give you an account of my Extraction, and relate to you the perfect History of my Life hitherto; be pleased to afford your Attention to what I shall say.

The Kingdom of *Galicia* was heretofore Govern'd by Counts, and afterwards by Kings. *Gondamor* Reign'd in that time, and continued a Widower after the Burial of his first Wife, by whom he had no other Children but the *Infanta Theodomira*, who coming to Reign after him was called the Wenching-Queen; she fell in Love with the Gallant *Cialto*, one of the richest and properest Persons in the Kingdom; he ever kept about the Court, and was a Kinsman, tho' somewhat a far off to the King, but his principal Favourite, by which means he had access

cess into the Queen's Chamber, and got of her that Favour whereby mankind is propagated. I prov'd to be the Issue of that Amorous Union; and the good hour of my Birth happen'd at a time that the King chanc'd to be at his Daughters Lodging; the pains of Child-Birth surpriz'd her, and being a Novice in such adventures, she could not dissemble her Labour, even in the presence of her Father, who imagin'd it was some other Accident had happen'd to her; her Women help'd her to Bed, not knowing the Disease that troubl'd her; but not long after I came into the World, it seems, to run through all the misfortunes that have happen'd to me since.

Being received into the World by a faithful Servant, who knew of my Mothers Amours, she took me in her lap, to be deliver'd to a Brother of hers, who was also acquainted with the business. As she went out of the *Infanta's* Lodging, she meets with the King, going to visit his Daughter. She was afraid his Curiosity would have prompted him to examine what she had in her Lap; which made her turn back of a sudden, and, by a secret Pair of Stairs, go down into the Garden, where having dispos'd of me into a little Wicker Basket, she put me into the River Sill, which ran by the Wall thereof, and told

N. VII. *The Metamorphosd Lover.* 411

told the *Infanta* that she had deliver'd me to her Brother, as they had resolv'd. I was carried awhile on the Chrystal Waves of that clear River ; but at last, the Water growing somewhat rough, I sunk, and was received into the Arms of the God of that River, who encompass'd by his Fair Nymphs, conducted me into his own Chrystal Palace. You may perhaps imagine this Discourse a feign'd Story taken out of the Inventions of the Poets ; but give me leave to assure you, that the business happen'd no otherwise than as I tell you.

I was brought up by the Nymphs in that secret Mansion, and instructed by the God of the River, who wish'd I might prove worthy so Noble an Education. He caused me to be instructed in all manner of Sciences, and spar'd no pains to make me an Accomplish'd Person. I learnt three or four Languages, but particularly the Latine above any of the other. Being arriv'd to the twentieth Year of my Age, Love, to shew his Omnipotency, and that all places are under his Jurisdiction, caus'd his Flames to fasten on me even through the Water. In that Virginal Company of Nymphs, there was one, for whom the God of that Watery Habitation had a particular Esteem ; and she deserv'd it, for she very much excell'd all her Companions,

412 *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* N.VII.

ons; her Name was *Anacarsia*. Her Endowments were extraordinary, and her Beauty beyond all Comparison. In Complexion and Stature she came somewhat near this fair Lady your Daughter, and had the same Advantage over the rest of the Nymphs, as the *Delphick-Torch* hath over the other Planets. She played excellently well on all kinds of Instruments; to sum up all in a Word, she was a prodigy of all Perfections. I fell so passionately in Love with this Beauty that I had not a Minute's rest, from the time that little Deity had wounded my Heart, with the Mortal Darts of her sparkling Eyes.

I found it a hard business to discover my Love to her, in regard I could never meet her alone; she was perpetually haunted by some of those who liv'd in that Chrystal Palace; they follow'd her every where, and would never be out of her sight. But one Day, when all the other Nymphs were gone to a Musick-meeting, at which were also to be read certain Lectures of Poësie, being the ordinary Divertisements of the God of that River, the Divine *Anacarsia* purposely pretended some Indisposition, to give me an opportunity to speak with her. She sent me notice of it, by one who came to tell me from her, that she kept her Bed only for my sake, than which I could not have expected

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 413

a kinder Complement from one of her Sex. I went to her Chamber, and found her carelessly laid on a Bed of Moss, exceeding in Whiteness the fine Sheets she lay on, and disputing as to Splendour and Light, with the Sun, who then beheld her. I was startled at the sight of so many Charms, and was upon the point of losing all Sentiments, an Effect Natural enough in those who are truly touched with Love. But recovering my self a while, though still much troubled, and my Tongue but as it were newly loosened, I took the Confidence to make this Discourse to her.

Adorable Nymph, the glory of these deep Habitations, but the unavoidable rack of those Hearts, which are captivated by your Beauty, my Soul, since the first time I saw you, is absolutely disposed to serve you; I have no power over her, she is wholly yours, and glories in her Slavery. Treat her as a thing belongs to you, and as I have vowed her to you with an inviolable Fidelity. You have done me an extraordinary Favour in allowing me to declare the Amorous Passion I have for you: May I further hope, that you will allay it, and if I should be admitted to that Degree of Felicity, should I not be the Happiest and most Glorious of all Men?

The

214 The Metamorphos'd Lover. N.VII.

25 The fair *Anacarsis*, infinitely pleas'd with so obliging a Discourse, and the Worth she observ'd in me, highly honour'd me with her Affection, and complied with my Amorous Desires, in such sweet and melting Expressions, as put me in hopes of the happy Accomplishment of my Love. But it was not long ere our Discourse was interrupted by the God of the River, who finding neither of us at the meeting, came straight to her Chamber, and slunk in so softly, that he overheard some part of our Amorous Conference; which so incens'd him against me, that he immediately resolv'd to give a check to my Presumption. He laid Siege, with his clear Waters, to the Chamber of *Anacarsis*, and ere he had quite damm'd up the Door, he cast me out with such violence, that I was got to the Bank of the River. I presently heard a voice saying unto me, *Gnathomarus*, thou art descended from Kings; though it be a long time since they have had Scepters in their Hands; Princes of another Family have displac'd them. Thou art born a *Pagan*, choose what law thou thinkest best; if thou wilt follow my Advice, take that which is observ'd in this Kingdom, under which liv'd thy Illustrious Ancestors. I have justly banish'd thee out of my Dominions, because it was not fit I should suffer profane Love to be

be made to a Nymph who had vowed her Chastity to me as I had mine to her. I have promised her my Protection and Assistance in all things. Keep henceforward within thy Kingdom, and assure thy self I with thy good and advancement, so far am I from doing thee any prejudice. Whithersoever Fortune shall dispose of thee, be Confident, thou wilt not be out of the reach of my Care.

With those Words the waters of the River, seem'd to stir themselves into a gentle curl, which being presently laid, it became as smooth as it had been before. I immediately found my self (by what Adventure I know not) in a pleasant Garden, in the midst of a Bed of fine Prim-roses, which I looked on as a good Omen, and thought my self oblig'd to derive my Name thence. Afterwards at my Baptism, I took the Name of *Peter Blasco of Galicia*, taking the surname from the Kingdom which had been heretofore in the Possession of my Predecessors, who have been dead this four hundred years, as I have found in History. Besides that Name, I have taken an Additional Title, that of *Knight of the noble Order of Prim-roses*. I have assum'd it my self; for an Illustrious Hero, as I am, may be his own Herauld, and by what Appellations he pleases raise himself above the sphere of the common sort of People.

Thus

Thus have I given your Excellency an account who I am, and discover'd to you my true Original. If the Qualities and Endowments I own, deserve the Honour to be receiv'd into your Alliance, Give me leave, O most Illustrious Marques, to make my Addresses to this Super-Coelestial Beauty, this Miracle of our Age, whom Nature was humorously pleas'd to frame for the delight of the Eyes, and Torment of Hearts. I only expect your good Will, give it me, I beseech you, and thereby satisfie my extraordinary Passion. I think you so generous, that you will not deny it me, if you consider, that granting it not, you bereave me of my Life, which you know is the most Illustrious of any in *Europe*; and are consequently satisfied, that the World, losing in me, the most Renowned Knight it ever had, must withal lose the worthiest Kinsman of his Catholick Majesty.

He deliver'd these last Words with such pleasant Gestures, the better to express the Violence of his Passion, that both the Marques and his Daughter had much ado to forbear Laughing. *Marco* was astonish'd to see the force of that Passion, which, of an Accomplish'd Gentleman made a Ridiculous Laughing-Stock; and could turn a Person of Eminent Parts and Judgment, into a Counterfeit

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 417

teiseit Extravagant: For if he had not pretended the loss of his Wits, he had lost all the hopes of his Love; and he could not have gotten near so Fair a Lady, upon any account but that of Madness.

The Marquess composing his Countenance to more seriousness, return'd him this Answer. *Seignior Don Pedro Blasco*, the most illustrious, and only Knight of the most Noble Order of *Prim-roses*, I am extreamly pleased with the knowledge you have given me of your Person, and the account you have entertain'd me with of your Miraculous Birth, and Noble Education: Had a Person, less illustrious than your self, acquainted me therewith, I should have mistrusted his Discourse, and imagin'd he told me Fables: But a Person of your Worth and Quality ought to be credited in all things. What further confirms me in the truth thereof, is, that he is no less than a Prince who speaks to me. Believe me, I have a great respect for your rare Qualities, and such an Honour for your Person, that I would assure you my own is wholly at your Service. I have that esteem for your Friendship, that I shall endeavour the continuance of it while I live. I wish my self a natural Inhabitant of this Kingdom, that I might have the greater Opportunities to further your satisfaction. I shall stay here

E e

but

but till such time as his Imperial Majesty shall send order for my return ; but during the abode I shall make here, command me in any thing that lies in my power : As for the permission you desire, to make your Addressee to my Daughter, I from this time give it you, and I allow her to accept of it, and to entertain you kindly ; but she is already made sure to a Cousin of hers, and I have sent to *Rome* for a Dispensation, which once come, the Marriage will be concluded: This Obstacle lies in your way, and you will find it a hard matter to remove it. I am sorry I had not the happiness of your Acquaintance before ; for how gladly would I have embrac'd the honour of having a Son-in-Law of your Worth and Quality, and to see my Family alli'd to the Blood-royal of *Galicia*? The end of most Courtships is Marriage ; of yours you see it cannot be : To address your self to my Daughter upon any other account, I know you would not ; the Husband she expects is a person of so much Gallantry, as not to receive any such Affront.

The disguis'd Extravagant broke forth into great Resentments upon his obliging Discourse, which made excellent sport for all that were present. But having laugh'd their fill, the Marquess and his Daughter could not forbear making Charitable Reflections on that
strange

strange kind of Distraction. It pitied them to see a Gentleman every way so Accomplish'd, fallen into such unheard of Extravagances, as to alledge himself descended from a River, and brought up in it five hundred Years before: While some that were present, purposely to urge him to speak, oppos'd the Stories he had told them, and he endeavour'd to give them satisfaction. The Marquess acquainted his Daughter with a design that came into his mind, which was to carry *Don Pedro* along with him to the Court, it being likely he would find them excellent sport by the way: They resolv'd to treat him as a Person of Eminent Quality, having understood by his Servant, that he was really such, and that upon his recovery out of a great sickness, that Madness had seiz'd him. The Lady *Eleanora* was very well content, leaving it to some other time to acquaint him therewith. *Don Pedro Blasco* coming to take his leave of the Marquess said to him, that since he was so unhappy as not to deserve his Fair Daughter's Hand, in the Quality of a Husband, he would allow him to Love her with a Vertuous Love, such as even her Husband should not disapprove: The Marquess gave way, desiring him to honour him with his Company at Supper that Night, by reason he had somewhat to Communicate unto him.

Don Philip gladly excepted the Proffer, and thereupon they parted.

The Marques and his Company talked very much of *Don Pedro*, wondring at the strange kind of Madnes he was fallen into. He acquainted them with the design he had to take him along with him to the Court. The Master of the House where he was Lodg'd happening to be then present, told him, that he doubted, *Don Pedro Blasco* would hardly be perswaded thereto, if the Marques treated him as an Inferiour; for he was mighty self-conceited, and stood much upon his Honour; but if he were willing, there would arise another difficulty in the manner of his Travelling: In regard, (said he to him) your Excellency going by Litter, I think he would be loath to go by Horse: We'll find an Expedient for that, (says the Marques) which is, that my Daughter, as his Mistress, shall command him to entertain her at the side of her Litter; for if his Love continues, he will be glad of the opportunity; and he shall have an excellent Horse, richly Harnass'd, which I have led after me, to ride on when I am a weary of the Litter.

Don Philip, who had been acquainted with all these Discourses, fail'd not to come to Supper, to which he had been Invited. The Marques receiv'd him very civilly, and caus'd

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 421

caus'd a Chair to be set for him, near his Daughter, which he thought a very signal Favour. They Talk'd of divers things, the Marquess finding he had an excellent Wit in his Intervals, which he ever clos'd with some pleasant Extravagance. They were very Merry at Supper, and were oblig'd for their Diversion, to the Merry Discourses of *Don Philip*. At last, the Cloth being taken away, the Marquess broke his Mind to him in these Words.

'Tis a thousand Pities, most Renowned Knight, that a Person so Accomplish'd as you are, and one furnish'd with all the Excellent Endowments that recommend men to the Favour and Esteem of Princes, should as it were desie their Courts, and spend your time and Talents in such an obscure place as this is. I have heard that the reason of this your Retirement is, that you have not means to live suitably to your Condition, and the Rank you should maintain. If it be so, give me leave to propose an Expedient to you, out of the particular Esteem I have for your *Seignory*. I shall take it for a very great favour, if you will be pleas'd to go along with me to *Villadolid*, where you shall be treated, in my Quarters, with all the Submissions and Respects due to a Person of your Quality, yet so as that it shall not cost you any thing.

422 *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* N.VII.

By this means coming to be known, and your Worth spreading it self, you may meet with a rich Wife, of some Illustrious Family; wherein my Daughter may do you a kindness, in regard she having occasion to see many of them, will advance you into her favour, for whom you have most Inclination: Let me obtain of your Knight-hood, the Favour I desire of you: Live freely with us, since you would have me believe, that the Love you bear my Daughter is pure and sincere; I will undertake it shall be kindly taken by the Husband she hopes to have: I expect your Answer to this particular, and I desire it may be Consonant to the Esteem I have for your Worth.

Don Philip was extremely satisfied, that the Imposture had taken so well, and immediately apprehended, that, living in the House with the Marquess, he should be near her whom he Ador'd, which was the main end of his Desires; whereupon he return'd him this Answer. No Temptation in the World should have forc'd my Removal from this place, but the extraordinary Civilities I have receiv'd from your Excellency. I had resolv'd to spend the rest of my days in this Retirement, as conceiving it the best course for a Person of my Quality, whose Revenues are much below his Honour, to confine him-
self

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 423

self to some Place, where he is not much known, and so avoid the charge of Servants and Cloths. But the Respects you are pleas'd to have for me, together with this transcendent Beauty, who by the forcible Attractions of her Divine Countenance, draws Hearts after her, as the *Thracian Orpheus* did living Creatures, Stones and Plants, by the Harmonious found of his Harp, have made me wholly at your service. I shall not trouble either you or my self to tell you how Persons of my Quality ought to be treated, as thinking it enough, that I have already acquainted you with my Titles, and particularly that I am of the Blood-Royal. The greatest Favour you can ever do me, is, that you command me to wait on your Daughter, which if you do, I shall the more willingly accept of the proffer you are pleas'd to make me.

The Marquess finding him willing to go along with them, all that remain'd to be done was to perswade him to do it on Horseback, which he was content to do, that he might the better entertain his Mistress at the side of the Litter. *Don Philip* help'd the Lady into her Litter, being proud in his Mind at that Introduction of his Service to her, and that he had the Happiness to take her by the fair hand, continuing his Attendance on her

from their departure from *Pont-Fierrada*, till they came to *Villadolid*. All the way along, he entertain'd her with pleasant Discourses, intermixt with Amorous Expressions, and at every Inn they came to, she fail'd not to give her Father an Account of the divertive Discourses she had with *Don Philip*.

The last day of their Journey, *Don Philip* would needs feel the Pulse of his Mistress as to her intended Marriage, and endeavoured to discover how she was inclined thereto. He brought the Business upon the Stage so dexterously, as that she might not suspect him guilty of any impertinent Curiosity. It is commonly observ'd that Persons any way afflicted are apt to break their minds to any People, but especially to those with whom they are familiarly acquainted. Accordingly, to ease her own thoughts, and satisfy *Don Philip*, she made him this answer. Worthy Knight of the most Honourable Order of Prim-roses, I must needs acknowledge, that my Cousin *Henrick* is a Person endow'd with all the Qualities, capable to raise a Woman's Love to the highest pitch, but I have withal discovered him to be so fickle, and one so naturally inclined to address himself to all sorts of Women, not regarding whether they be nobly or meanly descended, that it very much cools my Affection towards him, and makes me fear his Alliance, though I find my
self

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 425

self sufficiently inclin'd thereto, could I perceive any likelihood of his reforming himself of that insufferable humour; but, far from that, since my coming into *Spain*, when he should have endeavour'd to give me greater assurances of his Affection, I find him as indifferent as to my satisfaction as ever; and Heaven knows with what apprehensions I am induc'd to condescend to this match; for if I am now frightned at the thoughts of his miscarriages, what must I not fear, when he obtains the Superiority? the obedience I owe my Father, and the necessity I find that this Marriage should be concluded, for the Composure of some differences in our Family, make me wholly passive in the business, and so content it should go forward. I admit of his Addresses not without some violence to my own inclination, and all I can do, is to pray Heaven, that it would inspire him with better resolutions.

Don Philip could have wish'd that she had not been so resolute, as she seem'd to be; he therefore, though then personating a Fool, answer'd her as a Wise man, and advis'd her to bear a while with the failings of her Cousin. Despair not, Madam, (said he to her) but *Don Henrick* may become another Man, and that if he be such as you describe him now, that volatile Humour will be fix'd in him,

426 *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* N.VII.

him, when he comes to be possess'd of so fair and accomplish'd a Lady ; but he resolv'd, upon the first opportunity should present it self, to express his mind to her in other terms; and to make a full discovery of himself to his Mistress.

They came that day to *Villadolid*, and *Henrick* met them half a days Journey short of it; he was very kindly receiv'd, both of the Marquess and his Daughter, whereat the disguised *Don Philip* was not a little troubled ; for finding *Don Henrick* a very graceful Person, he began to entertain some doubts of the success of his enterprize ; the Marquess thought to make him acquainted with *Don Philip*, that, by the Character he gave him, he might accordingly treat him. Nephew, (said he to him) I pray take notice of this Noble Cavalier, who hath Honour'd us with his Company from *Galicia*, for his person, and the rare qualities he is Master of, are such as deserve the highest esteem. I desire you to respect him accordingly, and assure your self all you do will be below his Merit, not only upon the Account of the Royal-Blood from which he is descended, but also the Romantick Title he assumes to himself, of *Knight of the Honourable Order of Primroses* : He pretends a Jurisdiction over all those places where ever any of that Flower grows,
and

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 427

and never sees it, but he thinks of the Complexion of a Mistress he once had, who spent most of her time in Gardens, in one whereof it was Love's Pleasure to make him a Captive to her Beauty, as she was gathering some Prim-roses.

This Description made *Don Henrick* take a particular notice of *Don Philip*, and he doubted not, as well by his Accoutrements, as by the Fantastick Title he had taken to himself, to conclude him a most transcendent Extravagant, and that, as such, they had entertain'd him into their Company. Accordingly, to comply with his Uncle, he made this Complement to *Don Philip*, Most Honourable Knight of the Order of Prim-roses, I shall receive your Acquaintance with as great Satisfaction as I should do that of the greatest Monarch in the World, and think myself infinitely obliged to you, that, being a Person of such extraordinary Parts, you were pleased to honour the Marquess my Uncle, and my Cousin, with your Company so far out of your own Territories. In Acknowledgment of that Noble Favour, be pleased to accept the proffer I make to you of ever being your most affectionate and most humble Servant, than which I cannot expect a higher Relation to you, when I consider the Character my Uncle hath been pleased to give you.

Don

428 *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* N.VII.

Don Philip return'd him most humble thanks, and said to him, I have so high an esteem for whatsoever this fair Lady is concern'd in, that I shall make it my Business to Sacrifice all you think most Excellent in me to her Satisfaction and yours, as long as it shall please his Excellency to give me leave to be of his retinue. How, (replies *Henrick*) may we expect that farther Happiness as to enjoy your Company for some time? I see no Reason you have to be so glad of it, (replies the Marquess) for you must know, that *Don Peter Blajco* is fallen deeply in Love with your Cousin, and that it is his Affection hath occasion'd this Acquaintance, though he hath assur'd me, that, since he understood she was design'd for you, that Love is turn'd into a pure fraternal Friendship, and under that Innocent Passion he endeavours to oblige her what lies in his Power. Be pleas'd to take my further Assurance of it, says *Don Philip*, that no thought of that may break your rest; for that Consideration laid aside, I should think my self capable to raise a Jealousie even in *Narcissus* himself, were he now alive: For I dare, without any vanity, affirm it, that there is not a Person in the World may be compared to me either as to Gracefulness of Body, or Accomplishments of Mind. I am sufficiently convinced of the Truth of
what

N. VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 429

what you say, (says *Henrick*) though I have not known you long : And therefore wholly relying on the promise you make me, I shall fear nothing as to your Pretentions, which were they any other Persons, I should not be guilty of so great an Indifference.

With these Discourses, they got to the Court, and the Ambassador being alighted at his House, he there found many Ladies, impatiently expecting the Arrival of the fair Lady *Eleanora*, who was receiv'd out of her Litter into the Arms of her design'd Husband, whereat *Don Philip* could do no less than conceive a little Jealousie. *Henrick*, to begin the Demonstrations of his Love, had prepared a magnificent Supper, to which were invited all those, of both Sexes, who were come thither to receive the Ambassadour and his Daughter.

Don Philip went to Bed presently after Supper, extreamly troubled in mind, that he had engag'd himself in an Enterprize, wherein he found so great difficulties. He could not imagine any means to bring it about, so that as that he might come off with Credit ; he met with too many Obstacles, and what afflicted him most of all, was, the Resolution the Lady had taken to satisfy her Father's Desire, who was desirous the Marriage should be concluded with *Henrick*, though he had
been

been acquainted, as well as she, with his Mis-
 carriages. *Marco* could not forbear grumb-
 ling at the Resolution of his Master, which
 must have ended amidst those Difficulties. He
 exposed himself as an Extravagant Person in
 a Court where he might have raised himself
 into Esteem, and out of a hope not likely to
 be brought to any Effect, he ran himself day-
 ly into new Inconveniences. The Master
 and Servant spent some part of the Night in
 discoursing about the Business, till at last *Don*
Philip fell a sleep, with a Resolution to dis-
 cover himself to his Mistress, and, if his Ad-
 dresses were not well entertain'd by her, to
 return immediately into *Galicia*.

The visits of the Cavaliers and Ladies, con-
 tinued six days, during which time the Mar-
 quess and his Daughter were often seen, both
 of them taking much Pleasure in the pleasant
 Demeanour of *Don Philip*, who acted the
 part he had undertaken so admirably well,
 that his Extravagances became the Discourse
 of the whole Court, all speaking of him as
 one of the most Humorous Fools that had come
 upon the Stage of a long time; insomuch
 that some advised the Ambassadour to bring
 him to the Palace, assuring him the King
 would be much pleased with his Behaviour.
Don Philip coming to hear of it, seemed to
 be very angry, and excused himself, out of

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 431

a fear his Majesty might not entertain him, suitably to his Quality and Extraction; that he would not run the hazard of receiving an affront, and that the least dis-respect shewn him would force him to violent Resentments thereof. The Ambassadour press'd him no further, lest he might put him out of Humour, perceiving he liked not the Proposal, and put it off to some other time, when perhaps he might find him more inclin'd to Compliance.

Henrick, who was also lodg'd in the Ambassadour's House, had only two Servants to wait on him, whom he trusted with the Knowledge of all his Love Adventures. It happen'd that both these fell sick at the same time, a time when he should have shewn more Reservedness in his Amours, to raise himself into a better Esteem with his Mistress; but he on the contrary, minded his own Enjoyments above all things, and never considering the present posture of his Affairs, he continued his Night-Visits, as he was wont to do before her Arrival. Being thus disappointed of their Attendance, who were best acquainted with his Humours, he conceiv'd he could not pitch upon a fitter Person to accompany him, than *Marco*, who, with the leave of his Master *Don Philip*, went along with him, finding him a subtle Fellow, and experienced
in

in such Affairs, he thought him a Person fit for his Purpose, and accordingly that he might trust him with any thing. He took him along with him three or four Nights together to a certain House, out of which he came at a very unseasonable hour. Though *Marco* went in with him, yet durst he not be so impertinently inquisitive, as to ask who was the Mistress of the House, till the third or fourth Night that he had accompanied him thither; and then being alone with the Servant-Maid (who taking Example by her Mistress began to express some Kindness towards *Marco*) he asked her whose House that was, and to whom *Henrick* made his Visits.

Love and Secrecy are seldom found in the same Lodging. She was a Servant, and in Love with *Marco*; there needs no more to be said, to make it appear, that she satisfied him in whatever he desir'd to know. *Marco* understood from her, that that House belong'd to his Master *Don Philip's* Aunt, and that his own Sister was the Person whom *Henrick* had at rack and manger, upon a Promise of Marriage, she had gotten from him a little before under his hand, she by reason of her Retiredness, being innocently Ignorant of the Treaty of Marriage between him and his Cousin the Lady *Eleanora*.

Marco

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 433

Marco having pump'd out all these particulars, fail'd not to give his Master an account thereof the next day. *Don Philip* was extremely surpriz'd thereat; not without Indignation against his Sister, though that procedure of *Henrick* rais'd him into some hopes of effecting his Design, presuming the more upon it, in that being equal, as to Birth, to *Henrick*, he was resolv'd he should never Marry any other, than her whom he had so highly dishonour'd. He thereupon commanded *Marco* to acquaint the Maid who had made those discoveries to him, that the Marriage of *Henrick* and his Cousin was agreed upon, and that a Messenger was sent to *Rome* for the Dispensation, not forgetting the rare accomplishments of the Lady *Eleanora*; to the end she might acquaint his Sister therewith, to see what Course she would take, and how she would Remedy the affront intended her.

He punctually executed the Orders he had received from *Don Philip*, so that the Night following *Donna Cornelia* (so was *Don Philip's* Sister call'd) was acquainted with the whole Business. She thereupon had a great Contestation with *Don Henrick*, who impudently denyed that he had any thing to do, as to Marriage, with his Cousin. In fine, having done all he could to vindicate himself,

and appease *Donna Cornelia*, she pretended to be satisfied with him, provided he more fully justified his Innocence the next Morning. So she dismissed *Henrick*, who went away well satisfied, imagining her to be so too, but resolving with himself not to give her any Visit awhile, he pretended some Indisposition. *Don Philip* understood that Night from *Marco* all that had passed between *Don Henrick* and his Sister, and was extreamly incensed against her, that she had given Credit to the deceitful Words of a Perfidious Man. However, he thought fit to let pass two days, to see what Course his Sister would take in that time, commanding *Marco* to prosecute his Discoveries.

The next day, *Don Henrick* not coming to clear himself, as he had promised, *Donna Cornelia* was so enraged, that she would stay no longer, but resolv'd to be satisfied from the Mouth of the Ambassadour, of the affront intended to be done her. She took a Coach, and veiling her Face, came to his House, but at such an unfortunate time, that she met *Don Henrick* at the Door, who, discovering who she was, presently imagin'd what might Occasion that Visit, and that her coming thither was to acquaint the Ambassadour how he was engag'd to her, and to shew him that promise of Marriage. *Don Henrick* receiv'd
her

her with extraordinary Kindness, which she taking otherwise than he expected, added the more to his Suspicion. He told her, he had something particular to acquaint her with, and entreated her to go along with him to a Room at some distance from his Uncle's Lodgings. *Donna Cornelia* would not be perswaded a good while to give him that Satisfaction, telling him, that she must first speak with the Ambassadour, and that afterwards he should talk with her as long as he pleased. That *Don Henrick* endeavoured to prevent, offering her, that he was at that time, very busie, looking over a packet of Letters he had received from the Emperour. He was so importunate with her, that she would hear him before she spoke with the Ambassadour, that at last he prevailed. Whereupon conducting her to *Don Philip's* Chamber, he entreated him to bear her Company, till he came back to speak with her.

Cornelia having her Face veil'd all this time, *Don Philip* knew her not, but by the discoveries he had receiv'd, he suspected her to be his Sister; on the other side, he was so transform'd by the Extravagance of his Cloths, and, what added much to his disguise, his perpetual wearing of Spectacles, that she could not have the least imagination of his being her Brother. *Don Philip* kept her Company

awhile, without enquiring into the occasion of her coming thither, and at last, leaving her lock'd up in the Room, he went to look for *Don Henrick*; to know how he would have him dispose of her; he was then busie with his Uncle, but sent one to desire *Don Philip*, to entertain that Lady a while, with this excuse, that, as soon as he could, he would come and dispatch her, *Don Philip* returning to his Chamber, immediately lock'd the door.

In the mean time the Lady *Eleanora* had understood, that her Cousin had spoken to a Woman with her Face Veil'd, in one of the walks leading to the Ambassadour's house, and desir'd *Don Philip* to conduct her to his Chamber; the jealousy she conceiv'd there-at rais'd in her a desire to know who she might be, which she might easily discover, by reason there was a passage from her lodgings to *Don Philip's* Chamber, and at the end of it a door, whereof she had the Key, she open'd it very softly, lest she might be perceiv'd, and that just as *Don Philip*, coming into the Room, found his Sister with her Face Unveil'd, expecting to be seen only by *Don Henrick*, whom only she staid for; as soon as he had taken a slight view of her, he apply'd this discourse to her.

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 437

Ungracious and unhappy Woman, unworthy of the House out of which thou art descended, and that I should call thee my Sister! is it possible thou should'st be Guilty of so strange an Oblivion of thy self, as relying on the vain promises of a treacherous Person to come into this House to seek him who hath abus'd thee, and to whom thou hast impudently prostituted thy self? Comest thou to importune a Man that hath forgotten thee, and to Court him who hath so palpably deceiv'd thee? If, besotted with a fond Love, it be thy design to be Married to him, thou hast Friends to whom thou might'st have Communicated thy desires, rather than have abandon'd thy self to a Man who treats thee with so much contempt; and, notwithstanding all his Caresses, laughs at thee in his Sleeve; he is upon the point of Marriage with his Cousin; art thou so simple, as that thou only should'st be ignorant of what is known all over the Court? Had I not a respect for the place where thou art, this Sword should dispatch thy Criminal Soul into the other World, that thou might'st be an example to all such simple Gull's as thou art; hast thou so far forgotten the respect due to thy Aunt, as to profane her house, by assigning *Henrick* his Nocturnal meetings in it? Thou should'st have bethought thy self who thou

art, that he is of no better house than thy self, and that thy quality is as high as his. 'Tis a great happiness to thee, that an humour took me to come into this Court, though thou seest me in this ridiculous Habit, to prevent, what lies in my power, *Henrick's* further abuse of thee; which I will do with the hazzard of my Life; tell me, infamous Woman, what hath pass'd between you, that I may take some course therein, and dissemble not the truth in any thing, for it concerns thee no less than Honour and Life.

The Disconsolate *Donna Cornelia* heard this discourse with her Eyes fastned on the Ground and flowing with Tears, without giving him the least interruption; but at last, to obey her Brother, whose indignation she saw justly grounded, she told him in few words, how *Henrick* had seen her at a certain publick Meeting, that he lik'd her, and, having enquir'd out her Lodgings, he had sent her several Letters; that having continued his Addresses to her with great demonstrations of affection, she had granted him entrance into the House, and that upon a promise of Marriage under his hand (which she had about her) she had permitted him to dispose of her as he pleas'd; in fine she gave him a particular account of all that happen'd between them; whereupon he, to add no
more

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 439

more to her affliction, put her in some hope that *Henrick* should be forc'd to perform the promise he had made to her.

The fair Lady *Eleanora* had heard all this discourse at the Door, which was between her Lodgings and *Don Philip's* Chamber, extremely astonish'd how a Person of Quality (such as she found *Don Philip* to be by his discourse) and one of such an excellent Wit, could put on a Fool's Coat, and behave himself as an Extravagant in their House, and all about the Court. She was ignorant of the cause of that strange *Metamorphosis*, and yet she had a certain suspicion, that it might be upon her account; on the other side, she reflected on the double Treachery of her Cousin *Don Henrick*, in treating of a Marriage with her, having given a promise of the same thing to another, and to a person so highly qualified as *Dona Cornelia* seem'd to be.

Being fully satisfied as to those two things, she would not stand to hear them any longer, but rush'd into the Room so of a sudden, as that she had not the time to put any thing over her Face, nor he to dissemble his indignation. Seeing her coming towards them, Ah Madam, (said he to her) what mean these Ambushes? What's your Design therein, Sovereign Princess of my Soul, and absolute Directress of my Inclinations? Do you use such

a Treachery against those who could not so much as imagine you guilty of any such thing? I wish so great a Beauty would not give me any more such Apprehensions, for another surprise of this Nature would make me die out of pure Joy, as it hath been the Fortunes of others to die out of an excess of Grief. There is no Dissembling any longer, (replies the Lady) for I am fully assur'd that you are not the Person you seem to us to be, and that the Affliction you are in requires rather secret and real Resentments, than personated Extravagances. My Curiosity heightened by a little Jealousie, procured me the Discovery of more than you imagine, I have found the Perfidiousness of my Cousin *Don-Henrick*; greater towards me than I could have expected, considering his pretended Kindnesses. I would fain be delivered out of the Confusion I am in, and I earnestly entreat you to resolve me this Riddle, for its Obscurity Perplexes me very much: But before you take that Trouble upon you, give me leave to carry this Lady your Sister to my Lodgings, and if my Cousin comes in the mean time to enquire after her, you may tell him, that she went away much displeased at his long stay, and leave the rest to me.

Ha.

Having so said, she took *Donna Cornelia* along with her, assuring her she would do all lay in her Power to serve her, which put her in hope of a better Success in her affairs, than she could have deriv'd from either her Brother's Indignation, or *Henrick's* Treachery. The Lady *Eleanora* left *Donna Cornelia* among her Women, and returns to *Don Philip*; who though at first surpriz'd at the sight of her, and the thought of her having over-heard the Infamy of his Sister; yet was he withal glad of it, since her Jealousie and Curiosity had discovered his Transformation, and the unhandsome Carriage of her Cousin. *Don Philip* therefore was very glad to see his Mistress return'd as might be seen by the Chearfulness of his Countenance. She desir'd him to take a Chair, and doing the like herself, she opened her mind to him in these Words.

I have been in an extraordinary Confusion for some days past, and so incens'd against my Cousin *Don Henrick*, to see the strangeness of his Behaviour towards me, that I come to receive your Advice how far I ought to resent it, and withal to be satisfied in some things, whereof I must yet Acknowledge myself Ignorant. One is, and that much raises my wonder, to see you counterfeiting the Fool and Extravagant, in a Court, where
you

442 *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* N.VII.

you might rather act the Part of a Person of Honour and Gallantry, as having the advantage of being Brother to so fair a Lady as *Donna Cornelia*, who, besides the Recommendation of Beauty, seems to be Mistress of many other good Qualities. You may infer from my Discourse, that being of the Quality I suppose you to be, you dishonour your self in representing the Natural and Ridiculous Person, as well in regard of the Habit you have assum'd, as the extravagant Actions wherewith you amuse the World. Which since I cannot imagine you would do but that there must be some Mystery in it, I am the more desirous to know your Motives thereto, in that I conceive it will be a means to clear my mind of certain doubts which now lie somewhat heavy upon it.

Having delivered this with the best grace in the World, the fair Lady was silent, and left *Don Philip* the Liberty to make this reply. If you find me at any loss, Madam, in satisfying your Desires as to this particular, I question not but you will have the goodness to attribute it, to that Distraction poor Mortals are Subject to, when they Address themselves to the Objects of their Vows and Adorations. You cannot be Ignorant, (though you knew it not by Experience) that Love is a powerful Divinity, to whom Men Sacrifice all things;
no

N. VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 443

no Intrigues but he is Author of ; no Difficulties but he overcomes, to compass his Designs. This premised, I am in the next place freely to acknowledge, that the day you pass'd through *Ville-Franche*, which is the place of my Birth, I found my self wounded by the Lightning of your fair Eyes. I did all lay in my Power to oppose that Passion ; but it still proved predominant, and the Engagement I knew there was between you and your Cousin *Don Henrick* could not abate on tittle of it. Nay, though I knew all the particulars of that Engagement, wherein you rather complied with the Commands of a Father than your own Inclinations, inasmuch as you looked on that too happy Kinsman, as a fickle Person, unworthy your Affection, a truth I have since heard confirm'd by your self; nay, though I saw the Marriage in a manner concluded, yet all could not break the Resolution I had taken to disguise my self as you have seen to traverse it, and Fortune now seems to Favour my Design.

I am not therefore, Madam, to repent me of the slur I may have put upon my Blood, and the Noble House from which I am descended, in acting the Fool's part in yours, into which it was my Business to introduce my self by all means imaginable, since the imposture hath prov'd so fortunate, and, that I
be-

444 *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* N.VII.

begin to conceive some hope of attaining my Desires. You know, Madam, that I durst not have presum'd to make you a real Discovery of my self, for besides that I should run the hazard of not finding credit with you, I came in at a time when your Marriage was in too great forwardness to be easily crossed by after Applications. In fine, it was Heaven's Pleasure, that a strange Conjunction of my Sister's Misfortune, and your own just Jealousies, should give you a discovery of what, perhaps, I should yet awhile have kept from your Knowledge. My true Name is *Don Philip de Gamboa and Toledo*, and consequently I may affirm my self to be of the most eminent Families of *Spain*, since I am descended from the *Seigniors of Ville-Franche and Astorga*. I have the Honour to be Knight of the Order of *Alcaniara*, and I have acquired it by some years Services done his Majesty in *Flanders*, with hopes, ere long, to be gratified with an Advantageous Commandry. I have given you an Account of my Quality, and have not concealed from you my Presumption. All I have now to Apologize for, is, my Love; and, I am the more confident of your pardon as to that, if you but ever so little consider the unavoidable Influence of your own Attractions. Nay, I cannot but account it a happy Offence, since it hath
pro•

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 445

prov'd the occasion of your being undeceiv'd ; and when I make a joynt reflection on my own happiness, and my Sister's Credulity, I cannot repent me of a disguise, whereof the satisfaction infinitely exceeds the Shame, for it is in your power to restore me the Honour I have depriv'd my self of, only for your sake ; and I shall force him, who hath cajoll'd my Sister out of her Honour to perform the promise he hath made her, or it shall cost him his Life.

The Fair Lady was Ravish'd to hear these words from her disguised Lover, and thought her self oblig'd to make an extraordinary return to so extraordinary a demonstration of Affection ; and being now fully undeceiv'd as to the Sycophancy of her Cousin *Don Henrick*, she made him this answer. *Seignior Don Philip* that you have, upon so slight a gound as the little Beauty I can pretend to, engag'd your self in an enterprize so prejudicial to your reputation and descent, I cannot but look on, as a transcendent Expression of your Love ; though I do not excuse you as to this, that the Noble Accomplishments you are Master of, might no doubt have more happily and more worthily been otherwise employ'd. I have resented, as I ought, the little respect my Cousin express'd towards me, and therefore it is but just he should not enjoy me, since it may
be

446 *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* N.VII.

be inferr'd from the forwardness of his matching with another, that he never truly intend-
ed it. It must needs be an extraordinary
joy to me, that I am undeceiv'd before we
were joyn'd by that tye which only death
can dissolve: I am satisfied as to the little af-
fection he had for me, and I do yours but
justice, when I assure you, that I shall be so
far from forgetting it, that I shall endeavour
all lies in my power to requite it.

This was deliver'd with so obliging an ac-
cent, that the Amorous Cavalier would
have cast himself at her Feet, would she have
permitted it; he returned her his thanks
with a thousand submissions for so extraordi-
nary a Favour, and the sweet encourage-
ment she was pleas'd to give his Love; it was
not now a seasonable time to expatiate into
Complements; *Donna Cornelia* was left in the
Lady Eleanora's Lodgings, whose return she
expected, and *Don Philip* look'd for *Don*
Henrick, to enquire after the Lady he had
recommended to his Custody; the *Lady Elea-*
nora went to comfort her whom she had left
among her Women, and to put in Execu-
tion, what had been resolv'd, between her
and *Don Philip*. About half an hour after
her departure thence, comes *Don Henrick* to
his Chamber, to look after the Lady he had
left there: *Don Philip* told him, that he
could

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 447

could stay her no longer, that she was gone, thinking he would not have come to her again : Nay then, I am glad I staid so long, (says *Henrick*) since my stay hath occasion'd her to do as I would have had her, which was that she might be gone out of the House. This Woman Plagues me extreamly, and it was no small happiness to me, that she met not with my Uncle ; for I should have been much troubled had she had any discourse with him. *Don Philip* ask'd him some odd questions, as he was wont to do, to sift something further out of him ; but *Don Hennick* would discover no more, the other easily apprehended, by the little had fallen from him, what course he intended to take, and the indignation he conceiv'd at his slighting of his Sister was so great, that it was not without much violence done himself, he forbore calling him to account for it.

In the mean time the Lady *Eleanora* had visited *Donna Cornelia*, of whom she had receiv'd a punctual Relation of her Amours, which were but too much confirm'd to her by the promise of Marriage she had brought with her ; and after she had entred into a second admiration at the double perfidiousness of her Cousin *Don Henrick*, she sent to desire her Father to come to her, who being alone with her, she entertain'd him, with this following Discourse.

Sir,

Sir, it hath ever been a landable Custom, that Fathers should dispose of their Daughters in Marriage, as they either pleased themselves, or found most convenient for their Affairs; but with this Caution, That it should not be absolutely done contrary to their Wills and Inclinations; many are yet willing to do so, out of a presumption, that Matrimony will change Men's Humours; but it is seldom found to work that effect: Those therefore may be said to do well, who, referring the Success to the higher Powers, by an implicate obedience, comply with the disposal of their Parents; but those in my Judgment do better, who use some precaution, and endeavour to prevent the inconveniencies, which they must otherwise fall into. I have ever been ready, Sir, to do whatever you commanded me, especially in the business now in agitation, though I have found my Cousin *Don Henrick* to be of a disposition so contrary to mine, that I promis'd my self little satisfaction from our being joyned together in the inseparable Estate you intended. I have endeavoured to obey you, tho' with some violence to my own inclinations, which directed my Affection to other persons not inferiour to him, either in Quality or Estate. I consented to this Marriage because you seem'd so much to desire it. When it
was

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 449

was fully concluded, there was a person sent to *Rome* for the dispensation ; and even during that time, when I expected my Cousin should have express'd most Love to me, I have found he hath done quite contrary, for he hath given a promise of Marriage to another Lady, whom you shall presently see.

She thereupon call'd for *Donna Cornelia*, whom she had left in her own Chamber, and who immediatly came before the Ambassador ; having dispos'd her into a Chair, the Lady *Eleanora* continu'd her discourse : This, Sir, is the Lady I spoke of, to whom my Cousin hath given a promise of Marriage under his hand, which she now hath about her, and you shall see, how this perfidious Person became thereby Master of her Honour. Coming hither to speak with you, and Complain of the affront intended her, she met him, who, giving her fair words, lock'd her into *Don Philip's* Chamber, under pretence that you were busie, and that it would require some time to stay ere she could see you ; some little curiosity occasion'd my my going to that door, which is between my Lodgings and his, and there I came to the knowledge of this Business, having over-heard some part of their discourse. I thought fit to bring this Lady to my Chamber, to give you further satisfaction of so pressing a truth ;

G g

her

her quality is great, since she is of the House of *Gamboa* and *Toledo*, two of the most Illustrious Families in *Spain*: She is resolved to make the Case known to her Friends, who are very Noble, and of great Credit in this Court, that they may oppose my Marriage and prevent our common Affront. I have hitherto obey'd you as a Father, I now appeal to you my Judge, and I beseech you discharge me of so unjust an obedience for the future; for I am resolv'd rather to confine my self the remainder of my days, in the most Austere Monastery about this City, than ever be Wife to a man so insensible of Worth and Honour.

The Ambassadour was extremely astonish'd at both what he saw, and what he had heard; he examin'd the promise made to *Donna Cornelia*, and found that that discovery alone was sufficient to prevent his Daughters Marriage with *Henrick*; he immediately resolv'd to break all to pieces, and to dismiss his Nephew, that there might be no more talk of the business; he caused the Ladies to withdraw, and sent for his Nephew, whom he shew'd the Schedule he had made to *Donna Cornelia*, asking him whether he knew the Hand; he not a little troubled, and changing Colour, began to deny it; but the Ambassadour told him, that as he could not do it sincerely, so it would be very unhand-
 ly

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 45

ly proffer'd, since the truth would be prov'd by several of his Letters written with the same hand; at last *Don Henrick*, not without extreme Confusion, acknowledg'd, that blinded by Love, he had indeed made that promise, but he would lose his Life ere he performed it.

Don Philip having quitted his Fool's Coat, and put on a very rich suit, with the Cross of *Alcantara* on his Coat, and Cloak, heard this Discourse from a corner of the Room, where he was dispos'd, and not able to contain himself any longer; *Seignior Henrick*, (said he coming up to him) have a better care what you say, and consider her quality whom you injure; her Birth is at least as Noble as yours: she is my Sister, and, as such, I am oblig'd to vindicate and protect her; if you perform not the promise you have made her, I wear a Sword by my side, which shall force you to do it, if Honour will not. I have already consider'd what I am in Duty oblig'd too, as to that point, (replies *Don Henrick*) and no Man shall force me, by menaces, to do any thing against my Will: This so enrag'd *Don Philip*, that he gave *Don Henrick* a Challenge; the Dispute grew higher and higher, which oblig'd the Ladies to come in between them, and to give orders the doors should be shut, least they should put the Challenge in Execution. G g 2 While

While these things pass'd, the Ambassadour minded not the Person of *Don Philip*, but imagin'd him some other Person come thither after his Sister; for, seeing him so well habited with the Cross of *Alcantara* and without Spectacles, which he constantly wore, he knew him not; but having consider'd him better, he found that he who challeng'd his Nephew was the same person, who, by his pleasant Extravagances, had found him so much sport; the Lady *Eleanora* perceiving her Father had his Eyes fasten'd on him, with some astonishment, imagin'd the cause of it; and gave it a check in these Words: He, Sir, whom you see in a Habit so different from that he was wont to wear, and who seem'd so ridiculous to you, is *Don Philip de Gamboa and Toledo*; when this dispute is over, you shall know the motives oblig'd him to that disguise.

The Ambassadour was the more astonish'd at that, and would have press'd his Daughter to make a further discovery of that Secret, had he not seen the two Cavaliers, with Swords drawn, ready to make that Room the place of their Duel; he ran in between them, and endeavour'd by mildness to persuade his Nephew, not to contest in a business, which was not to his advantage; that if he satisfi'd not the injur'd Cavalier, mis-
chief

N.VII. *The Metamorphos'd Lover.* 453

chief would attend it ; that he should not rely on any protection he might hope for from him, inasmuch as seeing the little reason he had on his side, and the affront he intended that Lady, he should rather be against him, by assisting his adversary, than countenance him in so unjust a Cause ; that as to his Daughter, he might quit all hope of her, that he should never be her Husband, and that it would discover a great poorness of Spirit in her, if she had any thoughts of kindness for him, after he had so unworthily treated her.

Don Henrick, finding himself press'd, with reproaches on all sides, and withal harkning to the Advice of his Conscience, thought it best to follow his Vncle's Counsel, he thereupon went with open Arms to his true Wife, to whom he once more gave his Hand as a Husband, and then Embrac'd his Brother-in-Law, whom he yet knew not : the Lady *Eleanora* thought it a good opportunity, before the whole Company, to give her Father an Account, how *Don Philip* had fallen in Love with her, how he got into his retinue in the Quality of a Jester ; that she conceived her self oblig'd to requite the Extraordinary demonstration of his Affection to her, by an Exchange of hers to him, if her Father approv'd of it ; the Old Gentleman had so

much Mettle left, as to admire the strange Conducts of Love in all its Operations; and particularly, how it made the wisest Man Mad, and the Mad Wise, making its Advantages of Extravagance it self, to compass its design; without any further demurring, he gave his Consent. Whereupon the Lady *Eleanora* took him by the hand, and *Don Philip* was so happy, as, by odd and unlikely means to see all his desires accomplished.

The Solemnities of both the Marriages were put off till eight days after; all the Grandees about the Court came to them; the Balls thereat, and the Tiltings were Extraordinary; but what more nearly touches the Story, is, that the King Honor'd these two Cavaliers with great advantages, wherewith *Don Philip* had also those of a numerous Issue; for which *Don Henrick* needed not much to have envi'd him, being the most satisfi'd man in the World with his choice, whom he infinitely Lov'd, and thereby made it appear, that the inclinations of two person, before they are United by Matrimony, though by some intervening Occurrences somewhat remitted, may yet, by that sacred tie, be heightened into a Noble and vigorous Flame of perfect Love.

THE

Impostour Out-Witted:

A

NOVEL.

IN the great and famous City of *Sevil*, the *Metropolis* of *Andaluzia*, Mother of so many Noble Families, and Excellent Wits, the Treasury of all the Wealth, which flows into *Spain* from the *West-Indies*, was Born *Don Antonio de Mendoza*, a very Accomplish'd Cavalier, of the Illustrious Family of the Dukes of *Alcala*, so highly esteem'd all over the Kingdom. By their Death, from whom he deriv'd his being in this World, there fell to him an Estate of four Thousand Crowns Annual Rent, upon which he lived very nobly at *Sevil*, being the most Remarkable Person at all publick Actions done about the City. He had at *Madrid* a *Cousin-German* who followed the *Spanish* Court, and

was gone thither about some Affairs of great Importance, which he had brought to a happy Issue. Having liv'd there awhile, he lik'd it, and the Conversation of the Cavaliers inhabiting it, so well, that he Exchang'd the place of his Birth for that Illustrious City. He there became intimately acquainted with an Old Cavalier, whose Name was *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, a Person who had rais'd himself into a general Esteem, by the Excellent Endowments he had. Besides which, he was honour'd with the Illustrious Order of the Patron of *Spain*, with a Commandery of two Thousand Ducats of Annual Rent.

This old Gentleman was a Widower, having but one only Daughter, to whom all his vast Estate was to fall at his Death. Nature it seems had made it her particular concern to enrich this young Lady, with all the Graces and Perfections to be wished in one of her Sex. Which occasion'd the envy of all the Ladies about the Court towards her, since she had, in point of Beauty, the same Advantages over them, as the Sun hath over all the rest of the Planets. Her Father, *Don Alonzo*, wish'd her well Married to his Mind, that is, one equal to her, in Estate and Extraction. *Don Martinio de Mendoza* (so was call'd *Don Antonio's* Cousin whom I spoke of first) might have aspir'd to the Honour
of

of making his Addresses to her, as well upon account of the House, from which he was descended, as the Familiar Acquaintance there was between him and her Father *Don Alonzo*.

But being a Younger Brother, he thought himself too low, in point of Estate, to pretend to so Advantageous a Match. However, he thought fit to make some Proposals to the Old Gentleman, on the behalf of his Cousin *Don Antonio*, who liv'd at *Sevil*, whom he highly recommended to him for his Excellent Qualities, and the greatness of his Estate; for he was the only Son of a Noble House. *Don Alonzo* took it very kindly from him, but thought it withal, Prudence, to make further enquiry into the Business, knowing that Persons speaking for their own Relations, are commonly very partial, and think it no mortal Sin to exceed the Truth. So that *Don Alonzo*, immediately writ to a particular Friend at *Sevil*, earnestly desiring him to give him an account of the Person and Estate of *Don Antonio de Mendoza*, inasmuch as it highly concerned the Honour of his House, to meet with a Cavalier Worthy his Alliance, to be Husband to his only Daughter, *Donna Catharina*.

'Twas

It was not long ere he received an answer, wherein his Friend confirm'd all that *Don Martinio* had said of his Kinsman, with somewhat more, protesting in the Conclusion, that he was so far from being partial or insincere, in the account he had sent him, that he rather told less than truth. He thereupon went to *Don Martinio*, and told him, that he might write to his Cousin, and assure him he should be very welcome, if he had any Inclinations for his Daughter. He made him answer that he would, and *Don Alonzo*, as a further Obligation, would have his Daughter's Picture, sent him, that he might therein find some of the said Qualities that were in her, permitting his Cousin, to be present at the taking of it, that he might assure *Don Antonio*, the Painter had not flattered her, and that the Copy was below the Original.

Don Martinio fail'd not to write to his Cousin, to whom he also sent the Picture, celebrating the Vertues of that Amiable Person, which the Painter could not represent, as he had done the Lineaments of her Beautiful Countenance. His Cousin *Don Antonio* was extremely Satisfied therewith, and referr'd to him to make some Overtures in the Treaty of Marriage, till he came thither himself, for the further Prosecution whereof, he sent him a full Procuration,

In

In the mean time, *Don Antonio* was preparing for his Journey to *Madrid*, to wait on his Mistress, who, having received his Picture, was as much taken with it, as he had been with hers, leaving his retinue at *Sevil*, till a rich Livery, then making, was finish'd, he began his Journey, having only one Person to wait on him, and a Groom to look to their Mules, who followed them at a little distance. *Don Antonio* carried always about him his Mistress's Picture inclosed in the same Letter, wherein his Cousin had sent it him. Being come within half a days Journey of *Toledo* he sent away the Groom, to provide Lodgings for them in the City. He had entertained at a Dinner some of the Inhabitants of *Ongaz*, which was the place where they had baited. The Cloth being taken away, they fell to Cards; he lost his Money, and was vex'd, which occasion'd their playing on till he had recovered his Losses, and by that time it was grown later than he could have wished. Being horsed, he and his Man put forward, but ere they had rode a League, Night surprized them, so that they made a shift to lose their way, and got in among certain Olive-Trees, about half a League short of *Toledo*. Not knowing where they were, and fearing to go too far out of their way, they thought it their best Course to alight,
and

and rest themselves under one of the Olive-Trees, till it were day. They accommodated themselves the best they could, and weariness soon laid them asleep, yet little dreamed of the Misfortune which was to happen to them. Being in their first Sleep, which is commonly the soundest, four Men came to the place, very softly, for the Noise of their Mules brought them thither; and these were of a Profession, which for the most part finds those that are of it more Work by Night than by day. They had been upon a Design which had not taken, and so they were returning very disconsolate with empty Pockets to *Toledo*.

Coming up to them, and finding them both asleep, they tied their Hands behind them, and took away all they had, but their Waistcoats and Drawers, and, to get off with more speed and safety, they made use of their Mules. *Don Antonio*, being thus basely surprized, was exasperated at the Misfortune; but his Man told him that it had happened to them through his fault, because he had not given over playing sooner. They discoursed of it, till the Birds gave them notice of the approach of *Aurora*. Soon after, hearing the noise of some Cattle not far from them, they called to him that looked after them, very much bemoaning the Condition they were in.

in. They asked him, how far it was to *Toledo*, and he told them it was not quite half a League, but if they would go along with him to a Country-House hard by, he would gladly shew them the way, and that he doubted not, but the Lady, who liv'd in it, would relieve them in that extremity.

They took his Advice, and he brought them to a very fair House. Having knock'd at the Gate, it was immediately opened by an old Man, who was Steward to the Lady, and had the over-sight of the Shepherds, and the Profits arising from the Sheep. The Shepherd who brought them thither went in to the Lady, and in few Words gave her an account of the Misfortune that happen'd to those Strangers, and the Condition he had found them in, whereupon she ordered them to be brought up to her Chamber. *Don Antonio* presented himself to her, very much out of Countenance to see himself almost naked, having upon him only an old Coat, which the Shepherd had lent him. He told her that his Journey was for *Madrid*, about a Law-Suit of great Importance, not discovering who he was, but only that he was a Gentleman of *Sevil*, named *Don Torpino de Hexxo*. The Lady whose Name was *Donna Olivia*, was much troubled to see him in that deplorable Condition. There were in the
House

House two Chests full of Cloths, which had been a Brother's of hers, who dyed not long before. She ordered two Suites to be brought out, which they put on, that which *Don Antonio* had proving so fit, that the Lady was much taken with his Person, and had her Eyes always fastened on him. She invited *Don Antonio* to Dine with her, which he did, taking Occasion ever and anon, to make extraordinary Acknowledgements of the Favours he had received from her.

They continued two days in that Country-House, ere the Lady made any discovery of the Affections she had for *Don Antonio*, save only what she did with her Eyes, which were the silent Interpreters of the Trouble she was in. *Don Antonio* was not insensible of it, and had some Discourse concerning it with his Man; yet had he not the Confidence to tell him what he really thought of it, being (as he was) upon the point of disposing himself otherwise. The Servant advised him not to let slip so fair an opportunity, and told him he should not be so hard-hearted, towards a Lady of so great Worth, and one that had so highly obliged them. The Solitude of the place, the Beauty of the Lady, and the silent Discoveries she made him by her Gestures, obliged *Don Antonio* to answer her Affection. He entred into some Love Discourses with her ;

her; but though she were really in Love with him, yet would she not grant him any particular Favour, unless he first assured her she should be his Wife, and that she had a Promise of it under his hand.

Don Antonio, on the other side, had so great a Kindness for her, that he had in a manner forgot the Mistress, whose Picture he had carried about him, and advising with his Servant, (who was a dangerous Confident, and a subtle Fellow) what he should do; he told him very roundly, that he ought not to let slip so sweet and favourable an opportunity; that he might easily have the Enjoyment of her, and withal give her the Promise of Marriage she desired, provided he put not into it his own Name, but fill'd it with the Supposititious Name he had assum'd, since she knew neither his Country nor Extraction. *Don Antonio* followed his Advice, and thereupon had his Desires of *Donna Olivia*, who having made the Blot, could do no less than give him leave to enter. He continued there four days, at the end whereof, acquainting the Lady that his Business at *Madrid* was of such Importance as required his Personal Attendance there, she consented to his departure, on Condition he would return again as soon as he could; which he with Oaths, promised to do.

The

The next Morning betimes, he departed, leaving the Lady o're-flown with Tears; he was somewhat troubled, or at least pretended it. The Lady having furnished him with all things necessary, he put forward; but ere he had gone far, he receiv'd some part of the Chastisement which he deserved for his Perfidiousness, for the Mule he was mounted on, being apt to start, gave him a fall, whereby he so sprain'd one Foot, that he was forc'd to make some stay at *Illescas*, a place half way between *Toledo* and *Madrid*, and to send for Chirurgeons to set all things right again.

Leaving him there confined to his Chamber for some days; let us return to *Donna Olivia*, who very much bewailed the absence of her Gallant, the very thought of whom caused her no small Affliction. A Servant of hers who had made the Bed where he lay, found, under the Bolster, a Picture of the Lady whom *Dan Antonio* was to be married to, folded up in a Letter which his Cousin had writ to him from *Madrid*, which she delivered to her Mistress, who opening the Paper, saw the Picture, whereat she was much disquietted; but she was much more astonished, when she cast her Eye on the ensuing Letter, which contained these Words:

Dear-

Dearest Cousin,

YOU will receive herein inclosed the Picture of the Lady Donna Catharina de Castiza, which is very exactly taken from the Original; I doubt not but the charms of her Beauty will oblige you to hasten your Journey. Her Father, Don Alonza de Castiza, expects you with great Impatience. In the mean time, the Contract of Marriage is a drawing up, and will be ready, before you be here to Sign it. Assure yourself you will be extreamly satisfied, that you have found so Excellent a Wife. I am

Your Affectionate Cousin,
Don Martinio de Mendoza.

Donna Olivia had scarcely come to the period of this Letter, but, through the Trouble she received at the reading of it, she fell into a Swoon, and continued therein above half an hour, in the Arms of her Maid. At last she came to her self, bursting into Sighs and Tears; she railed at the *Sevillian* Impostour, but much more at her own simplicity, that she had so lightly prostituted her Honour to an unknown Person, whom so strange an Adventure had brought to her House. She spent that whole day in weeping and bemoaning her Misfortune: But considering withal, what hazard her Reputation was in, she

H h

re-

resolv'd it should not be said of her, that she had been so basely affronted by any Man. Whereupon, with the light she receiv'd from the Letter, of the Occasion of his Journey, and the Person to whom he was to be Married, she put things in Order to her Removal to *Madrid*; which she might better do than any other, in regard she had not any Kinsman near enough to whom she might Communicate her Intention. She Communicated her Design to *Dilario*, an old Servant of hers, who had brought her up from the Cradle, and was very glad to wait on her.

Upon this Resolution, she caused two Waggon to be loaden with all things necessary to furnish a House fit to receive a Person of Quality, and took her way towards *Madrid*. Being come thither, she commanded her Servant *Dilario*, to enquire whereabouts liv'd *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, and whether the young Cavalier, whom he intended to make his Son-in-Law, were come from *Sevil*. She understood by him, that he was not yet come, but that they expected him, which much troubled the Lady, who knew nothing of the Accident had happen'd to him near *Illescas*.

The first thing this affronted Lady did, was to take a House for her self near that of *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, and ordered *Dilario*

to live in it as Master thereof, that done, she sent him to *Don Alonzo's*, to enquire whether she wanted a waiting-Gentlewoman, for she would disguise her self, that she might not be known by *Don Antonio*. The Business had the effect she desired, for *Donna Catharina* was then enquiring for a Widow to wait on her, a Custom much practised in *Spain*, where Ladies of Quality have several of them, whom, being Widows, they call *Duenna's*. When this was proposed by *Dilario*, who went under the Name of Father to his Mistress, *Donna Catharina* not only receiv'd her into her Service, but her Father, *Dilario*, was entertain'd into *Don Alonzo's*. *Dilario* gave his Mistress an account of his Negotiation, whereat she was extreamly satisfied: So that having put her self into the habit of a *Duenna*, she went the next day to present her self to *Donna Catharina*, conducted by her pretended Father, *Dilario*. They were both very kindly entertained by *Don Alonzo de Castiza* and his Daughter. *Donna Olivia* wished she had not been so handsome, that the Suitor she expected might be the less taken with her; however, she Couragiously resolv'd to prosecute the Impostour she was engaged in. *Donna Catharina* asked *Dilario* what Country-Man he was. He told her that he was born at a place called *Utrera*, near *Sevil*; that his

Name was *Jacob de Granatus* (by which we shall hence-forth call him) that his Daughter had been Married to a Merchant of that City, who died as he was going for the *West-Indies*, leaving so great Debts behind him, that all his Estate went to satisfy his Creditors.

Don Alonzo hearing that *Granatus* was of *Andaluzia*, asked him, whether he had liv'd any time at *Sevil*. He told him that he had often been in that City, but that his Daughter had liv'd there. *Don Alonzo* would not at that time enquire any farther, nor enter into any Discourse with him concerning *Don Antonio de Mendoza*. *Donna Olivia* was entertained as Duenna to *Donna Catharina*, who took such an Affection to her, that she trusted her with all her Keys, to the great discontent of her other Servants, who had lived with her many years. *Granatus* told them that he had a House of his own, not far from *Don Alonzo's*, and a Wife (for *Flora* an ancient Maid of *Donna Catharina's*, was to act that part) whereupon he had no Lodgings assigned him in *Don Alonzo's*.

It is now time we return to *Don Antonio de Mendoza*, who being recovered of his fall, came to *Madrid*, and lighted at the House of his Cousin *Martinio*, who was much troubled that he had not been there sooner. He told him

him the Cause of it, and gave him a particular account of all had past in *Donna Olivia's* Country-House, even to the promise he had made her, under a feign'd Name. *Don Martinio* asked him, 'what Quality the Lady was of: whereto he answered, that her Name was *Donna Olivia de Priola*, and that she was of one of the most Noble Families of *Toledo*. *Don Martinio*, was very much dissatisfied with his procedure, reprehending him with the unworthy Action he had committed in abusing and dishonouring that Lady, and that it was to be feared, she might hear of his coming to *Madrid*, in order to a Marriage to another, and find means to be revenged for that affront.

They afterwards fell into Discourse concerning *Donna Catharina*, and *Don Antonio* told him, he extreamly fancied the Picture he had seen of her, but that, with the other things he had been robbed of, he had lost it: though he knew well enough, he had left it under the Beds-Head at *Donna Olivia's*, which troubled him not a little, however he dissembled it. *Don Martinio* told *Don Antonio*, that it were requisite he put himself into other Apparel, before he waited on his Mistress, and that he must keep within Doors till they were ready. Within two days a very fair Riding-Suit was brought him, wherein ; pre-

tending he was but newly come to Town, he goes to the House of *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, by whom he was received with great Demonstrations of Kindness. Notice was immediately carried up to *Donna Catharina*, that the Person design'd to be her Husband was coming up to her Chamber, where she was with her Maids about her, who had just made an end of dressing her. *Don Antonio* coming in, conducted by *Don Alonzo* and *Don Martinio*, was infinitely satisfied at the sight of his Mistress, whom he very civilly and discreetly saluted, for he was a Person of an Excellent Wit, and a Confident Carriage and Demeanour. He found by the Original of *Donna Catharina*, that the Painter had done his Work very faithfully, a Virtue not much practised by Painters, especially upon such Occasions as that was. He was ravished to see so great a Beauty, and she on the other side was well satisfied with the handsom Personage of *Don Antonio*.

There were yet some things to be done in order to the absolute Conclusion of the Marriage, at which there was a necessity of *Don Antonio's* Presence; whereupon he, *Don Alonzo* and *Don Martinio* withdrew into another Room, where they lock'd themselves in with a Notary, and some Friends, who were to be Witnesses at the Articles of the Agreement.

ment. *Donna Catharina* continued all that time in her Chamber, with her Servants talking of *Don Antonio*, her Husband to be, every one congratulating her good Fortune, save only *Donna Olivia*, who saying nothing at all, her Mistress observed it, and being all alone with her, *Donna Artimisa*, (said she to her, for that was the Name she had assumed) whence comes it, that, while all the rest celebrate the Happiness of my choice, you only are silent? Methinks you might have contributed somewhat to the publick Congratulation, though you had done it only out of Complaisance. I pray give me some Reason for it. *Donna Olivia* had done it purposely, in Prosecution of her Design, and this Question came as seasonably as she could have wished it, so that she made her this answer. As to the Person of *Don Antonio*, Madam, there is not any thing to be said against it, nay he is so accomplish'd that there is not any thing to be wished in him, which he is not already possess'd of. My silence proceeds hence, that I had a particular Knowledge of him at *Sevil*, for I lived in a quarter of the City, which he much frequented. I neither will, nor ought to conceal from you the Occasion of his so often coming thither; for it is my Duty to be faithful to you, as having no other Design than to serve you, and en-

deavour your quiet, so as that you may not live in a perpetual dis-enjoynment of your self all the rest of your days ; know then, Madam, that if you Match your self with *Don Antonio* you will be brought to a kind of Civil death, instead of receiving the satisfaction of Wedlock. *Donna Catharina* was much astonish'd at this discourse, and pressed her *Duenna*, to discover to her more clearly, what she had but too great a desire to tell her : Whereupon intreating her to retire into a more secret place, where they might not be observ'd by her other Women, *Donna Olivia* gave her this Malicious account of the perfidious *Don Antonio*.

I should not live with the respect and duty I owe you, as my Mistress, nor according to the Affection I bear you, if I express'd not my self clearly to you, in a business wherein you are so highly concern'd, and on which depends your greatest Felicity in this World ; know then, Madam, that *Don Antonio* fell in Love with a Lady at *Sevil*, one very handsome and well descended, in a word wanting nothing but a Fortune Suitable to her Quality ; he Courted her so earnestly, that she, finding her self oblig'd by so great demonstrations of affection-Letters, and continual Embassies, attended with Presents, from *Don Antonio*, satisfy'd his desires, upon

a promise that he would make her his Wife, whereof there are many Witnesses ; but the business was to be kept secret for a time ; for *Don Antonio's* Father was then a live, who, having receiv'd some Intelligence of that Love, endeavour'd all he could to prevent *Don Antonio's* Marriage with *Donna Marcellina de Loprezza* ; (so was the Lady called.) The continuance of his Visits to her produc'd living proofs, which were two Son's and a Daughter, who were at that time with the Mother ; when *Don Antonio's* Father was remov'd out of the way, (which happen'd not long after) *Donna Marcellina* expected he should make good his promise, and Marry her, but he, for some time, came not so much as to see her ; what Inconveniencies she was put to from the time of their acquaintance she knows to her Sorrow, and I am not Ignorant thereof, for I liv'd near her, and went often to her Hou'e.

Being now convinc'd that he intended to leave her in the Lurch, she discover'd the business to two Cousin-Germans of hers, who were so enrag'd thereat, that they immediately resolv'd to oblige *Don Antonio*, by force, to perform the promise he had made to their Kinswoman. *Don Antonio* went to a certain Farm he had, not far from *Sevil*, to avoid his adversaries, who, knowing he went out
of

of the way purposely because he would not satisfy their Cousin, resolv'd to be the Death of him: things were in this posture when my Father brought me to *Madrid*, where I have been about this six Weeks; this is the Account I can give you of *Don Antonio*, who must not think himself secure in this Court; for the Lady's Kinsmen, whom I know to be Gallant and Stout Persons, as soon as they hear of his being here, will be sure to attend his Motion, and revenge the affront done to their Cousin; nay it will be easier for them to do it here than at *Sevil*.

Donna Catharina heard very attentively the Story told her by the *Duenna*, and was extremely troubled, to find *Don Antonio* so far engag'd with another. She ask'd her a thousand questions, among others, whether he was much in Love with that Mistress, whether that *Donna Marcellina* was very handsome, &c. Where to she made such Answers as were suitable to her design, which was to put *Don Antonio* clearly out of her favour. *Donna Catharina* resolv'd to give her Father an Account of all, and leave it to him to inform himself more fully of the business. She immediately went to the Room where he was to speak to him, for all things were concluded as to the Marriage.

In the mean time *Donna Olivia* was left in
the

the outer-room, where the Women and *Duenna's* are wont to wait, there came in to them a Servant of *Don Antonio's*, whom he had sent to the Post for Letters from *Sevil*; enquiring for his Master, to give him the Pacquet. *Donna Olivia* told him, that he was within, but that as soon as he came out, she would deliver it to him; having open'd the Pacquet; she put into it a Letter, which she immediately writ, and, Sealing it up again, came where her Mistress was; she asked her whether she was going with those Letters? The other answer'd without the least discovery of any Malice, that they were directed to *Seignior Don Antonio*, and had been brought thither a little before by one of his Servants from the *Sevil* Post. Curiosity was an ingredient of the first Woman, and it is very fruitfully spread through the whole Sex. *Donna Catharina* shew'd her self not free from it on this Occasion, and she was the more excusable considering the Story had been told her by the subtle *Duenna*; she was tempted to open the Pacquet, wherein finding one Letter Written with a Woman's hand, (which was that, Written, by *Donna Olivia*) she could do no less than open it, and directing her Eye down to the bottom of it found it subscribed by one *Donna Marcellina de Loprezza*; she read it, and was confirm'd in what before she not fully credited.

The

The Letter.

My Dearest,

YOUR Absence and my Indisposition have reduc'd me to such an Extremity, that I cannot imagine I have any long time to live, it being impossible I should hold out, after the News I have heard of your Resolution to be Married at Madrid, which cannot easily be done, without a transcendent Baseness, by a Person so nearly engaged to me as you are. You know that you cannot bestow on another what is so Lawfully due to me, especially if you make the least Reflection on the precious Pledges there are between us thereof. I have no other Advice to give you, as things now stand, but that, if you are at such a loss of all Shame and Conscience, there is a Deity, who sees our most secret Thoughts, and passes a just Judgement on them; and that I have many Noble Friends, who measuring the small Account you make of them by your slighting of me, will not fail to revenge the affront done to us all. I hope we shall not be forc'd to those Extremities, considering how highly you are obliged to do things suitably to the Nobleness of your Birth, and to Acknowledge, as you ought, her, whom, while we both Live, you must look on, as

Your Lawful Wife,
Donna Marcellina de Loprezza.
This

This Letter fully satisfi'd *Donna Catharina*, that all she had heard from the malicious *Duenna* was true; her Father coming into the Room as she had done reading it, she acquainted him with all that concern'd *Don Antonio*, shewing him the Letter from *Donna Marcellina*; he was extremely astonish'd, to find that a Cavalier of so noble a Family, had abus'd a Lady of such Quality, and that having Children by her, he should be so impudent as to make his Address to his Daughter; he forbore reproaching him therewith, till he had better inform'd himself from a Friend of his of *Sevil*, then at *Madrid*, whom he immediately went to look for.

Don Alonzo was hardly got out of doors, but *Don Antonio* and his man came in, for his man having told him that he had deliver'd the Pacquet to one of *Donna Catharina's* Women, he was come to receive it from her, since it was not brought to his Cousin's, whither all his Letters were directed; it was his Fortune to meet with *Donna Catharina* in the Outer-room, where her Father had left her; I should not have return'd so soon, my dearest Lady, (said he to her) had not somewhat extraordinary oblig'd me thereto; it is to receive some Letters, which my Man tells me he deliver'd to one of your Women. She thought (says *Donna Catharina*) that you had been
still

still with my Father : I casually meeting her as she was coming into the Room, asked her what she came for ; she answering, it was to deliver you the Pacquet, I took it from her and (presuming that a Cavalier of your Age and Complexion could not have liv'd to this time in *Sevil*, and not have an inclination for some Lady) a certain Conjunction of Curiosity and Jealousie persuaded me to open it. That Curiosity hath done me a Courtesie, and hath satisfi'd me in some things which before I only suspected ; and therefore I forbear desiring your excuse, since I have receiv'd so good an Information, before I was any further engag'd with you ; for had it come too late, I had been ruined : Here's a Letter from a Person you should be well acquainted with ; this would have been enough to undeceive me, but it only confirms a relation I had receiv'd before, upon which I was almost resolv'd to put such a Check to your pretensions to me, as that you should have but little encouragement to continue them. Farewel, my presence will but trouble you, this Letter will acquaint you with what you are not Ignorant of.

Don Antonio receiving the Letter out of her hand was not a little surpriz'd, not imagining what might have happen'd to him. He read it, and presently inferr'd, that it was

was a trick put upon him by some envious Person, who was desirous to obstruct his happiness. Meeting with *Donna Olivia*, (whom, as we said before, he knew not in her Widow's Habit) ah Madam, (said he to her) what Forgeries are these? I a Mistress at *Sevil*, and of this Name? I Children by her, and that upon a Promise of Marriage? If it be not the greatest Untruth that ever Humane Malice invented, let me never look Man in the Face again. (For my part, replies the subtle *Duenna*) I find my self inclined to believe, that what you say may be true; but your main Concernment is to bring my Lady to that Perswasion. I know her to be of such an Humour as not easily to quit a Resentment, which she entertains upon just Grounds; and I much Question, whether she will admit your Addresses any further, for I know she hath acquainted her Father with all, and he is gone to a Gentleman of *Sevil*, an intimate Friend of his, who is now in this City. I am very glad of it, (says *Don Antonio*) for he will find it to be an absolute Impostour, and that there is not any Lady in *Sevil* that goes under the Name of *Donna Marcellina de Loprezza*.

But I beseech you tell me, Madam, whether your intimacy be very great with the Lady *Donna Catharina*; so great (replied she) that

that I am the only person in her favour, and to whom she is pleas'd to communitate her thoughts; if it be so, (says *Don Antonio*) it's possible you may procure me the favour from her, that I may vindicate my self. I much question whether she will ever speak to you again, (said she) for she is extremely incens'd against you, and when once angry, if justly, she is the hardest to be appeas'd that ever I knew; but, (said he) if you are so much in her Favour, you may prevail somewhat with her, by representing to her the Extraordinary affection I have for her. It is in my power, (said she) to do with her what you desire; but what will you give me if I can procure you a favourable Audience from her? any thing you can desire, (said he to her) if you mind only matter of advantage. You see I am very young, (said she) and consequently may hope to be Married again, Money is the only principal Verb, which I have occasion for; if I answer your Expectation, may I rely on your Liberality for my Reward. That you may know how earnestly I desire it, (says, he) do what I require, and I will make your Fortune heavier by five hundred Crowns than it is. I most humbly thank you, (replies she) but I must tell you, Sir, that I have been so deluded by the verbal promises sometimes made me by a Person of your Quality, that I have

have reason to mistrust whatever is promised; if I have it not in writing; you will be pleas'd to excuse me, Sir, if my Fear to be deceiv'd as I have been, force me to these Precautions, and to assure your self, that those satisfied, I will endeavour to serve you to the utmost of my Power. To give you absolute satisfaction, as to that point, Madam, (said he) help me with Pen, Ink and Paper, and you shall have what security you Desire your self.

Donna Olivia would see the Issue of it, and so brought him what he desir'd. *Don Antonio* kept his Word with her; nay, either out of Ignorance, of the Form of such Obligations, or to make a greater Expression of his Earnestness that she should assist him, he proved so Liberal, as to give her a Blank Sign'd and Sealed, not mentioning the Summ where-to he oblig'd himself, telling her he had not specified it, out of a Design to requite her beyond his Promises, proportionably to the Service she should do him, in the Recovery of his Mistress's Favour. She saw this happened according to her Wishes, so that acknowledging the Favour *Don Antonio* had done her, she promised him her utmost endeavours to deserve it, by recovering him into the Favour of his Mistress. The Amorous Cavalier believed her, and took his leave.

Dilario, coming in soon after, *Olivia* gave him an account of what Progress she had made, and putting into his Hands the Blank Sign'd by *Don Antonio*, bid him write above his Name a formal Promise of Marriage, dating it about the time of his being at her Country-House near *Toledo*, with two Witnesses which *Dilario* did, imitating as near as he could *Don Antonio's* Hand.

That day, *Don Alonzo* fail'd to meet the Gentleman of *Sevil*, and put off the visit he intended him till the next. In the mean time *Donna Olivia* understood from *Donna Catharina*, that she was resolved to lead Apes into Hell, rather than have *Don Antonio* to her Husband. Having already trusted her *Donna* with some of her Secrets, she thought she might make an absolute discovery of herself to her, and thereupon told her, how that before her Father had treated of a Marriage between her and *Don Antonio*, she had been Court'd by a Person of Honour, named *Don Valerio de Merdea*, that she had some Inclination towards him; and that the Perswasions of her Father, had prevail'd with her to entertain the Applications of *Don Antonio*; but having discovered his Unworthiness, she was resolved to re-address her Affection to *Don Valerio*.

Donna Olivia was almost out of her self for Joy to hear that News, for it put her into a Confidence, that her Design would take; and the more to promote it, she disposed *Donna Catharina* as much as lay in her Power to favour *Don Valerio*. He must needs be displeased with me, (says she to her) yet I doubt not but a Letter from me will re-engage him my humble Servant. The crafty *Duchess*, proffered to be the Bearer of it, on Condition she might do it by Coach. *Donna Catharina* was very glad to find her Woman so ready to serve her, especially in a Business which she was so much pleased with; and so she commanded a Coach to be made ready, and that she should go immediately to see *Don Valerio*, to whom she writ a Letter. *Donna Olivia* took Coach, pretending to go to *Don Valerio's* House, but she went to her own, and bid the Coach-Man return to *Danna Catharina*, and tell her, that for fear notice might be taken of the Coach, she would go on foot to the Place where she had sent her, conducted by *Granatus* her pretended Father. From that House, she writ two Letters, one, to *Don Alonzo*, desiring him to come to her; the other to *Don Valeria*, to the same Effect, with Directions to find the House.

While the Letters were carried abroad, she put off her Widows Habit, and put on that of a Person of the highest Quality, expecting these two Visits with the accustomed Ceremonies of Spain. *Don Valerio de Merdes* was not long a coming, though he knew nothing of the Person who had written to him. There had not past many Complements between him and *Donna Olivia*, but word was brought her that *Don Alonzo de Castiza* was alighted out of his Coach, and was coming in to the House. Sir, (said she to *Don Valerio*) I am obliged to speak with the Person who is coming up, all alone. Not but that you may hear the Discourse we shall have together; and therefore let me entreat you to stand behind this Curtain, whence you will hear all we say, for it concerns you more than you imagine, and will prove to your Advantage. *Don Valerio* complied, not knowing what might be the issue of this Precaution.

Don Alonzo came in, and having taken a Seat, *Donna Olivia* (whom he knew not as she was then dressed) Addressed her self to him with this Discourse. I doubt not, Sir, but you somewhat wonder, you should be intreated hither by a Letter, and that from a Person not known to you. To recover you from that Confusion, I will give you an account

count of my self. I was Born in the Imperial City of *Toledo*, the only Daughter of the House from which I am descended, and Heir thereof. I am of the Family of *Priola*, so well known all over *Spain*, that I need say nothing of it. As to my Quality, I am to tell you farther, that my Father was, in his time, honour'd with the Order of St. *James*, and my Brother of that of *Alcantara*, with the Command of a Troop of Horse under his Majesty in *Flanders*, upon his Death I retired to a Country-House I have near *Toledo*, where I lived privately, contenting my self with the Innocent Enjoyments of a Country Life, without the least Acquaintance of any thing of Love, till that, one Morning a Shepherd of mine brought to my House, two Men, who had been robb'd, and stripp'd the Night before by certain High-way-Men. I took Compassion of them, especially him who by his Demeanour seem'd to be the Master, and out of two Chests of Cloths my Brother had left, I furnished them with two Suites, wherewith they covered their Nakedness. They seem'd to be very thankful for so seasonable a Favour; but the more considerable of the two hath treated me very ungratefully, which is the ordinary stile of Courtiers, and hath requited my Charitable Offices only with Flatteries and Deceit.

I was so simple as to be cajoll'd, by the
Caresse he made me, during four days that
I kept him at my House, and he prevailed
so far with me, that I was no longer at my
own Disposal. The re-iterated Oaths and
Protestations of a Person of that Worth
raised me into a Perswasion that he really lov-
ed me, and that induced me to love him a-
gain; to be short, upon a Promise he made
me of Marriage, he got me in a Humour to
grant him the greatest of Favours. He made
me believe that his going to Court was for
the Prosecution of some Law-Business that
concerned him very highly. He desired my
leave to go to *Madrid*, promising to return
again in a short time, but with such Demon-
strations of Love as might easily have pre-
vailed with one who had not fancied him so
affectionately as I had done. I supplied him
with all things necessary, and he left me ex-
tremely troubled at his departure. Now, by
a Picture and Letter he left behind him under
the Bolster, I found that the Occasion of his
coming to this Court was in Order to a Mar-
riage between him, and that Miracle of Beau-
ty *Donna Catharina*, your Daughter. Now,
our Honour being the most considerable
thing we ought to be tender of, I could do no
less, upon the procedure of *Don Antonio*, than
resolve to come to this Court, and to apply
my

my self to my Friends, that, by their Favour, I might cross the Marriage he is about, and you will find, that I may easily do it, if you but see what Cards I have to play.

I conceived my first overture should be to acquaint you with my Disgrace, the Dishonour I have run into by the Acquaintance of *Don Antonio*, and his Treachery towards me, that receiving it from my own Mouth, you may not be too forward to conclude what is already resolved between you, as I have understood. With the Paper I have here in my Hand, I will prosecute him to the utmost; it is under his own Hand and Seal, and Witnesses to it: be pleased, Sir, to peruse it, and see whether I have not Reason to prosecute this Ungrateful and Perjur'd Man, and to force him to a performance of the Promise he hath made me.

Don Alonzo was astonished at this Relation of *Donna Olivia's*, and, by what was put into his Hands, found out the Disposition of *Don Antonio*, and concluded him a fickle imprudent Person, who pursued his Enjoyments, without any thought of the Consequences thereof, and thereupon he resolved there should be no farther talk of any Marriage between him and his Daughter. Opening the Paper which *Donna Olivia* had given him, he found in it these Words.

I was so simple as to be cajoll'd, by the Caresses he made me, during four days that I kept him at my House, and he prevailed so far with me, that I was no longer at my own Disposal. The re-iterated Oaths and Protestations of a Person of that Worth, raised me into a Perswasion that he really loved me, and that induced me to love him again; to be short, upon a Promise he made me of Marriage, he got me in a Humour to grant him the greatest of Favours. He made me believe that his going to Court was for the Prosecution of some Law-Business that concerned him very highly. He desired my leave to go to *Madrid*, promising to return again in a short time, but with such Demonstrations of Love as might easily have prevailed with one who had not fancied him so affectionately as I had done. I supplied him with all things necessary, and he left me extremely troubled at his departure. Now, by a Picture and Letter he left behind him under the Bolster, I found that the Occasion of his coming to this Court was in Order to a Marriage between him, and that Miracle of Beauty *Donna Catharina*, your Daughter. Now, our Honour being the most considerable thing we ought to be tender of, I could do no less, upon the procedure of *Don Antonio*, than resolve to come to this Court, and to apply
my

my self to my Friends, that, by their Favour, I might cross the Marriage he is about, and you will find, that I may easily do it, if you but see what Cards I have to play.

I conceived my first overture should be to acquaint you with my Disgrace, the Dishonour I have run into by the Acquaintance of *Don Antonio*, and his Treachery towards me, that receiving it from my own Mouth, you may not be too forward to conclude what is already resolved between you, as I have understood. With the Paper I have here in my Hand, I will prosecute him to the utmost; it is under his own Hand and Seal, and Witnesses to it: be pleased, Sir, to peruse it, and see whether I have not Reason to prosecute this Ungrateful and Perjur'd Man, and to force him to a performance of the Promise he hath made me.

Don Alonzo was astonished at this Relation of *Donna Olivia's*, and, by what was put into his Hands, found out the Disposition of *Don Antonio*, and concluded him a fickle imprudent Person, who pursued his Enjoyments, without any thought of the Consequences thereof, and thereupon he resolved there should be no farther talk of any Marriage between him and his Daughter. Opening the Paper which *Donna Olivia* had given him, he found in it these Words.

THis present Writing, written with my own Hand, and Sealed with my Seal, Witnesseth, that I, Don Antonio de Mendoza, an Inhabitant of Sevil, acknowledge my self to be the Lawful Husband of Donna Olivia de Priola, an Inhabitant of Toledo, and that I will perform the present Promise I make her of Marriage whensoever I shall be, by her, thereto required. Sign'd and Sealed in the presence of Dilario and Flora, Servants to the said Donna Olivia.

Don Antonio de Mendoza.

Having read this promise, and knowing the Hand and Seal of Don Antonio, Don Alonzo said to her, Madam, I am very much troubled, that Don Antonio (a Person so well descended as he is) should be guilty of so unworthy an Action, and a Demeanour so full of Treachery; for at the time when he gave you this Writing, he was coming hither purposely to be Married to my Daughter. But the Account you have given me of him is such, that I assure you, I will have no more to do with him, since you have so much Reason to oppose it. Prosecute your own Right, and leave him not till you have obtained your Desires, and be assured I shall assist you to the utmost of my Power, since I find your Honour so highly concerned in it. I have
some

Some Friends here, and those powerful, I will engage them all to serve you, that you may find I am a Person, who prefers a just Cause before all Self-Interest.

Donna Olivia gave him very humble thanks for so great a Favour, and the Tears that fell from her at the close of her Discourse, heightened his Zeal and Tenderness towards her. *Don Alonzo* took along with him the Writing which *Donna Olivia* had shewn him, that he might thereby induce *Don Antonio* to an Acknowledgment of his Fault. With those Protestations he took leave of *Donna Olivia*, promising to see her again within a short time, and to return the promise of Marriage, reiterating the Desires he had to serve her. He thereupon left her, giving *Don Valerio* the Liberty to come upon the Stage. As soon as he had taken his seat, you have understood, (says *Donna Olivia*, to him) if so be you have heard the Discourse between *Don Alonzo* and my self, what hath passed between me and *Don Antonio*. Upon which account, (as you have heard from her Father) you find he is never like to be Husband to the fair *Donna Catharina*. She sent me hither to acquaint you, that what hath been done on her part in order to the Marriage between her and *Don Antonio* was purely out of Compliance with the Commands of her Father, and

and that she is glad of the Occasion she now hath to quit him, and re-assume that Kindness and Affection she ever had for you. What I say, you will find in Writing under her Hand, when you have perused this Letter. *Don Valerio* having read it, was the most satisfied Man in the World, to find his blasted hopes now beginning to spring again.

Donna Olivia perceiving it, to confirm his Satisfaction, continued her Discourse to him thus: I know *Signior Don Valerio*, you will be astonished in your self, how this Letter should fall into my Hands, it is my self only can unriddle it. Being in Love, as you are, you know that that little Divinity is the Author of many Disguises and Transformations, as you are taught by *Ovid* in his *Metamorphosis*, and consequently you doubt not, but that I, Loving an Unconstant Person, who had had such precious Pledges of my Affection, should leave nothing unattempted to recover my Honour, and oblige him to the Satisfaction of what he owes me. I am come to this Court, with a Design, being what I am, to get into the Service of *Donna Catharina*, and have effected it. For though you see me in this House, (which was taken upon my account) I live in hers, waiting on her in the Quality of a *Daemna*, a part I have assum'd, the better to elude *Don Antonio*, and to do all
lay

lay in my Power to put him out of my Mistress's Favour; and I have also brought that so far about, that I am Confident there will never be any Marriage between them, and she is wholly inclined to Favour you. Now consider with your self what you would have me to say to your Mistress, for I am just going to put on my Widow's Habit, and I must return presently, and am afraid she will think I have stayed too long. If you will return her an answer, you have here all things requisite to do it. I think it necessary you should, that *Donna Catharina* may see, I have punctually obey'd her Commands. As to the secret of my Disguise, I pray keep it such, for it concerns me, that it should not be discovered a while. I rely on your Discretion, and, knowing you to be a Person of Honour and Worth, I presume you will not discover it.

This Discourse very much surpris'd *Dan Valerio*, who took Occasion to commend her Courage and Generosity, and return'd her his most humble thanks, for the Favour she had done him, in entrusting him with the secret of her Love, and prayed Heaven to give him Life to acknowledge and requite so great an Obligation. He promised her not to discover any thing till she commanded him to do it; and thereupon, seeing her in haste
to

to be gone, he writ a Letter in answer to what he had received from his Mistress, full of Amorous Complements, and Protestations of Fidelity to the last gasp. While he was Writing *Donna Catharina* put on her Widow's Habit, and made all the hast she could to *Don Alonzo's*.

In the mean time *Don Antonio*, extreemly resenting the Impostour put upon him, acquainted his Cousin, *Don Martinio* with it, whereupon they went both together to *Don Alonzo's*. He not being within, they asked for *Donna Catharina*, who came out without any Ceremony to receive their Visit, that it might be the shorter; for she had no great mind to see *Don Antonio*. The poor Gentleman endeavour'd to vindicate himself, swearing a thousand Oaths, that he never heard of any Lady in *Sevil*, of the name mention'd in the Letter, and that no doubt some envious Person had put this trick upon him; and that if *Don Alonzo* should upon enquiry find it to be true, he would be content to loose his Honour and Life, nay more, the hopes of ever enjoying her.

The earnestness of his Discourse put *Donna Catharina* into some doubt, that what she had heard was some Impostour advanced purposefully to obstruct his Pretentions, and referred it to her Father to make a full discovery thereof.

of. Her answer to them was, that she was not at her own disposal, that it was her duty, to comply with that of her Father, and consequently, she could not quit the Ill-impression she had receiv'd of *Don Antonio*, till she were better inform'd of the truth; that her Father would come in ere long, and she could take no resolution without his Orders, in a business of so great importance.

While they were engag'd in this discourse, *Don Alonzo* comes in from the visit he had made to *Donna Olivia*. *Don Martinio* made him a short relation of what had happen'd, and renew'd to him the just complaint which his Cousin had reason to make of the Crime laid to his charge. Whereupon both desiring him to hold his hand, at least till there were an Exact enquiry made into the business, he desir'd them to sit down, and gave them this Answer.

Gentlemen, I went out in hopes to be inform'd by some Friends of *Sevil*, now here, whether that which is imputed to *Don Antonio* were true, and I could not meet with them; but if I had found them, it's possible they might know nothing of the business, for *Sevil* is a great City, and some parts of it lye at such a distance from others, that they may well be accounted different places. What I found most certain is, that *Don Anto-*

nio

nio, hath made a promise of Marriage to a Lady of *Toledo*, who entertain'd him at a Country-House of her's; after he had been Robb'd by certain Thieves; and what is yet more to be consider'd, she thought it not much to secure his affection by the forfeiture of her Honor. I have it from the Lady her self, who sent for me, and shew'd me the promise under his Hand, which since we all know, there can be no evasion.

He thereupon shew'd it both the Cousins, who were both at such a loss that they knew not what to say, especially *Don Antonio*, who sufficiently betray'd his guilt by his astonishment, but swore withal that he had not made that promise under his own Name, but under a feigned. But *Don Martinio* knowing all the Circumstance of the business, was most Liberal of his reproaches to his Cousin, which raising a certain compassion in *Don Alonso*, forc'd this Discourse from him.

Signior Don Antonio, we find by many Experiences, that a young man, once fallen in Love, will do any thing to obtain his desires; that Love should overcome you, I wonder not at all; but what occasions my astonishment is, that you should have the confidence to Address your self to a Person of the Quality, this Lady is of, and dishonour her, without ever considering, that, in time, she might

acquaint her Friends therewith, who would be sure to revenge the affront ; and what adds to this astonishment, is, that you durst do such an Action when you were coming hither purposely in order to your matching with my Daughter, for whom, if any credit may be given to your Letters, you pretended to have a passionate affection. I see not how your Heart could be capable of such a Competition of Passions, that you should pretend the greatest inclinations imaginable for one, and treat of a Marriage with another ; being a Person of Honor, I doubt not but you will make it appear in your Actions, and that is, that you stand to the Promise you made to the Lady *Olivia*, though it were only out of this Consideration, that it argues a more Generous Nature to do that willingly, which must otherwise unwillingly be done. The Lady is not so destitute of Friends, as you perhaps imagin ; she is now at *Madrid*, come expressly to recover her debt, which no doubt she will ; and her cause being so just, 'tis not likely she will want Assistance. My Advice is, that you endeavour to prevent the ill reports which the business must raise of you ; perform what you have promis'd, and let not your Love to my Daughter blind you any further, for I am resolv'd to shut her up in a Cloyster, for the remainder of her

her Life, rather than she shall ever be your Wife.

With that he rose up, and, without any Complements, went into another Room. *Donna Catharina* follow'd him, and the two Cousins, without so much as a word exchanged, went home, where *Don Martinio* fell into bitter expostulations with his Cousin, for his engaging himself in so unworthy an Action. *Don Antonio* had nothing to reply, but that he was astonish'd how that promise came to be sign'd with his own Name, having made it only out of a supposititious.

Leaving them in that Confusion, making several Reflections on the Adventure, let us return to the feign'd Waiting-woman, who was got back to *Don Alonzo's*, and had deliver'd *Don Valerio's* Letter to *Donna Catharina*. She was infinitely satisfy'd with it, as fearing he would not have been so easily retriv'd into her Service. *Donna Catharina* acquainted her, how that *Don Antonio* and his Cousin had been there; what had pass'd between them and her Father; and that he had absolutely dismiss'd them, it being discover'd, that *Don Antonio* had committed another impertinence, and had made a promise of Marriage to a Lady of Toledo, who was come express to Madrid, to obstruct his pretensions to her. *Donna Olivia* pretended the greatest astonishment

ment in the World, and burst forth into imprecations against *Don Antonio*.

In the mean time there came a Message to *Donna Catharina* from a She-Cousin of hers, inviting her to a Comedy which was to be represented at her House, that Night, where-
to she sent Answer, that she would come ;
Donna Olivia having made so successful a progress in her business, bethought her self of an invention that should bring it to an absolute Period, for she had the Management of all. She told *Donna Catharina*, that if she pleas'd to wave her going to the Comedy she might have a meeting that Night with *Don Valerio* in a secure place, to wit at her Father's House where she might do what she pleas'd her self ; the Lady had a great kindness for *Don Valerio*, and was desirous to prevent the reproaches he might make upon her former discarding of him, and so she accepted the proffer made by her Woman. She immediately sent for *Granatus*, and gave him a Letter for *Don Valerio*, whereby he was desired to come that Night at Eight to *Donna Olivia's* House. He was sent with another to *Don Antonio de Mendoza* acquainting him that *Donna Catharina*, notwithstanding the Indignation of her Father, and what she her self had said, was resolv'd secretly to Marry him, and desir'd to meet him that Night, at a house, whither the

Bearer would bring him, and that he should not fail to be there at Nine. The two Cavaliers kindly receiv'd their Letters, especially *Don Antonio*, who being but a little before dismiss'd, was recall'd to joyn Hands with *Donna Catharina*, and imagin'd it done by the intercession of the Waiting-Gentlewoman, to whom he thought himself infinitely oblig'd, and the present he had made her well bestow'd; the two Gallants fail'd not to be there at the time appointed, and in the mean *Donna Catharina* and her Woman took Coach, leaving *Don Alonzo* at home, ready to go to Bed; they went to *Donna Olivia's* House, which seem'd to be that of *Granatus*, where they were receiv'd by *Flora*, *Olivia's* Maid, who went under the name of her Step-mother; while *Donna Catharina* was expecting the Arrival of *Don Valerio*, she sent *Dilario* with a Letter to *Don Alonzo* containing these words.

To *Don Alonzo de Castiza*.

SIR,

M^T Lady *Donna Catharina*, instead of going to see the Comedy, whereto she had been invited, is come to my Father's House, with a Resolution to be secretly Married to *Don Antonio*, notwithstanding your prohibition to the contrary, I conceiv'd it my duty to give you notice

tice thereof, it is your Work to take what course you think fit to prevent it: for my part I have done what lay in me, and I shall not need to fear any reproach from you, since I have sent you timely Notice of her intentions.

Donna Artimiza.

Granatus was dispatch'd away with this Letter, and order'd not to deliver it till half an hour after Nine, which he did. In the mean time *Don Valerio* fail'd not to come, precisely at his time, and was directed to his Mistress, who gave him such satisfaction as silenc'd all his Complaints. *Olivia* left them together in a Room, where she lock'd them in; not long after came *Don Antonio*, according to the time appointed him, and was receiv'd by *Olivia*, who dispos'd him into a Room, without light, alledging it concern'd him, that he were not seen; that he should forbear making any Noise, and that it would not be long ere his Mistress came to him, he promis'd to obey her in all things, and staid there so long as that *Olivia* might shift her self into Cloths suitable to her quality, that done, she went into the Room, and speaking very low, it was no hard matter for her to deceive *Don Antonio*, and to make him believe he was very much in his Mistress's Favour.

K k 2

Leaving

Leaving these young People thus match'd, let us return to *Don Alonzo*, who receiv'd the Letter from the *Duenna* just as he was getting into Bed; the Old Gentleman was extremely surpriz'd thereat, and going out of doors, attended by *Dilario*, he went to the Commissary's House, which was hard by; the afflicted man acquainted him what posture things were in; whereupon the Commissary taking some of his People about him, they went to *Dilario's* house, where, after some knocking, they were let in; they had luckily a Lanthorn with them, and it did them good Service, for they found the House without any Light, they lighted a Torch, and went into several Rooms, in one whereof finding *Don Valerio* and *Donna Catharina*, the Commissary ask'd them, what they did there? *Don Valerio* told him he was there with his Wife, which was confirm'd by *Donna Catharina*. *Don Alonzo* would have run him through; but the Commissary telling him she was not with the Person he imagin'd, that that Gentleman was *Don Valerio de Merdea*, a Person of great Quality and well known about the Court, *Don Alonzo* could do no less than approve of their Marriage, though 'twere only out of a satisfaction, that she was not fallen into the hands of *Don Antonio*, whom he hated extremely, for the strange Pranks he had plaid.

They

They went thence unto another Room, which they found lock'd, and thereupon threatning to break open the Door. *Don Antonio* open'd it within, and comes out telling them that he was there with *Donna Catharina* his Wife, and that it was with her Consent, he was come into that House to Marry her. Upon that discourse *Donna Olivia* came out of the Room and said to him, you are deceiv'd, sweet Seignior *Don Antonio*, I am not the Woman you think me, but *Donna Olivia de Priolo*, who expects from you the Reparation of her Honour; the recovery whereof oblig'd me to enter into the Service of *Donna Catharina*, serving her in the Quality of a Waiting-woman. *Don Alonzo de Castiza* looking on her a little more attentively than he had done, knew her, as also did the fair Lady *Donna Catharina*; both of them reflecting on the disguises she had run through to retrieve her Honour, very seriously commended her Courage and Contrivances, and as much blam'd *Don Antonio*, who finding himself Convinc'd, and Condemn'd of all, ratified once more the promise he had made her. *Don Valerio* and his Mistress were censur'd one to the other, and the solemnity of their Marriage order'd to be Eight days after; they prov'd both very happy in their Wives, of whom they had many Children,

who were the Comfort and Felicity of their Parents ; but particularly for *Don Antonio*, when he reflected on the strange Adventures whereby *Donna Olivia*, engag'd him to his Duty, he look'd on all as so many Extraordinary Demonstrations of her Affection, towards him, which occasion'd his to be Multipli'd towards her, besides the kindness he had for her upon the Account of her Ingenuity ; for Wit in a Woman is a great inflamer of Love, especially that Woman's Wit which is ever best at a dead life.

THE

THE

Amorous Miser :

A

NOVEL.

AT Sevil in Spain, a Lady, being young, and having lately buried her Husband; resolv'd to remove into another quarter of the City: and being sumptuous in Cloths, and perfectly handsome, did not as many other Widows are wont to do, who, as soon as their Husbands are march'd off, dress themselves as fine as Hands can make them, and deriving a little advantage from their Mourning seek out opportunity to shew themselves to the Gallants purely out of a Design to get other Husbands. But ours, though young, had had so great Experience, that she resolv'd to play a game and that no small one.

x k +

There

There was come into the Fleet from *Peru*, a Man Born amidst the Mountains of *Leon*, who had begun his Fortune by the Relation of a Servant to a Merchant of *Sevil*, and one who, upon his Master's Cost, and some little Trading into the *Indies* was grown Rich, in-
somuch that in few Years, he was accounted one of the ablest Merchants that traded to *Peru*. He makes another Voyage thither, being advanced to a certain publick Employment, and having thereby added much to his Wealth, he was return'd again to *Sevil*, in that years Fleet, where he sold the Commodities he had brought over at double what they had cost him; so fortunate was he in all his Ventures.

Mercator (so was this lucky Merchant called) was a Person of about fifty years of Age; the most Covetous and wretchedst natured Fellow that ever was. He grudged himself what he eat and drunk, though even below Moderation; nay he many times fasted purposely to spare so much. He had no more Servants than he needed; his whole Train consisted in a Factor, a Lacquey, a *Moore-Slave*, who looked to his Mule, and a Maid to dress his pitiful Commons. He kept his Family so short in point of Victuals, that it was wondred any one would serve him; his Miserly Disposition found the whole City Dis-

Discourse; another would have been ashamed of it, but he only laugh'd at it, applauding himself, and making it his whole Business to heap up Wealth, whereof he had abundance.

Corrina (so was this Designess call'd) hearing this account of him, began to consider, and weigh all the Circumstances, and after she had a little reflected thereon, she concluded, that he might be made an excellent Cully, whom if she could smite, as she expected, her Condition would be better than ever it had been. *Mercator* liv'd without the City, in a little Tenement he had purchased of one who owed him some Money, which he knew not well how to get in otherwise; for he was naturally so perfect a Slave to his Profit, that he little minded his Pleasures. So that he got that Tenement, with a neat House on it, very cheap, and in Satisfaction for his debt; it stood near *St. Bernard's* Monastery, in the middle of a pleasant Valley. He liv'd there to spare the Rent of a House in the City; he had so fortified it, that no Thieves, either by Day or Night, could make any breach into it; all the Doors were of extraordinary thickness, the Windows had Bars and Grates, the Walls very high and very strong. He had secured the place within with many Fire-Arms, which he always kept Charged, and many

many Halbards and Partisans which were disposed of near the Gate. He was forc'd to take one Person more into his Retinue, to wit, a Fellow to order his Garden, and to make the best Advantage he could of it, a married Man, who should carry the Fruits and other things to the Market to make the best of them, so vigilant was his Avarice. His Treasure was disposed into a secret place behind his Bed where he lay himself, in strong Iron Chests, and every Night before he went to Bed, he, like an over-doing Constable, searched all the Rooms in the House. Thus did this wretch'd Fellow live, though he had no Children to succeed him, for he had never been married, nor intended to be, though very Advantageous Matches were dayly proffered him.

Carrina had laid her Design to bring in this Covetous Merchant into the Noose, and to effect it, she communicated it to a Person who was excellent at such things; this Man had played some pranks at *Madrid*, which had occasioned his Removal thence to *Cadiz*, and his Achievements there, his departure thence to *Sevil*, where he went lurking up and down, and spending some Money, which it cost him more hazard than pains to get. He was one of the most Accomplished Men in point of Thievery of his time, but very fearful

ful of falling into the hands of Justice, lest there might rise up in Judgment against him some of his former Offences; which were such as had preferred him to the Gallies. This Person (whose Name was *Vasquez*,) *Corrina* took to assist her in the compassing her Design. Having given him Instructions what he was to do, and told him, that *Mercator* return'd not to his House, till about Sun-set, as he was wont to do, they both passed by *Mercator's* Garden, he on a Mule, and she on a good Horse. She had put off her Mourning, and put on another Dress, with a Hat and Feather, as the *Sevil* Ladies are wont to go, when they are in the Country.

They passed by the Garden, just as the Gardener was opening the Door. *Vasquez*, coming up to him, Friend, said he, here is a Lady would not willingly go into the City to day. If you will afford her entertainment this Night, I will satisfy you to your own Desires; besides that you will do us an extraordinary Kindness, for you will thereby prevent a great Misfortune, which she cannot otherwise avoid. The Gardener, who was afraid of his Masters Displeasure, told him that he durst not be so bold, as to receive any Person into his House, without his Knowledge, though he had not expressly forbid him the doing of any such thing. But
Vas-

Vasquez, who knew the Vertue and Power of many, took a considerable Summ out of his Pocket, and giving it to the Gardener, here, Friend, (said he) take this in earnest of more. The Gardener's Wife longing to know what Business they might have with her Husband, comes up to them, and seeing the proffers were made him, undertook to lodge the Gentlewoman in her own Room, making it appear to her Husband, that their Master should never come to the Knowledge of it, in regard their Houses were at a good distance one from the other, and that they should not be so unhappy, being certain, that that Night he would not search the whole House, as many times a toy took him in the Head to do,

In short the Wifes Arguments prevailed, so that the Gardener was content the Gentlewoman should Lodge secretly that Night at his House, upon the receipt of six Royals which *Vasquez* gave him as an earnest of a greater Summ promised him. He thereupon took *Corrina* off the Horse, and brought her into the Garden, where she took leave of *Vasquez*, who had already received the Orders whereof we shall give an account hereafter.

Being

Being come into the Gardener's Room, she took off what cover'd her Face, and astonish'd the Gardener and his Wife at the sight of her Beauty, though she seem'd to be very Melancholy, as if some great Misfortune had happened to her, to wit, that which she had ready to relate to *Mercator*, in Case she might come to Discourse with him. The Sun was hardly set, but he came into the Garden: The *Negro* entring a little before to have the Door opened, which he himself locked on the inside, and carried the Key along with him. He chanced to be that Night a little more weary than ordinary, which occasioned his going to Bed very betimes, after he had eaten a piece of Bread, and some of his own Garden-Fruits, and wash'd them down with a Glas of Spring-Water. He only visited that part of the House where he lodg'd himself, and came not down to the Gardeners, which never escap'd his privy-search, when he thought of. His Family, who kept more Fasting-days in the Year than the Church her self had appointed, Supp'd that Night, in Imitation of the Master very soberly.

Mercator gets up the next Morning betimes, and gives the Slave Money, to go to the Market, while, he went about his Affairs in the City, with order to have Dinner ready
against

against his return. *Corrina* was at a loss how to compass her Design, finding things fell not out according to her Expectation: But still waiting the opportunity, she told her Entertainers that she was extreamly troubled at her Uncle's stay (so she call'd *Vasquez*) and that all her sadness proceeded thence. The Gardener's Wife, who was a good hearty Woman, found her all the Diversion she could.

Mercator comes home at Noon, with an Intention to Dine in his Garden, and before he sat down, he would needs take a turn about it, to see if any thing were wanting; and he observed that there wanted some pieces of Wood for the more convenient watering of the several knots. As he was going to the Gardeners to see if he had any fit for that purpose, the Wife perceiving him coming, very hastily shuffled *Corrina* into a little back Room, where she was wont to lie: But in regard it could not be done so suddenly, but that *Mercator* coming in might hear the rustling of the Silks, and see *Corrina's* shadow, he steps into the Room where she was retired, and having found her, he led her out by the Hand and bringing her out to the Light, he found her so Beautiful, that he was astonished thereat. The Gardener's Wife wondred, that her Master, instead of chiding her, as she expected, only asked her

her who the Lady was; she answer'd, that the Night before, passing by their door with an Ancient Gentleman, who seem'd as sad as her self, they had very earnestly intreated she might be lodged there but that Night, to avoid a great Misfortune, which would have happen'd to them, if they had gone any further.

While the Gardener's Wife was giving *Mercator* this account, he very attentively consider'd the strange Lady, who seem'd to be extremely troubled in mind, which added to the attractions of her Beauty. *Mercator* was so taken with her, that discharging his unsociable and Covetous Humor, he told the Gardener's Wife that she had done very well, in entertaining that Lady, though contrary to his Orders, which in such a Case were not to be observed, where Compassion and Charity plead for the relief of those that are in Trouble. This Lady, (said he) deserves a better reception than she hath found in your poor Lodgings, I heartily proffer her my House, if she will but honour it with her presence. *Corrina* thank'd him very civilly for his obliging proffers, and entreated him to allow her the privacy of some other Lodging, for the little time she had to stay there, in regard she expected an Uncle of hers to come and fetch her away that Night.

Mer-

Mercator, who began to be inflam'd, was sorry to hear that her stay at his House would be so short, but after a little pause, he told her, that though it were but for an hour, she would infinitely oblige him, in the acceptance of the proffer he made her with so much Affection. She, who expected that lue all the while, told him, that, to make some return to so great Civilities, she was ready to wait on him : with that she went to *Mercator's* Apartment, whither he led her by the Hand, to the great satisfaction of the Gardener's Wife, who extremely wondred to see her Master, contrary to his Custom, of a Civil and Obliging Humor ; as she pass'd through the Rooms, she took particular notice of all things ; for though *Mercator*, were Naturally a very covetous Person ; yet, as to the Furniture of his House, he was otherwise, he had very rich Tapstry, Chairs suitable thereto, and Cabinets of Ivory, and Ebony ; nay indeed many things brought out of the *Indies*, which though they cost him not much there, are here of very great price, he immediately commanded his Slave to prepare an excellent Dinner, an Employment he undertook with great alacrity, as knowing he might reap some advantage of that extraordinary Liberality of his Master. *Corrina* din'd with him, who treated her still with the

the best the Table afforded, with importunate Excuses that there were no better for her.

As soon as they had din'd, he conducted her into a Chamber, set forth with a great number of curious Pictures, and also a sumptuous Bed of *China-Work*, where he entreated her to repose her self on it, a Custom the *Spaniards* have in Summer, as soon as they have dined, by reason of the Sultriness of the Country. He entreated her also to give her disquiet some Remission, out of an Assurance; that she should be as safe in his House as in any Sanctuary, and that she should not want any thing which lay in his Power. She again return'd him her most affectionate thanks, and complying with his Desires, she staid alone in the Room, which was the same where *Mercator* took his repose every day. He went into another, where he laid himself down, much troubled and disquieted, as being fallen deeply in Love with his fair Guest, and not knowing by what means he might induce her to favour him in what he desired of her, which if he could effect, he concluded himself the happiest Man in the World. Before he acquainted her with his Design, he was Desirous to know the Cause, and what might occasion her stopping at his Garden, and thereby find whether there were any

L I Obstructi-

Obstruction that might oppose his Desires to serve her. To be satisfied in this, it was requisite he staid till she awoke; but she slept not at all, for she spent the time in considering, what answer she should make him, when he came to question her.

Mercator thinking it now high time to speak to her, in order to the Satisfaction of his Curiosity, goes into her Chamber, telling her it was a close day, and that he was afraid she might over-sleep her self, and craving her Pardon that he had taken the Boldness to give her that Caution. She thanked him for the Tenderness he had for her Health, and assured him, that she had not refreshed herself at all, the trouble she was in not permitting her to take any rest. He begg'd of her that she would no longer smother the Cause of her Disquiet, and renewed the proffers he had made to serve her to the utmost of his Power. Having return'd him her thanks, and thinking it now time to make some Progress in her Design, she gave him this Relation of her Adventures.

Granada, one of the most Famous and Eminent Cities of *Spain*, is the place of my Birth; my Parents (there's no Necessity I should Name them) are of the most Ancient and most Noble Families of any in all the Mountains of old *Castell*, and the whole Issue

of their Matrimony was only a Brother of mine and my self. My Brother spent the Youthful part of his Age in Courting Ladies, and, among other young Persons like himself, he plaid some mad pranks of Youth; which obliged him, for fear of falling into the Hands of Justice, to absent himself from *Granada*; and for my part, I made it my only Business to serve and humour those who had brought me into the World. I spent whole days at my Needle, not taking Example from my Companions, who only minded their Divertisements; nay, I was so Ignorant what love meant, that I laughed at what ever related thereto, and thought those, who spent their time in Courtships and entertaining those they call'd their Gallants, little better than so many distracted Persons.

But love it seems would punish this contempt of mine, and you shall see how he did it. My Father and Mother being one day gone to visit a Friend of theirs in the Country, who had buried his Wife not long before, I heard in the Street the clashing of Swords, as if some People had been fighting; and looked out at the Window to see what might be the matter. I had never been guilty of such a Curiosity before, and had it been Heaven's Pleasure I might have shunned it then, I should not now be telling you my

Misfortunes, which are such, that I shall never think on them without Tears. I there saw, to my sorrow, three Men with their Swords drawn, fighting against one, who defended himself with so great Courage, that he not only made his party good along time against so many Enemies, but also hurt two of them in the Head, he himself having received only a slight Wound. These three Hectors finding themselves so worsted by one Person, resolved to do their utmost to take away his Life; so that exasperated by their Wounds, they pressed upon him so much, that he was forc'd to retreat within our Gates where they gave him two several thrusts into the Breast, upon which he fell, and was left for dead. Moved with Compassion to see so proper a young Man so disadvantageously engaged, I came down to the Gate, calling my Maids about me, to see what might be done for him. (Our House being in a lone Street) for those who were come upon the noise we made, were so few, and those unarmed, that they were not able to part them. We locked the Doors and brought him in, and a Chirurgeon was immediately sent for. His Wounds were so great, that we thought fit to dispose him into a Bed, in a Ground-Room, where my Brother was wont to lie.

The young Man hanked me very civilly for the Favour he received from me ; but alas! that good Office began with Compassion, but ended in Love. The Chirurgeon viewed his Wounds, but could not presently give any certain Judgment of them, though he whispered me in the Ear, that he thought they might cost him his Life. That account of him struck me to the Heart, for having seen him fight so gallantly, I must needs acknowledge, that I had even then conceived an Inclination for him. But his kind Expression afterwards, and his thanking me so gently for the Obligations he said I had put upon him, raised it into a perfect Love. My Father and Mother returned from their visit, and, ere they were got to our House, were told by one of the Neighbours, a Person of some Quality, what had happened in their Absence, and how that I had put a period to a Quarrel, by entertaining the wounded Party into their House, out of Compassion and a Fear that he might be killed ; whereat they were well satisfied, and commended the Charitable Office I had done in such an Extremity ; for they were Persons who gladly embraced any opportunity to Exercise their Charity. They visited the wounded, encouraged him to take Heart, assuring him he should want nothing, their House could afford,

ford, and acknowledg'd it well done by me, that I had so rescued him; upon which I took Occasion to spend most of my time in waiting on him; him, I say, who is the Cause of all the Troubles and Afflictions which lie so heavy upon me. At the second dressing, the Chirurgion assur'd us that his Wounds were not Mortal; which caused much Joy in our House, particularly to me, who became every day more and more passionately in Love with him. As often as I could get out of my Father and Mother's sight, I went to pass away the time in his Chamber, for which Kindness he made me extraordinary Acknowledgements.

This young Cavalier was Born at *Barcelona*, and one of the most Eminent in that City. His Business at *Granada* was to prosecute a Law-Suit, against a very powerful Person, who finding but little Justice of his side, that the Cause was of great Importance, and that notwithstanding the Favour he had in Court, the Judges must pass Sentence against him, and would put a period to the Suit by a short-cut, and rid himself of his Adversary, by Employing three Men to Murder him, who were his own menial Servants. A Month slipped away, ere *Galphorus* (so was the wounded Person named) got out of his Bed having all that time been attended with as

much

much Care as might be. The second day after his getting up, he had the opportunity to see me, for my Mother was gone abroad upon a visit, wherein I accompanied her not, because I had a greater mind to be alone with my young Gallant. He discovered himself to me so opportunely, and gave me such sensible Assurances of his Affection that it raised a no less, in me towards him, insomuch that there past mutual Promises of Fidelity between us. I knew nothing all this time that my Father was upon a treaty of Marriage between me and a Gentleman of *Granada*, who was infinitely Desirous to enter into our Alliance, while I was very well satisfied, with the choice I had made my self. *Calphorns*, coming to hear of the other's Pretensions to me, was not a little troubled at it; but the only remedy was Patience, in regard he would make no Discovery of his Estate, till his Law Suit were ended, which he hoped would be in a short time, and I in the mean time kept my Father in play with Perswasions, that he would not be over-hasty in concluding my Marriage with the *Granadine*.

Calphorns, being perfectly cured, and requiting the Kindness and Noble Entertainment he had receiv'd at our House, with many considerable presents, returned to his own quarters, to bring his Business to a final end.

For my part, my Troubles increased more and more upon me; for my Father, never giving me any notice of it, as if I had been a Person not at all concern'd, concluded the Contract with the *Granadine*, and passed his Word he should have me; which when I came to understand, I was so surpriz'd, that I minded not what I did. This new Servant of mine, who expected ere long to be my Master came to give me a visit: But I soon satisfied him, that he had reckoned without his Hostess, for whereas he had flattered himself into a foolish Imagination that he should have found the kindest Reception in the World from me, he met with such a Repulse, as he himself concluded, must rather proceed from the Aversion, then any Indifference I had for him. In a word, being not one of Fortunes Favourites, who promise themselves the Attainment of things impossible, he easily discovered, that my Refusal was the effect of some other Cause, than the Modesty, which a young Maid ought at least to pretend, upon such Occasions: and knowing withal that the wounded *Calphurnus* had lodged sometime in our House, he presum'd, that my disdain towards him was occasion'd by the Love I had for the other, and thence inferred, that having not been so happy as to prevent him in the Acquisition of my Favour, he had, at best,

but

but a hazardous after-game to recover it. The Jealousie he conceived upon this Presumption, oblig'd him to make tryal of all the ways he could imagine, to be assured of it, so as that he might not do any thing, that should cause him afterwards to repent of.

I was in an extraordinary Confusion during these overtures; I acquainted *Calphorus* with my Condition; he came to see me that very Night, and we agreed, the next, to leave my Father's House, and to go to some of his Relations, where we might be secretly Married. The expected hour being come (unhappy hour to me, considering the Misfortunes I have run through since!) as my Dearest and I were going out of the House and crossing into another Street, my Jealous Servant (who spent the Nights to be assured of his Suspicion, which he now found to be too true) presently knew us, and, attended by two Servants, he set upon *Calphorus*, who never thought of any such surprize; so that ere he had the time to draw his Sword, he received three Mortal Wounds, and fell down dead, without uttering one Word. The little noise which the Murtherers had made, occasion'd the Neighbours to come out with Lights, upon the appearance whereof they ran away, fearing they might be discovered.

By

By this time there was a great uproar at my Father's, that I could not be found, while I was in a manner dead, to see my Dearest lying Breathless at my Feet. Having recovered my self, I considered it was to little Purpose for me to stay in the Street, after such an Accident, so that gathering up my Cloths, I hasted away as fast as I could, to a Friend's House of my Father's, an aged Person and very Poor, to whom I told what had happened to me, and how much it concern'd me not to stay any longer at *Granada*. Whereupon taking a Horse, he set me on him, and brought me to the next Village, where we took up another for him, and thence we are come hither, to avoid my Father, who accompanied by Officers, makes a search after me, as I have understood by the way. For that Reason I thought it not safe, that we should go into *Sevil* as soon as we came hither, but that it was better I concealed my self in some place near it. It was the Pleasure of Fortune to direct me to this Habitation of yours, into which, upon extraordinary intreaties your Gardener ventur'd to receive me for this last Night.

Thus Sir, have you the story of a wretched Maid, (if there were ever any such) whose only Comfort now is in the good Entertainment you are pleased to afford her. May
Heaven

Heaven requite your Charity, since there cannot be a greater than to relieve such as are afflicted and persecuted to that extremity as I am.

The Conclusion of this dismal story, which *Corrina* had had the time to invent and study so well, was a shower of Crocodile-Tears, which raised such a Compassion in *Mercator*, that he could not forbear them himself. The cunning Gipsie, who notwithstanding her Counterfeit-Tears, observed all the Actions of *Mercator*, perceived that he gave Credit to her feign'd story, and that love began to enter at that breach which Compassion had made in his Heart. This encouraged *Corrina* to prosecute her Impostour, being now in a manner Confident to bring it to some effect. They continued a good while together, she weeping as if she had done it for a Wager, and he endeavouring all that he could do to Comfort her: but that Comfort came not up to the height of offering her the Remedy she could have wished, for he had not yet overcome his Covetous Humor.

Having with great Attention considered the great Beauty of *Corrina*, her Affliction, and strange Adventures, and that his Happiness was as it were fallen into his Mouth, he inferred that Heaven, as a signal Addition to his former Happiness, had directed her to his House.

House. This was the first Love that had ever moved *Mercator's* Heart, and, in all sorts of Persons that first Passion ever acts violently. Is *Mercator* fallen in Love? He must needs then be Liberal. Hath he entertained *Corrina* into his House? That Kindness will be the dearest to him that ever he expressed. O Love! O insinuating Passion, who dost bewitch the World, who dost ruin and beset Men! what Metamorphoses in them dost thou not Operate? What Dispositions dost thou not change? What Resolutions dost thou not dispence with? What Felicities dost thou not disturb? And what Hearts is it not in thy power to soften? That of this insatiable Miser, which had cast off all sense of Humanity towards his nearest Relations, Love hath changed; so that he hath transform'd a Covetous and Sordid Person into a Liberal and Magnificent. He is extreemly taken with *Corrina*; he is passionately in Love with her; she will ere long be Mistress of his Heart and Wealth. She said many things in her Relation, which might have betrayed her, had not the Affection, wherewith *Mercator* hearkened to her, closed both his Eyes and Ears: Nay, he was so prepossessed with his Passion that he would have believed many other things from her, though they had been more improbable than they were.

The

The effect of this sad Narration of *Corrina*, was, that *Mercator* proffer'd her all the Favour and Assistance she could expect from him, his Estate, Life, Heart and Soul, giving her the Title of Absolute Mistress of all he was possess'd of, further entreating her, of all Love to give over thinking of her Misfortunes, and assure her self that she was in a House where she might command, and that whatever she desir'd, her orders should be obey'd, as far as it lay in his Power; *Corrina* very kindly thank'd him for so many generous proffers, concluding her Complement with a fresh shower of Tears, a kind of Tempest she could raise, when-ever she either pleas'd, or had occasion.

With this Artifice, she became Mistress of *Mercator*, and all he had, so as that she might dispose of him and it, as she pleas'd; her Beauty had given him a kind of Itch, and he was mighty desirous to try whether she would be as willing to Cure him of it; but he knew not well how to acquaint her with his indisposition; he resolv'd at last, in case he could do no good upon her by his submissions and presents, to use the last Remedy, which was to Marry her. This is a bait that many times takes the shiest of that deluded Sex; but when they are so taken, he that does it is commonly snapp'd himself; for *Corrina*

rina had no other design than to examine the Chests of the greedy Merchant, and that she would not be any way engag'd till she were secure of her prize; for she had heard that many of her calling had been shown slippery Tricks, which made her extremely Distrustful.

Mercator staid all that day in his Garden, and neglected his business in the City; but the next Morning betimes, leaving his guest asleep, he takes his Mule, and goes about his Ordinary occasions, having charg'd the Gardener's Wife, to get a good Breakfast for the Lady, as soon as she were awake, and to have a care of the House; he lock'd the Chamber Door where his Money was, and as he went out, charg'd the Gardener not to suffer any to come into his Garden, but the Old man who had brought *Artemiza* thither, for that was the name the dissembling *Corrina* went by.

That done he went about his Business, attended by the little Negro, whom he gave Money to Buy Provisions for a good Dinner. *Corrina* got up and the Gardener's Wife punctually obey'd the Orders she had received from her Master, treating her the best she could, out of this respect, that all the Domesticks made their advantage of those magnificences. *Corrina* comes down into the Garden
where

where she took occasion to commend the Walks, and contrivances of it ; for the Gardener kept it in very good order, and well supply'd with Herbs, Fruits, and Flowers ; finding the Sun beginning to grow hot, she went into the House, where casually meeting with a Lute, on which *Mercator's* Factor was wont to play, she set it in Tune, and made her entertainment, till such time as *Mercator* return'd from the City, who hearing her at it, was not a little glad to find that perfection in her more than he knew before ; perceiving that *Mercator* hearkned to her Musick, she joyned her Voice to the Instrument, to breed one Maggot more in his Brain than he had already ; and so Sung these following Stanza's.

*While on those lovely looks I gaze,
To see a Wretch pursuing ;
In Raptures of a blest amaze,
And pleasing Happy ruin.*

*'Tis not for pity that I move,
His Fate is too aspering ;
Whose Heart, broke with a Load of Love,
Dyes, Wishing and Admiring.*

*But if this Murder you'd forego,
Your Slave from Death removing ;
Let*

*Let me your Art of Charming know,
Or learn you mine of Loving.*

*But whether Life or Death betide,
In Love, 'tis equal Measure;
The Victor Lives with empty Pride,
The Vanquish'd dye with Pleasure.*

She Sung so excellently, that *Mercator* was ravish'd at the Melody, and acknowledg'd that it was not a voice of a Mortal Creature, but an Angel come down from Heaven; he continu'd his attention a while, imagining she would have begun another Song; but perceiving she laid by the Lute, he comes into the Room, and, transported with joy, how hath this poor Habitation been felicitify'd, (said he to her) by your retirement into it, most adorable *Artemiza*? What happiness did the Hour of your Arrival here, bring me, who never had known any before? What Honor have I received in beholding your transcendent Beauty, and to obscure in you from time to time, a thousand unknown excellencies; which are not discover'd at the first sight? This house may, no doubt, enter into Competition with Heaven it self, since such an Angel Honors it with her divine presence; what I say, Madam, is but little, in Comparison of the passion I have

are for your worth, which were it to be commended proportionably to the apprehension I have of it; I think the most Eloquent Persons that ever were, would be at loss for expressions suitable to so adorable a subject.

You press too hard upon me, Dear Sir, (replies the Counterfeit *Artemiza*, seeming to blush at those excessive praises) I am not such a stranger to my self, but that I know it argues excess in the highest degree to bestow such extraordinary Commendations, on a person that deserves so little; had I mistrusted your being within hearing, I would have put off my diversion to another time, since it is not unlikely my voice may seem harsh to you, compar'd to the excellent ones of this City, which you often hear, unless it be, that generous Natures have an inclination to favour Persons of mean parts, by flattering them with their praises, into an Imagination, that their Endowments are greater than indeed they are. No more Complements, I beseech you, (replies *Mercator*, rais'd up to the highest pitch of belov'd Love,) my words come short of my Faith, and I am to assure you withal, Madam, that though I have heard excellent voices in *Sevil*, (for I must confess there are some such) yet yours is infinitely beyond any of them. Your most humble Servant, Sir,

M m

says)

(says *Corrina*) your Commendations, are infinitely beyond my deserts, and the Honour you do me can do no less then raise in me a hearty wish that my poor abilities might find you some further diversion with this Instrument, since you are pleas'd to acknowledge your self so much satisfied therewith; but my troubles are so great and pressing, that in what I did, I mended only my own. I must see them at an end, ere you leave this House, (says *Mercator* to her) and therefore let me intreat you, if you cannot conclude an absolute peace with your afflictions, at least Condescend to a short cessation of Arms.

These reiterations of your Favours must need extremely oblige me, (replies *Corrina*) and consequently force me to a grateful compliance with your Commands, as far as lies in my Power, but I cannot promise it you so fully as I wish, finding the Person who brought me hither, hath forgotten he did it, otherwise he would have found some means to have given me a visit once in three days; let not that create you any trouble, (replies the Amorous Miser) but rather imagin there may be some Cause for his neglect. I have some apprehensions, (said she) that he may be return'd to *Granada*, out of a fear, that being miss'd there, he might be question'd as a Complice of my Escape; and this would prove

improve the greatest of my misfortunes, for if
 he be gone, he hath carried all I had along
 with him. Never fear it, (says *Mercator*) for
 he must have more Compassion than to for-
 sake you in so great an extremity; but
 though he and all else fail you, assure your-
 self, I shall not, whereof I cannot give you
 greater assurance, than you may derive
 from this sincere protestation, of my being so
 passionately your Servant, that I imagine not
 my self to be the same Person I was before I
 saw you; this transformation is wholly to
 be attributed to your Divinity, and thence
 you may infer the influence you have o-
 ver me.

Having so said, *Mercator* made an abso-
 lute discovery of his Love; the cunning Gip-
 sy pretending she understood not his mean-
 ing, return'd civil answers to the proffers he
 made her, acknowledging her self extreme-
 ly oblig'd to him for his kindness, and that
 she doubted not of the performance of what
 he was pleas'd, out of his own good Nature
 to promise. By this time Dinner was set on
 the Table; they both sat down, and the en-
 tertainment was very noble, suitable to the
 Love of the Founder; for where that little
 Deity comes once to reign, the first Act he
 makes, is for the banishment of all baseness
 and avarice.

Corrina and *Vasquez* had agreed together, that he should come to her, when he were sure the Old Merchant was abroad, and that he should disguise himself like a Beggar, that he might not be known, nor any suspicion be conceiv'd of him; she had studied several ways to chouse the *Miser* of some part of his Treasure, but could not fix on any one she thought might prove effectual, the Chamber where it was lock'd being extremely fortify'd; she had continu'd there 3 days ere she had either seen or heard from *Vasquez*, and during the time, she express'd so great a discontent, as put *Mercator* to much trouble, in regard it kept him from making those free discoveries of his Love, which he would otherwise have done; in the mean time *Corrina*, who watch'd all occasions, cunningly discover'd the place where the old Man hid the Keys of his Iron Chests.

Mercator went, according to his Custom, into the City, which being observ'd by *Vasquez*, he comes to his House in Beggars weeds, as they had agreed together, with two Crutches; being got under the Window, at which *Corrina* was looking out, he Begg'd an Alms of her; she threw him down something, and ask'd him whence he came, whereto *Vasquez*, answering that he was of *Granada*, she seem'd to be extremely glad, and thereupon turning

turning to the Gardener's Wife, let us go down a little into the Garden, (said she to her) this poor fellow is come out of my Country, I would fain have some discourse with him, to know what News he hath brought thence; the poor Woman suspecting nothing, made no difficulty to let him in to the Garden. *Corrina* ask'd him how long it was since he had left *Granada*, whereto he answering about nine or ten days, she continued her questions so long, that the Gardener's Wife weary of their discourse, and having something else to do, left them. Being rid of her, they consider'd what was to be put in execution the Night following, and agreed upon the course they were to take, to possess themselves of *Mercator's* Treasure.

That done, *Vasquez* departed, and *Corrina* went up to her Chamber, telling the Gardener's Wife, she had understood so much from that poor Fellow, concerning her Affairs, that it would not be long ere she return'd into her Country. The Gardener's Wife, and Maid were little pleas'd to hear that News, as fearing their Master would, upon her departure, re-assume his niggardly Humor, and keep as miserable a House as he had done before, nay perhaps put himself and all the Servants to a greater penance in

their Diet, to get up what had been squander'd away, during her aboad there.

Mercator being come home found *Corrina* that Night more cheerful than at any time before; which gave him the Confidence to acquaint her more freely with his Love than he had done, and to assure her of the disquiet he was in upon her Account. *Corrina* seem'd not to take it amiss, nay by a greater Familiarity than she had express'd towards him before, she rais'd in him some hopes of seeing his desires satisfied. Whence the Old Dotard began to presume, that the Fort would in a short time be taken, upon reasonable terms; upon this presumption, he bestow'd on her a Ring, which he had purposefully bought for her, wherein was a Diamond worth about an Hundred Crowns, set about with little Rubies; the Lady gave him many thanks for so noble a present, and in requital promis'd him a Lesson on the Lute, to which she Sung some new Aires, though she quarrell'd at the dulness of the Instrument. *Mercator* promis'd her a better the next day; they parted for that time, but with different thoughts, *Mercator* desirous to obtain those Favours he expected from *Corrina*, and to oblige her thereto by presents, which overcome the greatest difficulties; and *Corrina* contriving how to compass the Robbery she intended.

The

The next day, *Vasquez* (a Person of great experience in such designs) got some others of the same profession to carry on the Work; and having observ'd *Mercator* going into his House, they staid till he were gone to Bed, which was somewhat late; for *Corrina*, who held a Correspondence with them, had purposely kept him up. About midnight, *Vasquez* and his Comrades brought a thing that had the Figure of a Man, stuff'd with Straw, having about him a Cloak, which cast over his Shoulder, cover'd his Face, and pitch'd over against the principal Window towards the Garden, which was that part of the House where *Mercator* Lodg'd, and left it there fastened to a Stake they had thrust into the Ground. The Night was somewhat dark, and so more proper for their Design. Having plac'd that Figure, as I told you, they knock'd at the Door so loud that it might have been heard from one end of the Garden to the other. *Mercator* awaken'd thereby leaps out of his Bed, it being so strange to him to hear such knocking at his Garden Door, at such an unseasonable time, as being a thing had never happen'd to him before; he called up his Servant and bid him see who knock'd at the Door; the Servant went out between sleeping and waking to see what the matter was, calling as loud as he could, who knocks there?

their Diet, to get up what had been squander'd away, during her abroad there.

Mercator being come home found *Corrina* that Night more cheerful than at any time before; which gave him the Confidence to acquaint her more freely with his Love than he had done, and to assure her of the disquiet he was in upon her Account. *Corrina* seem'd not to take it amiss, nay by a greater Familiarity than she had express'd towards him before, she rais'd in him some hopes of seeing his desires satisfied. Whence the Old Dotard began to presume, that the Fort would in a short time be taken, upon reasonable terms; upon this presumption, he bestow'd on her a Ring, which he had purposely bought for her, wherein was a Diamond worth about an Hundred Crowns, set about with little Rubies; the Lady gave him many thanks for so noble a present, and in requital promis'd him a Lesson on the Lute, to which she Sung some new Aires, though she quarrell'd at the dulness of the Instrument. *Mercator* promis'd her a better the next day; they parted for that time, but with different thoughts, *Mercator* desirous to obtain those Favours he expected from *Corrina*, and to oblige her thereto by presents, which overcome the greatest difficulties; and *Corrina* contriving how to compass the Robbery she intended.

The

The next day, *Vasquez* (a Person of great experience in such designs) got some others of the same profession to carry on the Work; and having observ'd *Mercator* going into his House, they staid till he were gone to Bed, which was somewhat late; for *Corrina*, who held a Correspondence with them, had purposely kept him up. About midnight, *Vasquez* and his Comrades brought a thing that had the Figure of a Man, stuff'd with Straw, having about him a Cloak, which cast over his Shoulder, cover'd his Face, and pitch'd over against the principal Window towards the Garden, which was that part of the House where *Mercator* Lodg'd, and left it there fastened to a Stake they had thrust into the Ground. The Night was somewhat dark, and so more proper for their Design. Having plac'd that Figure, as I told you, they knock'd at the Door so loud that it might have been heard from one end of the Garden to the other. *Mercator* awaken'd thereby leaps out of his Bed, it being so strange to him to hear such knocking at his Garden Door, at such an unreasonable time, as being a thing had never happen'd to him before; he called up his Servant and bid him see who knock'd at the Door; the Servant went out between sleeping and waking to see what the matter was, calling as loud as he could, who knocks there?

but no Body answering, and he not minding the Figure that stood in the Garden, told his Master that there was not any body.

Mercator upon that got into Bed again and compos'd himself to rest, but it was soon Interrupted, for *Vasquez* knock'd more violently then he had done before, which astonish'd him the more, and oblig'd him to send down his Man a second time, to see what the matter was. Bringing his Master the same Account he had done before, he got up himself, puts his Cloak about him, and calls at the Window, Who knocks at my Door thus unseasonably? Where to no answer being made, he grew the more enrag'd, but looking a little more earnestly about the House than his man had done, he perceiv'd the Figure planted before his Windows. *Mercator* was extremely affraid, at the sight of a Person, who, as he thought, knockt at his door, yet made him no answer, and assuming more, Courage than he was naturally Master of, he said to him very loud: 'Tis basely done of you, Sir, to abuse me thus, you shall find I am not a person to suffer it; pray keep on your way, and disturb not my rest any more if you think not you'r invulnerable, and that a brace of good Bullets will make no impression in your enchanted Skin.

Having made that bravado, he shut to the Window and went to Bed; but he was hardly got warm in it, ere they began to knock more violently than they had done before; which obliged him to take a Fire-Lock, which he always kept ready charged for the security of his Money. Opening the Window, he found him still in the same posture, who would not have stirred out of it, had he not been forc'd out of it by some other means. What obstinacy of Impudence is it in you (said he to him, very much incensed) to Authorize a Mischief, you are nothing the better for, in thus disturbing my Rest? 'Tis impardonable, and deserves an Exemplary Chastisement; be gone immediately from my Door, or I shall send you going the next way. Whereupon, cocking the Fire-Lock, and aiming at him, and the other never stirring, as it were out of a Presumption, that he believing he had not any Fire-Arms, whereby he might make good his Threats, he gave him notice the third time, that he would not oblige him to offer a Violence which he was very unwilling to do. At last perceiving he minded not any thing, he said, but as it were des'd him, he resolv'd to give Fire, not only to fright him, but if he could, to hurt him. He discharged off his Piece and shot the Figure, which fell to the Ground;
upon

upon which *Vasquez*, who was not far off, cries out with a doleful tone, *O God I am killed*, and immediately he and his Comrades made a great noise at the sight of a Man so unfortunately Murthered.

Mercator was extreemly troubled at what he had done, it being observed, that Covetous Persons are for the most part Cowardly, and very much fear whatever may Occasion their Losses. He shut the Window, and in a great fright awaking *Corrina* (who had greater things to mind than Sleeping) told her what he had done. She seemed to be extreemly troubled at it, and much blamed him, that he had executed so cruel a Resolution. For since he knew himself to be safe enough in his own House, he might have suffered them to knock at his Door, till they had been weary; that he had better have indured that Noise, and lost a little of his Rest, than be in the Trouble he was in, to be the Occasion of a Man's Death. She added several other Reasons, which so confounded poor *Mercator*, that he knew not what to do. She advised him for his safety, to go immediately and take Refuge in the Monastery of *St. Bernard*, it being certain, that if the Dead Person were found there the next Morning, he would be carried to Prison, as being Murthered so near his House.

Mer-

Mercator was so perplexed, that he wished he had never been born; and it is to be imagined, that if *Corrina* had not been very highly concerned to Dissemble upon this Occasion, she would have dyed with laughing. He raised up all his People, and told them what had happened; and all blam'd him, for his being so forward to commit such an Action, which made the poor old Dotard almost mad. He imagin'd himself already apprehended, his Money carried away, and but a small matter between him and Hanging, at least if he were obliged by Tortures to Acknowledge his Crime, never considering that it was pardonable for one Man to kill another in his own Defence. At last he resolv'd to go to Saint *Bernard's* Monastery; but knew not how to dispose of his Money. He thought it no Prudence to leave it at the Discretion of his Servants; to carry it to a Friend's House (in case he had any, for Persons of his Humor have very few) he had not time. In this Distraction he desired *Corrina* to advise him; she seeming very much troubled, and no less fearful than he, pretended she could not give him any; but after a little pause she gave him that Advice, which she had prepared long before, and he followed it. She asked him what Money he might have in the House? He ingeniously confessed that he
had

had about four thousand Crowns in Gold, and somewhat better than half the said Summ in Silver.

I tell you what I would do, were I in your Case, (says the cunning Gipsie) (since it cannot be carried to a Friend's House without being seen) I would bury it in the Garden, in some place, where you may afterwards find it, by some mark you shall set to that purpose. This you must do your self, so as that your very Servants may not know any thing of it, lest they be tempted to prove false to you ; for the times are such now, that a Man must have a Care whom he trusts. I would assist you herein, and keep your Counsel, were it not that I am afraid, when the search comes to be made, and I be left here, I shall be the first taken ; and I would be loth to run my self into that hazard, having but just escaped those I have acquainted you with. In the midst of his Affliction, *Mercator* was troubled to perceive by his Guest's Discourse, the Disturbance she was in upon his Account; and what struck him most to the Heart, was, that he saw himself upon the point of losing her. This Consideration forced from him not only Tears, but also bitter Exclamations, against the Malicious Crossness of his Fortune. *Corrina* desired him to be of good Courage, perswading him

him to do as she advised him, and hope the best. So that having commanded all his Servants to go to their severall Chambers, and not to stir thence, he and *Corrina*, whom only he durst trust, went to the place where the Money was. It lay in a huge Chest, cover'd all over with Iron-Bars, and the Keys were so extraordinary, that it was impossible to Counterfeit them, or to get a piece thence by any other wile than what was invented by our subtle Ferret.

They first took out all the Silver, and then put the Gold into a little Box, and, having brought all into the Garden, they made two holes, at some distance one from the other, in one whereof they put the Silver, and in the other the Gold, setting a mark that they might find the place again. *Mercator* took along with him two hundred Crowns in Gold, and gave *Corrina* fifty, to shift for her self, till the Business were over.

That done, they went up into the House, whence they might see several Persons walking with a Light; 'twas *Vasquez* and his Comrades, who represented the Magistrate, which *Corrina* shewing him, advised him to make all the hast he could to Saint *Bernard's*. To do that, they got over the Garden-Wall, as being afraid to open the Door, for they perceived the Actors of this Comedy kept a Watch
here,

there, with such Authority, as if they had been really the Officers of Justice. All *Mercator's* Family followed him over the Wall, fearing they might come into Trouble for their Master's Fault. *Mercator* and his Mistress lurk'd somewhere thereabouts, till it was day, that they might have the Church-Door open, to get into the Monastery. *Vasquez* was hard by, to see what became of *Mercator*, and his People. Finding he had left his House, and got into the Monastery with *Corrina*, he went about an hour after Sun-rising to Saint *Bernard's* in the Habit of a Secular Priest, that he might the better speak to *Corrina*. She told him how things stood, and how they had buried the Money in the Garden, and that it was all in Silver, intending to reserve all the Gold for her self.

About Mid-night, *Vasquez* and one of his Comrades went along with *Corrina*, disguised in Man's Cloths to the Garden. They helped her over first, to go and see whether there might be any Body in the House, but all were vanished as if the House had been visited. She thereupon called *Vasquez* and his Companions, and, having taken up the Money, they carried it away, and took up their Quarters at one of the farthest Inns of the Suburbs. Having been merry a while, and drunk their own Healths, and to the
good

good Success of their future Designs, they went all to Bed, the two Men together, and *Corrina* by her self. As soon as she found they were asleep, she puts on the same Habit, and returns to the Garden. Where, being come, she took up the little Box of Gold, and, without any disaster, got safe to the Inn before her Companions awaked.

The next day, having divided the Silver, whereof she and *Vasquez* had the best part, and sowed up the Gold in her Cloths, she left *Sevil*, taking *Vasquez* along with her, who, finding what Advantages he might make of her Company, resolved to run Fortunes with her. They took their way towards *Madrid*, to which place they will not be long a going, and now let us see what is become of *Mercator*, whom we left in *Saint Bernard's* Monastery.

Having continued there four days after *Corrina's* departure from him, he knew not what to think of her that she came not again, as she had promised. He addressed himself to one of the Monks, who had great Acquaintances in the City, and intreated him to inquire, what Proceedings there might be against him, upon the Murther he had committed. The Religious Man promised him an account of it; but having enquired at those places where he thought he might most pro-

probably hear, but no body could give him any Satisfaction. He thereupon told *Mercator*, that he might safely go abroad, and needed not to fear any thing. He went out one Night to a Friends of his, whom he acquainted with all that had past, as also the great perplexity he was in, desiring him to make a more particular enquiry into the Business, than he thought the Religious Man had done. He did so, and gave him the same Account as the other. Yet would not that satisfy him, but he must Desire his Friend to go to his House, whereof he gave him the Mistress-Key. At his Request he went, and found it without any Body in it, and his Mule being Dead for want of Meat, and Attendance. His Friend returned to him with this News, and advised him to come out of the Monastery, and go home, and thence about the City, as he was wont to do.

The Death of his Mule troubled him not much, so glad was he to find himself once more at Liberty: The only thing gave him any Disquiet, was, that his *Artemiza* (under which Name *Corrina* went) came not to see him. But he imagined the Occasion of it might be, that being a young Maid, she had sheltered her self somewhere, to keep out of the hands of Justice, or that perhaps she might have been met with by her Father, who,

as she had told him, sought after her. He went to his House, whither, soon after, came the Gardener and his Wife, and his other Servants. He goes into the Garden, and, notwithstanding all the Fear and Distraction he had been in, remembered the place where he had hid his Money, and was not a little glad to find the Mark where he had set it; so that before he went to Bed, he resolved to secure his Treasure in its former Garrison. As soon as it was dark, he takes the Gardener with him, and a Lanthorn and Candle, and goes first to the place, where the Silver was, and bids him digg. He did so, but there was nothing to be found, whereat, *Mercator* was extremely surprized. He went thence to the place where they had laid the Gold, and there they found as little, only *Corrina* knew what was become of all. He walked several turns about the Garden, with much Vexation, imagining the marks might be misplaced; but what in looking after the marks, and what in digging, the Night slipped away, so that at last despairing to find any thing that Night, he behaved himself like a Person distracted. The Gardener knew not what he looked for, nor for what Reason he had brought him thither. The poor Man resolved to have a little Patience till the next Morning, being still in some hopes to find what he had hidden.

He went to Bed, or rather to spend the Night in insufferable Torments; but as soon as it began to dawn, he got up, and having called up the Gardener, they returned to the work they had been at the Night before. Having digged again at those places where he was Confident he had laid the Money, all they could find was, that there had been two holes made there before, and that Money or something else had been hidden there, but all was removed. This Assurance made him run stark mad, throwing himself on the Ground, running his Head against the Wall, and doing such things as raised a Compassion in his Servants, who thence concluded that he had lost his Money, and suspected the feign'd *Artemiza*, to have robb'd him, by the Orders he gave them to search after her all over the City. But she was far enough out of his reach, and had so well secured his Money, that it was not likely it would come into his Chests any more. He kept his Bed a good while, out of a pure Madness, that he had so soon lost, what had cost him many Years Trouble, and Pains to get together. The Robbery was soon divulg'd all over the City; some, who knew not his Humour, pitied his Misfortune, but such as had Experience of his insatiable Avarice, were not a little pleased to find him so justly punished.

T H E

Pretended Alchymist :

A

N O V E L.

AS soon as *Corrina* had done her Work at *Mercator's*, and had made a broken Merchant of one, who was accounted the Wealthiest about *Sevil*, she thought it not Prudence to make any long stay, for fear of falling into the Hands of Justice, whose Officer's would be abroad, upon the Sollicitations of the Party robb'd. She was gone far enough out of the way, ere he was sensible of his loss; for the next Night after they had taken away the Money, she and *Vasquez* hired two Mules, upon which they came to *Carmona*, which lies about half a days Journey from *Sevil*. They had taken up two places in the *Madrid-Coach*, which was to pass through that City, and take them

up as it went. They alighted, at *Carmona*, at one of the best Inns, where *Corrina*, keeping out of sight, was resolved to expect the Coach, considering with her self, what she might come to in time, seeing, she was now already Mistress of four thousand Crowns in Gold, in good double Pistols and Quadruples, which was all that penurious Merchant had gotten together, during his whole Life, with much pains taking, and many a hazardous Venture into the most remote Climates. And herein, you may behold, the exemplary punishment, which many times happens to those Miserable Wretches, who become the Slaves of their own Wealth. And what infinitely adds to their Misfortune, is, that People are more apt to congratulate than bemoan it. For how can they expect that others should entertain any Kindness for them, when they themselves have not any but for what they lay up in their Chests?

The Coach which our Fortunate Adventurer expected to carry them to *Madrid*, came at its usual time to *Carmona*. There were in it already six Persons, a Gentleman, and his Lady, a Priest, two University-Scholars, and a Servant belonging to the Priest, a young Lad about fifteen Years of Age. They all knew, that there were two Persons to be taken in at *Carmona*, who had paid somewhat

ex-

extraordinary for the best Places : They accordingly Resign'd them, as soon as they perceiv'd their coming towards the Coach : But *Vesquez*, who was a very Civil, and Obliging Person, would needs recommend his interest in the place to the Gentleman's Lady, whom he seated on the left side of *Corrina*, and sat himself in the fore-part of the Coach with her Husband.

All being plac'd to their Content, they left *Carmona* on the *Monday* Morning, it being in *September*, when most Fruits are ripe. All thought it a great happiness, that they had met so good Company ; but *Corrina*, and *Vesquez* had another secret satisfaction, arising from the thought of the good Prize that had brought them into that good Company. The Gentleman was a Person of Excellent Discourse, the Priest, of a very Sociable, and Conversative Humour, and the two Young Scholars made it appear, that they had not mispent their time at the University, every one being desirous to make the best discovery he could of his Abilities. The Priest took occasion to inform them that he was going to Court, to get a Privilege, to put two little Pieces of his into the Press, being such as (some Friends of his had assur'd him) he should oblige the World in the Publication of them. The Gentleman, who sat next

him, was a Person acquainted with Letters, and express'd a great Curiosity to know what they might treat of. Doctor *Berilliere* (so was the Priest call'd) told him they were Books of Discourses, and Divertisements; representing to him, that things of that kind, were kindly receiv'd at Court; that one of them contain'd several *Novels*, and the other a Collection of *Poems* Written by him, during his Residence at *Salamanca*. He told them withal, that, if they thought it not tedious, he would entertain them with somewhat out of the former, whenever they should be at leisure to give him Attention.

Corrina, who was a great Lover, and Reader of such Treatises, intreated the Doctor, if it were no trouble to him, to read one of his *Novels*, promising her self, from the assurance she had of his Excellent Parts, that the Stile, and Conceptions would be answerable to the Worthiness of the Authour. I have endeavour'd all I could, Madam, (says the Doctor to her) to conform my self to the Stile now us'd at Court; my Prose is free from Affectation, and consequently, will not weary the Reader, nor are the Conceits so flat as to produce the same Effect. I make it my business to give my Writings a little Life, and Smartness, which may raise in the Reader an Earnestness to know the Period

of the Adventures. I Write as I speak, because I see Men love those things that are Natural, better than those which smell of too much Study, and Affectation; and take it from me as a thing very certain, that it requires a certain measure of Confidence for any Man to Write, as the Times go now; which proceeds hence, That so many Excellent Wits busie themselves in Writing, and Publish things as Admirable as Ingenious, and not only Men, who profess Letters, but also some Women. The Doctor having ended this Discourse, he took out his Book of Novels, and the Company having Compos'd themselves to Silence, and Attention, he entertain'd them with that which follows.

There was an Ancient Gentleman, who had lost one of his Eyes; and was Married to a Wife far younger than himself: His Business lay much abroad, which was the occasion that he could not see his Wife so often as he would. She in his Absence did so much forget her Honour, and her Conscience, that she fell in Love with a young Gentleman: In Process of time, which brings all things to Maturity, and Perfection, the Report was so hot, and so current, that her Husband was Advertis'd of it, who could not be induc'd to believe it, by reason of the great Affection she always express'd towards him. Ne-

withheld, one day he determin'd with himself to make Experience of it, and, if he could, to revenge himself upon that Person who had thus dishonour'd him.

To accomplish his Design, he pretended Business to a certain place, not far from home, for three or four days. He was no sooner departed, but his Wife sent to her Friend to acquaint him with it, whereupon he immediately came to pay those Assignations of Love which she expected. He had not been with her above half an Hour, but, behold! her Husband was return'd, and knock'd aloud at the Gate. She who knew him, told her Gallant of it, who was so amaz'd, and put into such a Fright, that he wish'd himself safe at home, and Imprecated both her, and her Love, who had brought him into so much danger; but she assur'd him, that he need not perplex himself, for she would contrive a means to convey him safe forth without being discover'd, and desir'd him to put on his Cloths with what speed he could, During this Interval, her Husband continu'd knocking at the Gate, and call'd upon his Wife as loud as he could, but she seem'd not to take notice that it was he, but spake aloud to a Servant that lay above Stairs, Why don't you Rise, and Answer that rude Person, whoever it is, which makes such a Noise at the Gate?

X. **Nov. X. The Pretended Alchymist. 553**

Gate 2 Is this a seasonable Hour of the Night for any one to come into a Civil House? If my Husband were at Home, I'm sure you durst not do so.

The Husband hearing the Voice of his Wife, call'd to her as loud as he could, Wife open the Door, will you have me stay here until Morning? When she perceiv'd her Gallant dress'd, and ready to go, she open'd the Door, and ran to Embrace her Husband, saying to him, Dear Husband, How glad am I of your coming? For I was in a Curious Dream, and was so well pleas'd, better than ever I was in my Life before: For methought, you had recover'd the Sight of your other Eye; whereupon, Kissing of him, she clapt her Hand upon the Speculative Eye, and ask'd him whether he did not see much better than he us'd to do? In the mean time, whilst she had blinded him, her Friend slipt out of Doors, of which her Husband immediately mistrusted, and told her, By Heavens, Wife, i'll never Watch you any more; for thinking to Catch you, I have had the finest Trick put upon me by you, that I think ever was invented: I see it is not in the power of any Man to put any Stop to a Womans Proceedings, unless he should Kill her, or Burn her; for a Lewd Woman nothing can Refine, or Purge her, but Fire: Therefore, since the
good

554 *The Pretended Alchymist.* Nov.X.

good Entertainment, I have given you, cannot conduce to reclaim you, I shall henceforth study for some Chastisement, whereby you may be better Disciplin'd. This said, he departed from her into another Room, leaving her perplex'd, and Disconsolate enough, who by the means of her Friends, and Kindred, and by her Tears, and Excuses, was afterwards reconcil'd to him.

This Pleasant Novel entertain'd the Company till they came to their Inn that Night. Every one took occasion to commend Doctor *Berilliere*, as well for the smartness of his Invention, as for the Excellency of his Stile. The Old Gentleman told him, that if the whole Piece were answerable to the Pattern he had shewn them of it, no doubt, but his Novels would be very well receiv'd in the World, and that he would gain as much Reputation by them, as they had had Pleasure. And thereupon, he earnestly Entreated him to Communicate somewhat of the others to them, that so their Travelling might be the less Tedious. The Doctor gave him, and all the rest of the Company his very hearty Thanks for the good Opinion they had of him, and proffer'd them, when they should be weary of Discourfing, to divert them with some of the other Novels, till they came to their Journeys end, provided they thought

thought them not Tedious. They all, with much Gladness and Thanks, accepted of his proffer.

Being come within a Musquet-shot of the Ancient City of *Corduba*, heretofore the chiefest of the Kingdom, while the *Moors* were possessed of all *Spain*, after Sun-set, an unexpected Accident caus'd them to make a little halt. Two Gentlemen being come out into the Fields, upon a Challenge, which one had sent to the other, and having Fought, one of them was worsted, being run through the Body in two several places; which had oblig'd his Adversary to make his Escape, to get into some place of Sanctuary. The Wounded Person cry'd out for some Body to receive his Confession, just as the Coach pass'd by: Which being heard by the Company, Doctor *Berilliere*, who was a Priest, and a Confessour, could do no less than get out, accompanied by *Vasquez*, and Mistress *Corrina*, who had a great desire to see the Wounded Man. They came to him, and as soon as the Doctor had receiv'd his Confession, and given him Absolution, he lost his Speech, being supported by *Vasquez*. The Doctor return'd to the Coach, and having called several times upon *Corrina*, who pretended she could not get away *Vasquez*, the Coachman perceiving it began to grow Dark, put on the Horses, having sent

sent them Word what Inn they should take up. *Corrina* was much troubled to see the Coach gone, having left her, and *Vasquez* behind, Charitably Exhorting the Dying Person to recommend himself as much to the Mercy of Heaven; but he was so far gone, that, to spare them further Exhortation he gave up the Ghost.

They were much troubled, what they should do with the Body, when certain Officers of Justice came in, who, having at a distance seen the dead Person in the Arms of *Vasquez*, and a Woman standing by, and had notice before that two Men were seen going out of the City, with a design to fight a Duel, presently imagin'd that *Vasquez* was one of them, and consequently the Murderer of the other; upon which Presumption, he was sent to Prison, and order given to the Jaylor to put him fast enough. *Corrina* had more favour, being confin'd in the House of one of the Officers, who was to have a care of her forth-coming. They both us'd all the Arguments they could to clear themselves, from having any thing to do with the Murder, alledging upon what occasion they came to the Body: But their own Words would not be taken, and it was presum'd, the Duel had been upon the account of *Corrina*. The Judge order'd her to be brought to his own House,

House to be further Examined, which was accordingly done. When she came thither, there were in the Room several Gentlemen, and among others, a *Florentine*, a very Rich Merchant, whom some business of his own had brought thither: They had no sooner seen *Corrina*, but they all admir'd her Beauty, and the Majesty of her Air, but the most satisfied of any was the *Florentine*, who, to give him his due, was of a very Amorous Constitution. *Corrina* was extremely troubled that such an Affront should be done her by the way, as perceiving, that if they were staid the next day, they should lose the opportunity of continuing their Journey.

The Judge put several Questions to her, concerning the Duel, and the Gentleman's Death; whereto she answered, that she knew nothing of it, and that she was coming in the *Sevil* Coach, to go for *Madrid*, accompany'd by some other Persons then in the Inn, whom she Named; that as the Coach pass'd by, a certain Person, who had been Wounded upon the High-way, not far from them, call'd out for some Body to receive his Confession, and that a Priest, who was with them in the Coach, went out to do it, with whom also she went out of Curiosity, accompany'd by an Uncle of hers, who came along with her. They order'd, in regard it was grown late,

late, to Adjourn the Business till the next day, that a more exact Enquiry might be made into it; and, in the meantime, that all who came along with the Coach, should not stir from *Corduba*, without Permission. This done, *Corrina* was brought back to the Officer's House, where she was to continue that Night. The *Florentine*, who liv'd not far from it, accompany'd her; but though he had liv'd at a far greater distance, he would have thought it no great way to wait on a Lady, with whom he was already over Head and Ears in Love. Taking leave of her at the Officer's House, he proffer'd her all the Services lay in his Power, for which she thank'd him, yet taking it for no more than a Complement. The Vexation she conceiv'd at her being thus unexpectedly staid, brought her into some Fits of a Fever, the first, of a *Tertian*, which she afterwards fell into. The next day, all the Persons who came in the Coach, being Examn'd, gave the same account as *Corrina* had done before; whereupon, *Vasquez* was set at Liberty. Other Witnesses also, who knew somewhat concerning the Duely were heard, and gave the Judges a perfect knowledge of the Murther. *Vasquez* went immediately to visit *Corrina*, expressing himself extreamly troubled at her Indisposition; he did all he could to cheer her

her up, that they might prosecute their Journey : But the Physician, who had visited her, advis'd her not to remove thence, till she had recover'd her Fever, and told her, that she could not Travel any further, without hazard of her Life ; which being so, the Coachman was forc'd to leave them behind, but they were adjudg'd to defray the Charges of their stay, and he to deliver up what they had in the Coach. The *Florentine* came often to see the Fair Traveller, at the Officer's House, and began to Treat her very Nobly, an Humour the more remarkable in him, who, for sordid Niggardliness might be compared to the Covetous *Mercator* ; but Love, though but a small Deity, yet many times does very great Miracles, turning Avarice into Prodigality, and Cowardice into Courage.

Corrina kept her Bed fifteen days, during which time, she was constantly visited by Signior *Nicola* (so was called the Amorous *Florentine*) and after the Visit, came in a Servant with a Treat of Sweet-Meats, and Wild-Fowl, which the Officer and his Wife were glad to see, for the best share fell to them. At last, the Lady, with her Health, recover'd also her good Complexion, and her Beauty, and the *Florentine* continuing his Civilities, proffer'd her a House with a Fair Garden,

Garden, which he had on the side of a pleasant River. *Vasquez*, whom she call'd her Uncle, advis'd her not to refuse that proffer, for he had discover'd the Man to be extreamly in Love with her, that he was very rich, and that they might get as much out of the *Florentine*, as they had out of the Covetous *Mercator*. *Corrina* accepted the proffer, and set things in order to go to the *Florentine's*, and to continue there till she had recover'd her self so well, as that she might prosecute her Journey. The *Florentine* would not have it known at *Corduba*, that he had brought her to his Country-House, to prevent Peoples Talk, and other Inconveniences that might have ensu'd. So that, with the Consent of *Corrina*, he gave out, that she had left the City in order to the Prosecution of her Journey. Accordingly there were two Mules brought for her, and *Vasquez*, and two others to carry their Luggage, and having left *Corduba*, towards the Evening, to blind the Eyes of the Inquisitive, they kept on their way towards *Madrid*: But having rid about half a League, they turn'd back again, and took up their Quarters at Signior *Nicola's*, which was not above two flight Shots from the City. There he expected her, with a Magnificent Supper, which he had provided, Here the *Florentine* discover'd his Love to her

her more freely than he had done before.

As to his Person, his Age was about Forty and of a good manly Countenance, having Buried his Wife some two years before, by whom he had no Children; he was a whole-sale Merchant, and traded in all sorts of Commodities, insomuch that all the other Merchants, not only of the City, but also of other places thereabouts came to him, for he held Correspondences in all parts; he was a very thrifty Person, nay, to give him his due Character, I should use other expressions: He had some yearly revenue, besides twenty thousand Crowns in ready Money, and sixty thousand in Credit, and his own Trading, which was very great; he was a great Student, and had Studied at *Pavia* and *Bologna*, before he became Heir to his Brother, who dy'd a very Rich Man in *Spain*, and that Inheritance it was, that occasion'd his Marriage at *Corduba*; he had so passionate an Affection for *Corrina*, that he used all the ways he could imagine to insinuate himself into her Favor. Upon that account it was that he proffer'd her the use of his Country-House, to take the Air, and recover her indisposition; conceiving, that, being at his own House, it would be the more easie for him to compass his desires. She had been

told by *Vasquez*, that this Merchant was a well Feather'd Fowl, and might be easily pluck'd, and since this good luck had fallen to them by Chance, they should make the best advantage they could of it.

That night they only Supp'd, and every one went to his rest, for it was very late; the *Florentine* made as if he would have return'd to the City, and lye there; but his Servants, whom he had before instructed, perswaded him not to go abroad at that unreasonable time of the Night, for fear of meeting with any Thieves; besides, there being a Press in the City, where many young men presum'd to do mischief in the Night, and Robbed all they met: At last, being perswaded not to stir out, he was glad to pass away some part of the Night in discoursing with *Corrina*, and being got to Bed, his business was to consider, by what means, and with least charge, he might obtain his desires of her. Several things came into his mind, but the easiest he could find, suitably to his Humor, was to forget her, and never think of her any more; for he knew the Age we live in to be such, that it is a Miracle to get any kindness in Love, without Liberality.

The next Morning he command'd somewhat should be made ready for her Break-fast, not Imagining she was up; but when word was brought him that she was out of Bed, the

Florentine

Florentine would needs go into her Chamber, to chide her for rising so soon, and by that means to see whether *Corrina's* Beauty were any way oblig'd to Artifice; he found her a Combing her Head, and so he had a full sight of her Hair, which was of a great length, and of a Chest-nut Colour; the *Florentine* gave Heaven thanks, who, with so many other perfections, had bestow'd on her such an excellent Head of Hair: but he was much more astonish'd, when, upon her dividing it into two parts, to make him an answer, he saw her Face, as Beautiful as it had appear'd to him when she went to Bed; a thing able to enflame a Person less inclin'd to Love and more to avarice than he was, inasmuch as there is not a greater Charm, to secure a Lovers Heart, that to see than the Beauty of his Mistress is Natural, and scorns to borrow any thing of Art. *Corrina* indeed was not much troubled to look after Waters, Paints, Pomatums, Unguents, and such things, wherewith such Women, who stand in need of them, hasten on their Age with their wrinkles, and lose their Youth ere they are aware; she only washed her self in fair Water, and needed no other Vermillion to heighten the Beauty of her Face, than that of her own lively Complexion; the Merchant asked whether she would be pleased to see the

Garden? She made answer, that she was extremely oblig'd to him for the trouble he gave himself to divert her; and to satisfy him how kindly she took that Favor at his Hands; she went along with him just as she was, without putting up her Hair, which hanging down over her Shoulders, added much to her Beauty, and it is not much to be doubted, but she had a design in it. She went down with this new Gallant of hers, who thought it an extraordinary pleasure to have her by the Hand; and in that posture she saw the whole Garden, seeming to be much taken with the delightfulness of it.

Having recreated her self with him, till the Sun began to be somewhat hot, she return'd into the House, and broke her Fast, after which, having discoursed of several things, she desir'd to see the whole House. The Amorous *Florentine* desiring nothing so much as that she might see his Wealth, shews her a great number of excellent Pictures, done by the best Painters in *Europe*, some very rich pieces of Tapestry, Cabinets of Ebony, of several Fashions, Embroider'd Beds, and all Sorts of Household-stuff of great Value, in a word, there wanted not any of those things requisite for the furnishing of a House fit for a Noble-man. Having seen all the Rooms, he open'd a curious Closet, near which

Nov. X. *The Pretended Alchymist.* 565

which there was a little Oratory, and in that Closet there were a great many Pieces of Painting, done at *Rome*, of extraordinary Value, *Agnus Dei's* of Gold and Silver Gilt, and Flowers done as near the Life as could be imagin'd. The Closet was full of Books, very richly Bound, and neatly disposed into Gilt Drawers. *Vasquez* who was a curious Person, and had read much, was looking very earnestly on the Titles of the Books, which were in one Drawer, and having put that into its place, he took out another, wherein there were others very curiously Bound, but had no Titles on the Backs. *Vasquez* opens one of them, and finds the Author of it to be *Arnaldus de villa Nova*, and near that were the Works of *Rosino*, *Alquindus*, *Raymond Lullius*, *Cornelius Agrippa*, and *Doctor Dee's Actions with Spirits*.

The Merchant perceiving him so taken up with the Perusal of those Books, ask'd him what he look'd on so attentively. I find here, Sir, (replies *Vasquez*,) a great many Books of Chymistry, and, from the curiosity I observe in your Collection of Treatises of that kind, I infer, that you have Studied that Science: 'Tis true, (says the *Florentine*,) I have spent some time in the Perusal of those Authors; but how far, I pray, are you acquainted with them? Only so far, (replies the other,)

other) that I have spent the best part of my Life in that Study. Nay then, (says the *Florentine*) you must needs be a very great Chymist. I am not to acknowledge what I am, (replies *Vasquez*,) we will discourse another time of these things more at large; for the present, I shall only tell you, that, besides these Authors, I have read all I could ever meet with that treated of this Science; I have turned over the Works of *Avicenna*, *Albertus Magnus*, *Terno*; *Pythagorus*; the Secrets of *Calidus*, the Book of the *Allegory of Morillus*, that of the *Secret Stone*, and that Entituled, *de Tribus Verbis*; besides many Manuscripts, which I never shew'd any man; the *Florentine* was almost out of himself for joy to hear these things; I am extremely glad, (said he to him) that this Science pleases you, for I have a particular inclination for it. I know it very well (replies *Vasquez*,) (which he said, having already resolv'd how to put a slur upon him,) but in regard I place a great confidence in you, I will tell you a thing in your ear, which you will be much astonish'd at; it is this (whispering him in the Ear) that my Niece knows, without any Study, in a manner as much as I do of this Art, and is very Fortunate in the Practick part of it, as you shall see by experience; but I entreat you not to speak to her of it at this time, for she would not have it known to any, nay would

would not take it well. *Vasquez* could not have pitch'd upon a more likely way to bring the *Florentine* into the Gin; for his avarice was such, that he would, have parted with his Soul to find out the Philosophers Stone, hoping, if he once got that Secret, ever afterwards to swim in Gold.

Corrina busied her self at the other end of the Closet, while *Vasquez* made this Discourse to the *Florentine*, and was looking upon some other Curious and Pleasant Books, for there were of all sorts; yet was she not so attentive, but she heard somewhat of *Vasquez's* Discourse concerning Chymistry, and perceiv'd the Merchant was much taken with it; the Truth is *Vasquez* had some knowledge in that Science, and had spent a considerable Sum of Money, to find out the Philosopher's Stone, which though many had sought, yet could not any affirm they had met with it; the success he had had in that business only satisfied him of their folly, who spent their time and Estates in so ridiculous a disquisition, and he was glad to meet with so good an opportunity, to recover some part of the Money he had squander'd away in the search after it: for the *Florentine*, crediting what was told him by *Vasquez*, imagin'd himself somewhat above a Prince; he told him, that, in that very House, he had all things requisite

to make the experiment ; and thereupon brought him into a Room full of Furnaces, Alembicks, Glasses, and Crucibles, with all the Instruments us'd by the Chymists, and good store of Char-coal. *Vasquez* seeing that, concluded the Merchant would be easily taken, and what made him the more confident was, that he imagin'd he understood all those Books, whereas *Vasquez* was satisfi'd he knew only so much of them, as would serve to bring him into the Noose: In fine, they gave over talking of it any further at that time, though the *Florentine* was unwilling to quit the discourse ; they went down thence into a Ground-Room, the Windows whereof looked into the Fairest part of the Garden, where Dinner expected them. After Dinner, *Vasquez* pretending it was his Custom to take a Nap, left the Merchant alone with *Corrina*, to whom he took occasion to make a full discovery of his Love, assuring her, that all he had was at her Service, and desiring her to dispose of it as she pleased. She seem'd to entertain the proffers of his affection with much kindness, yet at that time she only rais'd him into a slight hope, shewing her self very pleasant to him.

Having seen a Lute, in one of the Rooms above Stairs, she desir'd it might be brought down for her Musick, at which she was excellent,

cellent, and contributed much to bringing about of her designs; the Merchant, who had a little skill at that Instrument himself, was very glad to hear that she us'd it, and caus'd it to be immediately fetch'd, saying that his Deceas'd Wife plaid excellently well upon it, and that about a Seven-night before, having entertain'd some of his Friends with a Collation, they had set it in Tune. The Lute being come, *Corrine* began to play, and made it appear, that there were very few that could excel her at that Instrument: the *Florentine* was astonish'd at her dexterity, and to bring him absolutely to her lure, she Sung an Air to it, but with such a grace, that he was at a loss, whether he should more admire her Hand, or her Voice; the truth is, she had a particular excellency in both, so that his excessive Commendations of them; were not so full of flattery as might be expected from a person passionately in Love; with a modest blush, which spread it self gently over her face (a thing she could command, tho' never acquainted with shame) she seem'd to express a certain bashfulness, and ere it was quite dispell'd, Signior *Nicola*, (said she to him) What I have done was only for your diversion, be pleas'd to receive it with some regard to the desire I had to endeavour your satisfaction; which yet I have not done without

out much temerity, before a Person of so delicate an Ear as you are Master of, and one, no doubt, wont to hear the best Voices in the World. I never heard any, (replies *Nicola*) that came near yours, and therefore I beseech you, let not your Modesty occasion you any prejudice; nay rather be proud, Madam, of the excellent endowments you have so liberally receiv'd from Heaven, and acknowledge the Favours it hath done you; be more sensible of your own worth, and think my approbation below it; and yet when I was a young Man, I was much addicted to Musick, and some would needs perswade me that my time was well bestow'd in it. I must confess the *Spanish* Tongue comes not so natural to me as the *Italian*, the Graces and Beauties whereof, I have better Studied upon the *Theorbo*, which I am so far Master of, as in some Measure I may satisfy the Hearer. Whereupon perceiving that *Corrina* would have laid by the Lute, he desir'd her to make use of it a little longer, and to Sing one Air more, which she, to Honour him, did.

Nicola took occasion to give his dear *Corrina* greater Commendations for the excellency of her Voice than he had done before, and she, to renew her thanks to him, for the Favour he did her; he thought it time to
give

Nov. X. *The Pretended Alchymist.* 571

give her leave to take a little rest, and he went himself into another Room to do the like. *Vasquez* on the other side, instead of Sleeping, was contriving how to get the Philosopher's Stone, not for the Credulous *Florentine*, but out of him; he had so perswaded him of his abilities, in that Science, that he desired nothing so much as to be as knowing in it as he was, but all out of no other design than to satisfy his own insatiable avarice; he imagin'd that if he could find the Philosopher's Stone (a Rock rather, against which so many have wrack'd themselves) all his Household-stuff should be of Gold, that he should be as Rich as *Cræsus*, and that the Wealthiest about the City, compar'd to him, would be little better than Beggars.

Vasquez had also along discourse with *Corrina*, about the means how they should get the Gudgeon into the Net; he gave her some instructions in Writing, that the *Florentine* might find she knew something of the Science, at least the Terms of it: *Corrina* got them by Heart, and, to begin the Cheat, *Vasquez* ask'd for some Links of a Gold Chain, she had brought from *Sevil*; it was a large one, and if there were a Dozen Links taken from it, they would not have been miss'd; being come into the City, he goes into a Gold-Smith's Shop to melt down those Links into
an

an Ingot, which he brought back to the House, and communicated his Design to *Corrina*.

Nicola, who had slept all this while as soundly as if he had not been in Love, comes in to them, and they began to talk of several things, far from having any Relation to the Business he had been about, which *Vasquez* did purposely to engage the other to fall first into that Discourse, and indeed within a quarter of an hour, he was gotten into the Subject of Chymistry. *Vasquez* discoursed of it after the rate of a Man that had spent his whole Estate in the Work; insomuch that *Nicola* was astonished thereat, for though he pretended much skill in the Science, yet could he not but acknowledge himself much inferior to the other. *Vasquez* Desirous to give the Merchant all the Satisfaction he could Desire, told him, that he could turn what Metal he pleased into Gold. The *Florentine* was ravish'd at the proposal, and earnestly entreated him that he might see it done. *Vasquez* ask'd him whether there were any Char-Coal in the House; the *Florentine* told him there was good store, for he had had the Curiosity to make some trials thereof himself.

They went up both into the Room where they had been before, and finding it full of Furnaces, Crensets, Alembicks, and other Chy-

Chymical Instruments, *Vasquez* said to him, Here we have all things requisite for the present. He caused some Fire to be brought, and having put a little Copper into a Creuset to melt, the *Florentine* saw it melting: *Vasquez* took a Box out of his Pocket, wherein there was a Paper full of Powder, which he said was the most Principal Ingredient in the whole Work. He put it into the Creuset, which having brought as cleverly as he could to the Window, he poured out the melted Copper, and put in the Ingot of Gold into its place, and when he had covered it, he told the *Florentine*, that it should not be stirred thence for half an hour. That time they spent in Discoursing of several things in Chymistry, wherein *Nicola* desired to make some further Progress. At last, *Vasquez* thought it time to shew him what he had done, and so opening the Creuset, he took out the Ingot and shewed it him. The Covetous Miser was transported with Joy to see it, though he were not fully satisfied of its being perfect Gold. *Vasquez* wished him to have it tryed by a Gold-Smith; which trouble he would needs take upon himself, and having found that it was very fine Gold, of twenty two Carats, he returns extraordinarily well satisfied. While he was gone out, *Vasquez* instructed *Corrina*, how to effect their Design
upon

upon *Nicola*, who being more Covetous than Amorous, would have them immediately to begin the great Work of finding the Philosopher's Stone. He promised *Vasquez* extraordinary Recompences, and told him, that he would be at the whole Charge, though it should amount to twenty thousand Crowns.

Vasquez, who had contrived how he intended to gull the Merchant, returned this answer to the great proffers he had made him. Signior *Nicola* (said he,) I am now gone almost seven years beyond the grand Climacterical Year of my Life, (which is as much as to tell you, that I have passed the greatest and best part of it. It were no hard matter for me, with the help of the Science I am now Master of, to spend the little which is yet to come, at my ease, and it may be more plentifully, than some of the Wealthiest Grantees of *Spain*; and that I can be without any Man's Favour or Assistance, I think you may have observed your self. And in regard I have no Children, to inherit my Estate, which, I thank Heaven, is somewhat considerable also in Lands, the main concernment I have in this World, is to look after this young Woman, my Niece. She is already but too Rich, in that she hath all I have, though her Father, who was my Elder Brother, left her no mean Fortune. She might, had

Nov. X. *The Pretended Alchymist.* 575

had she a mind to it, be as Nobly Married as she was before, for her late Husband was descended from the Noblest Houses in *Andaluzia*. Nor were it hard for me to add to her Wealth, you know it; but such is my Confidence in you, that I will tell you the Reason why I do not.

That I am the Ablest Alchymist in all *Spain*, is known to many, which being also come to the Ears of his Majesty, I am sought after every where; but I have hitherto had the Happiness to keep out of their Clutches who are perpetually employed to find me out, having spread a report, that I was gone for *England*. It is not out of any contempt of the Honours and Wealth of this World, that I avoid the searches of those, whom his Majesty hath enjoined to bring me to him, but out of this Consideration, that I would not purchase any favour with the loss of my Liberty, for I must expect no less, than to spend the rest of my days in a Noble kind of Captivity. I will express my self more clearly to you. His Majesty hath at the present very great Armies on Foot in several parts, which put him to a vast Expence, such as his own Revenue, and what comes from the *Indies* are not able to defray: So that, to satisfy his Ambition, he is forc'd to make use of the Industry of his Subjects. Now were it my hard
For-

Fortune, to be found by those who so narrowly search after me, the King, knowing that, with the Assistance of my Art, he might easily recruit the Charge he is at, and would immediately dispose of me into some Fortrefs, where being confin'd for the rest of my days, I should be perpetually kept at Work, to augment his Treasures, and supply his pressing Exigencies. I should not think it much to do it once or twice, but the Avarice of Men is grown to that height, that they are not satisfied with abundance, if they have the least Apprehension, that the source of it may ever be dried up. This is the true Reason, Signior *Nicola*, which obliges me to keep out of my own Country, and to play least in sight; and therefore receive what I have told you as a great Secret, such as I should not have communicated to my own Brother, had he been in the World: But I have that Confidence of you, that you will never reveal it.

Nicola return'd *Vasquez* his most affectionate thanks for the great Trust he reposed in him, and thought himself so happy in the discovery he had made to him, that he conceived the greatest Nobles might justly envy him. His answer to him, was, That the Grounds and Motives, on which he conceal'd the excellent knowledge he had acquir'd, were just and rational, since that no doubt but he would

would be confin'd, though for no other reason than this, to prevent his carrying over such a secret into another Country, to serve a King that were an Enemy to his Catholick Majesty. He acknowledg'd himself infinitely obliged to him, and wish'd it were in his power to serve him; but having only the Wealth he was possessed of to proffer him, he entreated him to dispose of it as freely as if it were his own, and since he had shewn him a trial of his Abilities, that he would not think that enough, but ere he left *Corduba*, would give him such further Instructions, as, being observ'd, he should not miscarry in the great Work. *Vasquez* promised to satisfy his Desires, telling him withal, that so precious a thing as Gold could not be gotten but with Gold, and that the Foundations of all Designs require Charge; that the Philosopher's Stone could not be found without cost and much pains; that if he were resolv'd, he should attempt the doing of it, he must be at the whole Charge, and that afterwards the profit should be equally divided, and that in a short time he would be glutted with Wealth.

The *Florentine*, ravished at that Proposal, proffer'd to spend all he was worth upon that Account. *Corrina* promised to assist them. Nay, (says *Vasquez* to her,) there is such a

Necessity of your Assistance; that we shall not be able to do so well without it. They thereupon resolved, that within two days they should begin the great Work. *Vasquez* told him, that the *Principal* of the Divine *Elixir*, (so the Chymists call the Perfection of their Work) was formed out of the solidity of *Mercury*, and other things which he nam'd to him, together with the Urine and Excrement of a Red-Hair'd Child; that all was to be put into an Alembick, with Powder of *Aloes*, the Infusion of *Opium*, Toads-Grease, *Arsenick*, and *Salt-Peter*: But he hoped to do it chiefly with the *Urine*, and *Excrements* afore said, which he ordered *Nicola* by all means to procure, as being the most necessary ingredient of all.

He promised to find it; and, to begin the Work, the Merchant delivered him five hundred Crowns in Gold, to buy certain precious Drugs, which he said were necessary; and this the *Florentine* did the more willingly, as well out of the Confidence he had to receive them multiplied into so many thousands, as out of a Design he had thought on the Night before, of making *Corrina* his Wife, and by that means asserting himself of *Vasquez*. Whereupon that very Evening after Supper, he took Occasion to carry *Vasquez* along with him into the Garden, and acquainted him with his

Re-

X. **Nov. X. The Pretended Alchymist.** 579

Resolution. The Alchymist thought it a good way to further his Work, and accordingly he approved of his Intention, and acknowledged it would be a great Honour to his Neece to meet with so worthy a Person; but that there was one Obstacle to be first removed. What may that be (says the other?) *Vasquez* told him, that his Neece could not be Married, till a Dispensation were first obtained from *Rome*, in regard, that out of the extraordinary regret she conceived at the loss of her late Husband, she made a vow to enter into a Religious Life; that the Occasion of their going to *Madrid*, was to receive six years Arrearages of a Rent due to them from a Person of Quality, who was very backward in paying, in Order to her Reception into a Nunnery; but that as soon as the Dispensation were come from *Rome*, they would conclude the Marriage, which he doubted not but she would accept, not only out of the Compliance she had ever express'd towards him, but also out of this Consideration, that she was to match her self with a Person inclin'd to the study of a Science, wherein she had naturally attain'd so great Perfection. *Nicola* was the most satisfied Man in the World to have such a parcel of good Words given him, insomuch that from that very hour, *Vasquez* became absolute Master of all he was possess'd of.

Vasquez and *Corrina* having conferred Notes upon this new overture, were more Confident then ever to Compass their Design. He freely laid out the Money received of *Nicola*, in Druggs, perswading him they were not to be had under such and such Rates. He also furnished himself with new Furnaces, Creusets and Alembicks, pretending that those in the House before, were not for his Purpose. In the mean time, the silly Merchant was enquiring up and down where he might have the Urine of a Red-Headed Child, Which he had much ado to get; for the Mother's fearing it was to be used in some Operation of Witch-craft, would not easily let him have it; but Money is Omnipotent, and can do any thing. *Vasquez* could have done as much in one day as in a hundred, as to the performance of what he had promised, but the poor Merchant must be fool'd some way or an other, till he met with an opportunity to smite him, and take a Dogg's leave of *Corduba*, with as much as he could shift away on two good Horses, which lay leager in a secret place for that Purpose.

He disposed all the Destillations into the Furnaces, in the presence of *Nicola*; he bought some Metals, as Brass, Copper, and Tin, several sorts of Salts, and other things commonly used by Chymists; and setting Fire to the Furnaces,

X. Nov.X. *The Pretended Alchymist.* 581

naces, they distilled what had been put into them, but contributing nothing to the Business, and only to abuse him, who was the Charge of all the Foolery. As to *Nicola's* Love, he was much better treated than he was before; inasmuch as since the Proposal of Marriage, *Corrina*, the better to carry on the main Design, grew more kind to him, especially in *Vasquez's* Absence, which the besotted Coxcomb was so transported with, that he knew not whether his Head or his Heels were on the Ground.

About this time *Nicola* receiv'd a Bill of Exchange of a considerable Sum, to be paid within twenty days after sight. This, with the breaking of some of his Debtors in other Countries, put him into some fear of doing the like, if his Attempts in Chymistry prov'd not successful. But to prevent all inconveniences, he did what most of his Quality and Kidney are wont to do, who being upon the point of Breaking, secure what they can of their Estates, that they may afterwards the more Commodiously remove into some other Country. So our Merchant, finding himself within some distance of Breaking, provided for the Misfortune, in case it should happen, and so promoted the mischievous Plot of *Vasquez*, and *Corrina*, whom he truly acquainted how Affairs stood with him, as if they

had been his most Faithful Relations. *Vasquez*, had left in the Custody of a certain Friend of the Merchant's, a good Sum of Money, and some Jewels of great Value, with order they should not be deliver'd to any, but to one of them two. Besides which, he brought some to his Country-House, and hid them in a secret place, in the presence of *Corrina*, of whom he had a Confidence, as if she had really been his Wife. *Vasquez*, who was still busie about his Desillations, put him into good hope, that within twenty days he should see the end of the great Work, and his House full of Gold, to recover the loss he had receiv'd by his Debtors.

About this time, there happen'd a business which oblig'd the Merchant to take a Journey, to advise with a Correspondent of his, how to prevent the misfortune he saw coming upon him. *Vasquez*, and *Corrina* being entrusted with the House, thought it a fair opportunity to dislodge, and make the best they could of the present Game. They secur'd all the Money, and Jewels they could come at, and left the Plate and some other things, they could not so conveniently carry away, behind them, though with some regret, thinking it more prudence to make a safe retreat with what were considerable, than to hazard all, by grasping at too much.

Ha-

Nov.X. *The Pretended Alchymist.* 583

Having therefore loaden themselves with what was most precious, they left the Furnaces, and the Alembicks, which made the Philosopher's Stone, at the cost of the absent Merchant, and took Horse while the People of the House were fast asleep. They took their way towards *Malaga*, and travell'd all Night, having about them above six thousand Crowns in Money and Jewels, and left upon a Table near the Furnaces, a Paper of Verses, to hasten the Credulous Merchant to hang himself.

Two days after their departure he returns home, very ill satisfied with his Journey, in that he had not done any thing in the business which occasion'd it. All the hope he now had, was in his Uncle, *Vasquez*, imagining, by his means, he should yet be able to shew his Head, and not only keep up his Reputation, but also be richer than ever he had been, such a strange Mist had the Witchcraft of Chymistry cast before his Eyes.

He came not to his Country-House till after Night, where he found the Servant whom he had left with *Vasquez* and *Corrina*, for the rest of his People were in the City. The Servant receiv'd him with a sad Countenance, and being got up Stairs, he ask'd him (fearing somewhat were amiss) where his Guests were, of whom the Servant could give him

no

584 *The Pretended Alchymist.* Nov.X.

no account, as having not seen them when they went out, and could only say, That two Nights before, they had Lock'd him in at two Room where he lay, which he had been forced to break open, because he could no otherwise get out. They search'd up and down, and found that the Chests had been opened, and all the Money Convey'd away. This was not the worst the Merchant feared, but that they had also been with him, in whose Custody he had greater Sums of Money, and the most precious of his Household-stuff. It being too late to make any enquiry that Night, he thought it his best Course to go to Bed ; but desirous to visit the Furnaces once more, he finds on the Table the Paper, left there by *Vasquez*, which having opened, he found in it these Lines.

Signior Nicola,

I*t is the just Reward of those who attempt things impossible, to be shamefully disappointed. Many of your Profession have been ruin'd by their Faith, in things relating to their Trade ; it was therefore but fit you should repent your Credulity, in a business you understood not. It was indeed impardonable, to expect to see that done by any Man, in a few days, which the Sun, who hath a greater power over the Metal you were so Covetous of, cannot perfect under four or five hundred*

Nov.X. The Pretended Alchymist. 585

hundred Years. Your loss, I must confess, is great, but you have this comfortable Consideration, that you may now desie Chymistry, and all its Cheating Professors, to shew you such another Trick as we have done. But, to avoid all future Temptations, take this hearty Advice from two dear Friends of yours; put all the fine Treatises you have of that Pernicious Art, into your Furnaces, and having set fire to them, and your House together, fairly run away by the Light of it.

The poor Merchant had no sooner read them, ere he was Convinc'd, they were his kind Guests who had robb'd him, and Extracted what he had in his Chests and Cabinets, with more ease than he had infus'd it into them. How he spent the Night, is only to be imagin'd, being just upon the Point of breaking, and not knowing any means to remedy it. All the hope he had, was, that the Money, and Jewels which he had left in a Friend's Hands, were safe enough; nay, he despair'd not to find out those, who had done him the mischief. He turn'd himself from one side to another, not out of any disturbance, occasion'd by his Love to the Crafty *Corrina*, (for that was absolutely lost with his Money) but that he had been so basely trapann'd by a Beggarly Rascal. Then did he begin to Curse Chymistry, and all the Au-
thours

thours that ever Writ of it, whereas he should rather have given Heaven thanks, who, by the Cheat which was put upon him, had prevented the Prosecution of his Design, which might have absolutely ruin'd him.

As soon as he perceiv'd any appearance of day, he got up, and went into the Ciry, to his House, whom he had entrusted with the keeping of his Money, and other things. He ask'd him whether *Vasquez* had been with him? The other answer'd that he had, and had taken away whatever he had in his Custody, and that therein he had follow'd his own Orders. The Word struck him almost dead; nay, the Resentments he express'd of that loss were so great, that if the other had not known the cause of it, he would have thought him out of his Wits. He Comforted him the best he could, and told him, that his only Course was to make a speedy search for the Robbers. He did all he could to that purpose, sending Officers, and others several ways; but that which *Vasquez* and *Corrina* had taken, was so extraordinary, that they could never meet with them. So they return'd to *Corduba*, to be paid for their fruitless Pursuit, by him who had sent them, which, as his Affairs stood then, added not a little to this Affliction.

This

This Adventure was soon known all over the City; and the *Florentine*, not able to except of another Bill of Exchange that had been sent him, was forc'd to absent himself, and to return to *Florence*, with what he could make by the Sale of his Goods. By this means he turn'd Bankrupt, and defy'd his Creditours, who could not find any thing he had left behind him. The same things happens many times to those, who, with small Estates, engage themselves in too great Affairs, presuming upon this, that if it comes to the worst, they can secure themselves by an Escape.

F I N I S.
